

A

0  
0  
0  
1  
3  
9  
0  
8  
4  
8



UC SOUTHERN REGIONAL LIBRARY FACILITY

MILTON

UNIV. OF CALIF. LIBRARY. LOS ANGELES

Wm. A. Mitze



Digitized by the Internet Archive  
in 2007 with funding from  
Microsoft Corporation



THE POETICAL WORKS  
OF  
JOHN MILTON

HENRY FROWDE, M.A.

PUBLISHER TO THE UNIVERSITY OF OXFORD



LONDON, EDINBURGH, AND NEW YORK





JOHN MILTON

*From an Engraving after the Painting by Faithorne*

THE  
POETICAL WORKS  
OF  
JOHN MILTON

*EDITED AFTER THE ORIGINAL TEXTS*

BY THE

REV. H. C. BEECHING, M.A.

BALLIOL COLLEGE, OXFORD

CLARK LECTURER AT TRINITY COLLEGE, CAMBRIDGE

Oxford  
AT THE CLARENDON PRESS  
1900

Oxford

PRINTED AT THE CLARENDON PRESS

BY HORACE HART, M.A.

PRINTER TO THE UNIVERSITY

PR  
3550  
1900

## PREFACE.

THIS edition of Milton's Poetry is a reprint, as careful as Editor and Printers have been able to make it, from the earliest printed copies of the several poems. First the 1645 volume of the *Minor Poems* has been printed entire; then follow in order the poems added in the reissue of 1673; the *Paradise Lost*, from the edition of 1667; and the *Paradise Regain'd* and *Samson Agonistes* from the edition of 1671.

The most interesting portion of the book must be reckoned the first section of it, which reproduces for the first time the scarce small octavo of 1645. The only reprint of the *Minor Poems* in the old spelling, so far as I know, is the one edited by Mitford, but that followed the edition of 1673, which is comparatively uninteresting since it could not have had Milton's oversight as it passed through the press. We know that it was set up from a copy of the 1645 edition, because it reproduces some pointless eccentricities such as the varying form of the chorus to Psalm cxxxvi; but while it corrects the *errata* tabulated in that edition it commits many more blunders of its own. It is valuable, however, as the *editio princeps* of ten of the sonnets, and it contains one important alteration in the *Ode on the Nativity*. This and all other alterations will be found noted where they occur. I have not thought it necessary to note mere differences of spelling between the two editions, but a word may find place here upon their general character. Generally it may be said that, where the two editions differ, the later spelling is that now in use. Thus words like *goddess*, *darkness*, usually written in the first edition with one final *s*, have two, while on the other hand words like *vernall*, *youthfull*, and monosyllables

## Preface.

like *hugg*, *farr*, lose their double letter. Many monosyllables, e. g. *som*, *cours*, *glimps*, *wher*, *vers*, *aw*, *els*, *don*, *ej*, *ly*, so written in 1645, take on in 1673 an *e* mute, while words like *harpe*, *windes*, *onely*, lose it. By a reciprocal change *ayr* and *cypress* become *air* and *cypress*; and the vowels in *daign*, *vail*, *neer*, *beleeev*, *sheild*, *boosom*, *eeven*, *battail*, *travailer*, and many other words are similarly modernized. On the other hand there are a few cases where the 1645 edition exhibits the spelling which has succeeded in fixing itself, as *travail* (1673, *travel*) in the sense of labour; and *rob'd*, *profane*, *human*, *flood* and *bloody*, *forest*, *triple*, *alas*, *huddling*, are found where the 1673 edition has *roab'd*, *prophane*, *humane*, *floud* and *bloudy*, *forrest*, *tripple*, *alass* and *hudling*. Indeed the spelling in this later edition is not untouched by seventeenth century inconsistency. It retains here and there forms like *shameles*, *cateres*, (where 1645 reads *cateress*), and occasionally reverts to the older-fashioned spelling of monosyllables without the mute *e*. In the *Epitaph on the Marchioness of Winchester*, it reads—'And *som* flowers and *some* bays.' But undoubtedly the impression on the whole is of a much more modern text.

In the matter of small or capital letters I have followed the old copy, except in one or two places where a personification seemed not plainly enough marked to a modern reader without a capital. Thus in *Il Penseroso*, l. 49, I print *Leasure*, although both editions read *leasure*; and in the *Vacation Exercise*, l. 71, *Times* for *times*. Also where the employment or omission of a capital is plainly due to misprinting, as too frequently in the 1673 edition, I silently make the correction. Examples are, *notes* for *Notes* in Sonnet xvii. l. 13; *Anointed* for *anointed* in Psalm ii. l. 12.

In regard to punctuation I have followed the old printers except in obvious misprints, and followed them also, as far as possible, in their distribution of roman and italic type and in the grouping of words and lines in the various titles. To follow them exactly was impossible, as the books are so very different in size.

At this point the candid reader may perhaps ask what advantage is gained by presenting these poems to modern readers in the dress of a bygone age. If the question were put to me I should probably evade it by pointing out that Mr. Frowde is issuing an edition based upon this, in which the spelling is frankly that of to-day. But if the question were pressed, I think a sufficient answer might be found. To begin with, I should point out that even Prof. Masson, who in his excellent edition argues the point and decides in favour of modern spelling, allows that



## Preface.

'there are peculiarities of Milton's spelling which are really significant, and ought therefore to be noted or preserved.' But who is to determine exactly which words are spelt according to the poet's own instructions, and which according to the printer's whim? It is notorious that in *Paradise Lost* some words were spelt upon a deliberate system, and it may very well happen that in the volume of minor poems which the poet saw through the press in 1645, there were spellings no less systematic. Prof. Masson makes a great point of the fact that Milton's own spelling, exhibited in the autograph manuscript of some of the minor poems preserved in Trinity College, Cambridge, does not correspond with that of the printed copy<sup>1</sup>. This is certainly true, as the reader may see for himself by comparing the passage from the manuscript given in the appendix with the corresponding place in the text. Milton's own spelling revels in redundant *e*'s, while the printer of the 1645 book is very sparing of them. But in cases where the spelling affects the metre, we find that the printed text and Milton's manuscript closely correspond; and it is upon its value in determining the metre, quite as much as its antiquarian interest, that I should base a justification of this reprint. Take, for instance, such a line as the eleventh of *Comus*, which Prof. Masson gives as:—

Amongst the enthroned gods on sainted seats.

A reader not learned in Miltonic rhythms will certainly read this line:

Amongst th' enthronèd gods

But the 1645 edition reads:

Amongst the enthron'd gods

and so does Milton's manuscript. Again, in line 597, Prof. Masson reads:

It shall be in eternal restless change  
Self-fed and self-consumed. If this fail,  
The pillared firmament is rottenness, &c.

But the 1645 text and Milton's manuscript read *self-consum'd*;

<sup>1</sup> This manuscript, invaluable to all students of Milton, has lately been facsimiled under the superintendence of Dr. Aldis Wright, and published at the Cambridge University Press.

## Preface.

after which word there is to be understood a metrical pause to mark the violent transition of the thought.

Again in the second line of the *Sonnet to a Nightingale* Prof. Masson has :

Warblest at eve when all the woods are still

but the early edition, which probably follows Milton's spelling, though in this case we have no manuscript to compare, reads 'Warbl'st.' So the original text of *Samson*, l. 670, has 'temper'st.'

The retention of the old system of punctuation may be less defensible, but I have retained it because it may now and then be of use in determining a point of syntax. The absence of a comma, for example, after the word *hearse* in the 58th line of the *Epitaph on the Marchioness of Winchester*, printed by Prof. Masson thus :—

And some flowers, and some bays  
For thy hearse, to strew thy ways,

but in the 1645 edition :—

And som Flowers, and som Bays,  
For thy Hears to strew the ways,

goes to prove that *for* here must be taken as '*fore*.'

Of the *Paradise Lost* there were two editions issued during Milton's lifetime, and while the first has been taken as our text, all the variants in the second, not being simple misprints, have been recorded in the notes. In one respect, however, in the distribution of the poem into twelve books instead of ten, it has seemed best, for the sake of practical convenience, to follow the second edition. A word may be allowed here on the famous correction among the *Errata* prefixed to the first edition ; 'Lib. 2. v. 414, for *we* read *wee*.' This correction shows not only that Milton had theories about spelling, but also that he found means, though his sight was gone, to ascertain whether his rules had been carried out by his printer ; and in itself this fact justifies a facsimile reprint. What the principle in the use of the double vowel exactly was (and it is found to affect the other monosyllabic pronouns) it is not so easy to discover, though roughly it is clear the reduplication was intended to mark emphasis. For example, in the speech of the Divine Son after the battle in heaven (vi. 810-817) the pronouns which the voice would naturally emphasize are spelt with the double vowel :

## Preface.

Stand onely and behold  
Gods indignation on these Godless pourd  
By mee ; not you but mee they have despis'd,  
Yet envied ; against mee is all thir rage,  
Because the Father, t'whom in Heav'n supream  
Kingdom and Power and Glorie appertains,  
Hath honourd me according to his will.  
Therefore to mee thir doom he hath assig'n'd.

In the Son's speech offering himself as Redeemer (iii. 227-249) where the pronoun all through is markedly emphasized, it is printed *mee* the first four times, and afterwards *me* ; but it is noticeable that these first four times the emphatic word does not stand in the stressed place of the verse, so that a careless reader might not emphasize it, unless his attention were specially called by some such sign :

Behold mee then, mee for him, life for life  
I offer, on mee let thine anger fall ;  
Account mee man.

In the *Hymn of Creation* (v. 160-209) where *ye* occurs fourteen times, the emphasis and the metrical stress six times out of seven coincide, and the pronoun is spelt *yee* ; where it is unemphatic, and in an unstressed place, it is spelt *ye*. Two lines are especially instructive :

Speak yee who best can tell, ye Sons of light (l. 160) ;  
and

Fountains and yee, that warble, as ye flow,  
Melodious murmurs, warbling tune his praise (l. 195).

In v. 694 it marks, as the voice by its emphasis would mark in reading, a change of subject :

So spake the false Arch-Angel, and infus'd  
Bad influence into th' unwarie brest  
Of his Associate ; *hee* (*i. e.* the associate) together calls, &c.

An examination of other passages, where there is no antithesis, goes to show that the lengthened form of the pronoun is most frequent before a pause (as vii. 95) ; or at the end of a line (i. 245, 257) ; or when a foot is inverted (v. 133) ; or when as object it precedes its verb (v. 612 ; vii. 747), or as subject follows it (ix. 1109 ; x. 4). But as we might expect under circumstances where a purist could not correct his own proofs, there are not a few inconsistencies. There does not seem, for example, any special emphasis in the second *we* of the following passage :

Freely we serve.  
Because *wee* freely love, as in our will  
To love or not ; in this we stand or fall (v. 538).

(ix)

## Preface.

On the other hand, in the passage (iii. 41) in which the poet speaks of his own blindness :

Thus with the Year  
Seasons return, but not to me returns  
Day, &c.

where, if anywhere, we should expect *mee*, we do not find it, though it occurs in the speech eight lines below. It should be added that this differentiation of the pronouns is not found in any printed poem of Milton's before *Paradise Lost*, nor is it found in the Cambridge autograph. In that manuscript the constant forms are *me*, *wee*, *yee*. There is one place where there is a difference in the spelling of *she*, and it is just possible that this may not be due to accident. In the first verse of the song in *Arcades*, the MS. reads :

This, this is *shee* ;

and in the third verse :

This, this is *she* alone.

This use of the double vowel is found a few times in *Paradise Regain'd* ; in ii. 259 and iv. 486, 497 where *mee* begins a line, and in iv. 638 where *hee* is specially emphatic in the concluding lines of the poem. In *Samson Agonistes* it is more frequent (e. g. lines 124, 178, 193, 220, 252, 290, 1125). Another word the spelling of which in *Paradise Lost* will be observed to vary is the pronoun *their*, which is spelt sometimes *thir*. The spelling in the Cambridge manuscript is uniformly *thire*, except once when it is *thir* ; and where *their* once occurs in the writing of an amanuensis the *e* is struck through. That the difference is not merely a printer's device to accommodate his line may be seen by a comparison of lines 358 and 363 in the First Book, where the shorter word comes in the shorter line. It is probable that the lighter form of the word was intended to be used when it was quite unemphatic. Contrast, for example, in Book iii. l. 59 :

His own works and *their* works at once to view

with line 113 :

*Thir* maker and *thir* making and *thir* Fate.

But the use is not consistent, and the form *thir* is not found at all till the 349th line of the First Book. The distinction is kept up in the *Paradise Regain'd* and *Samson Agonistes*, but, if possible, with even less consistency. Such passages, however, as *Paradise Regain'd*, iii. 414-440 ; *Samson Agonistes*, 880-890, are certainly

## Preface.

spelt upon a method, and it is noticeable that in the choruses the lighter form is universal.

*Paradise Regain'd* and *Samson Agonistes* were published in 1671, and no further edition was called for in the remaining three years of the poet's lifetime, so that in the case of these poems there are no new readings to record; and the texts were so carefully revised, that only one fault (*Paradise Regain'd*, ii. 309) was left for correction later. In these and the other poems I have corrected the misprints catalogued in the tables of *Errata*, and I have silently corrected any other unless it might be mistaken for a various reading, when I have called attention to it in a note. Thus I have not recorded such blunders as *Letbian* for *Lesbian* in the 1645 text of *Lycidas*, line 63; or *hallow* for *hollow* in *Paradise Lost*, vi. 484; but I have noted *content* for *concent*, in *At a Solemn Musick*, line 6.

In conclusion I have to offer my sincere thanks to all who have collaborated with me in preparing this Edition; to the Delegates of the Oxford Press for allowing me to undertake it and decorate it with so many facsimiles; to the Controller of the Press for his unfailing courtesy; to the printers and printer's reader for their care and pains. Coming nearer home I cannot but acknowledge the help I have received in looking over proof-sheets from my sister, Mrs. P. A. Barnett, who has ungrudgingly put at the service of this book both time and eyesight. In taking leave of it, I may be permitted to say that it has cost more of both these inestimable treasures than I had anticipated. The last proof reaches me just a year after the first, and the progress of the work has not in the interval been interrupted. *In tenui labor et tenuis gloria*. Nevertheless I cannot be sorry it was undertaken.

H. C. B.

YATTENDON RECTORY,  
November 8, 1899.

# CONTENTS.

## MISCELLANEOUS POEMS—

	PAGE
ON THE MORNING OF CHRISTS NATIVITY . . . . .	1
THE HYMN . . . . .	2
A PARAPHRASE ON PSALM 114 . . . . .	9
PSALM 136 . . . . .	9
THE PASSION . . . . .	12
ON TIME . . . . .	14
UPON THE CIRCUMCISION . . . . .	14
AT A SOLEMN MUSICK . . . . .	15
AN EPITAPH ON THE MARCHIONESS OF WINCHESTER . . . . .	16
SONG ON MAY MORNING . . . . .	18
ON SHAKESPEAR. 1630 . . . . .	18
ON THE UNIVERSITY CARRIER . . . . .	19
ANOTHER ON THE SAME . . . . .	19
L'ALLEGRO . . . . .	20
IL PENSEROSO . . . . .	24
SONNETS (I-X) . . . . .	28-32
ARCADES . . . . .	33
LYCIDAS . . . . .	37
A MASKE PRESENTED AT LUDLOW CASTLE, 1634 . . . . .	43
POEMS ADDED IN THE 1673 EDITION—	
ON THE DEATH OF A FAIR INFANT . . . . .	76
AT A VACATION EXERCISE. . . . .	79
THE FIFTH ODE OF HORACE. LIB. I . . . . .	82
SONNETS (XI-XIX) . . . . .	82-86
SONNET—On the new forcers of Conscience under the Long Parliament . . . . .	86
SONNET—On the Lord Gen. Fairfax at the siege of Colchester . . . . .	87
„ To the Lord Generall Cromwell May 1652 . . . . .	88
„ To Sr Henry Vane the younger . . . . .	88
„ To Mr. Cyriack Skinner upon his Blindness . . . . .	89

# Contents.

	PAGE
PSALMS I-VIII. Done into Verse, 1653 . . . . .	89-96
„ LXXX-LXXXVIII. Done into Metre, 1648 . . . . .	97-110
PASSAGES TRANSLATED IN THE PROSE WRITINGS . . . . .	111
ADDRESSES TO MILTON . . . . .	117
ELEGIARUM LIBER . . . . .	122
SYLVARUM LIBER . . . . .	143

## PARADISE LOST —

BOOK	I	. . . . .	181
„	II	. . . . .	201
„	III	. . . . .	227
„	IV	. . . . .	246
„	V	. . . . .	272
„	VI	. . . . .	295
„	VII	. . . . .	318
„	VIII	. . . . .	334
„	IX	. . . . .	351
„	X	. . . . .	381
„	XI	. . . . .	409
„	XII	. . . . .	432

## PARADISE REGAIN'D—

BOOK	I	. . . . .	451
„	II	. . . . .	464
„	III	. . . . .	476
„	IV	. . . . .	487

SAMSON AGONISTES . . . . .	503
----------------------------	-----

## APPENDIX—

SPECIMEN OF MILTON'S SPELLING, FROM CAMBRIDGE AUTOGRAPH MS.	553
NOTE OF A FEW READINGS FROM THE SAME . . . . .	554
ERRATUM . . . . .	554

# POEMS

OF

Mr. *John Milton*,

BOTH

ENGLISH and LATIN,  
Compos'd at several times.

---

*Printed by his true Copies.*

---

The SONGS were set in Musick by  
Mr. HENRY LAWES Gentleman of  
the KINGS Chappel, and one  
of His MAJESTIES  
Private Musick.

——— *Baccare frontem*

*Cingite, ne vati noceat mala lingua futuro,*  
Virgil, Eclog. 7.

---

*Printed and publish'd according to*  
ORDER.

---

LONDON,

Printed by *Ruth Raworth* for *Humphrey Moseley*,  
and are to be sold at the signe of the Princes  
Arms in *S. Pauls Church-yard.* 1645.



# POEMS,&c.

U P O N

Several Occasions.

---

B Y

Mr. *J O H N M I L T O N*:

---

Both *E N G L I S H* and *L A T I N*,&c.  
Compos'd at several times.

---

With a small Treatise of  
*E D U C A T I O N*  
*To Mr. HARTLIB*

---

---

*L O N D O N*,  
Printed for *Tho. Dring* at the *Blew Anchor*  
next *Mitre Court* over against *Fetter*  
*Lane in Fleet-street.* 1673.

## THE STATIONER TO THE READER.

*It is not any private respect of gain, Gentle Reader, for the slightest Pamphlet is now adayes more vendible then the Works of learnedest men ; but it is the love I have to our own Language that hath made me diligent to collect, and set forth such Peeces both in Prose and Vers as may renew the wonted honour and esteem of our English tongue : and it's the worth of these both English and Latin Poems, not the flourish of any prefixed encomions that can invite thee to buy them, though these are not without the highest Commendations and Applause of the learnedst Academicks, both domestick and forrein : And amongst those of our own Countrey, the unparallel'd attestation of that renowned Provost of Eaton, Sir Henry Wootton : I know not thy palat how it relishes such dainties, nor how harmonious thy soul is ; perhaps more trivial Airs may please thee better. But howsoever thy opinion is spent upon these, that encouragement I have already received from the most ingenious men in their clear and courteous entertainment of Mr. Wallers late choice Peeces, hath once more made me adventure into the World, presenting it with these ever-green, and not to be blasted Laurels. The Authors more peculiar excellency in these studies, was too well known to conceal his Papers, or to keep me from attempting to sollicit them from him. Let the event guide it self which way it will, I shall deserve of the age, by bringing into the Light as true a Birth, as the Muses have brought forth since our famous Spencer wrote ; whose Poems in these English ones are as rarely imitated, as sweetly excell'd. Reader, if thou art Eagle-eied to censure their worth, I am not fearful to expose them to thy exactest perusal.*

*Thine to command*

HUMPH. MOSELEY.

# MISCELLANEOUS POEMS.



## On the Morning of CHRIST'S Nativity.

Compos'd 1629.

### I

THIS is the Month, and this the happy morn  
Wherin the Son of Heav'ns eternal King,  
Of wedded Maid, and Virgin Mother born,  
Our great redemption from above did bring ;  
For so the holy sages once did sing,  
That he our deadly forfeit should release,  
And with his Father work us a perpetual peace.

### II

That glorious Form, that Light unsufferable,  
And that far-beaming blaze of Majesty,  
Wherwith he wont at Heav'ns high Council-Table, 10  
To sit the midst of Trinal Unity,  
He laid aside ; and here with us to be,  
Forsook the Courts of everlasting Day,  
And chose with us a darksome House of mortal Clay.

### III

Say Heav'nly Muse, shall not thy sacred vein  
Afford a present to the Infant God ?  
Hast thou no vers, no hymn, or solemn strein,  
To welcom him to this his new abode,  
Now while the Heav'n by the Suns team untrod,  
Hath took no print of the approaching light, 20  
And all the spangled host keep watch in squadrons bright ?

# Miscellaneous Poems.

## IV

See how from far upon the Eastern rode  
The Star-led Wisards haste with odours sweet,  
O run, prevent them with thy humble ode,  
And lay it lowly at his blessed feet;  
Have thou the honour first, thy Lord to greet,  
And joyn thy voice unto the Angel Quire,  
From out his secret Altar toucht with hallow'd fire.

## The Hymn.

### I

It was the Winter wilde,  
While the Heav'n-born-childe,  
All meanly wrapt in the rude manger lies ;  
Nature in aw to him  
Had doff't her gawdy trim,  
With her great Master so to sympathize :  
It was no season then for her  
To wanton with the Sun her lusty Paramour.

30

### II

Only with speeches fair  
She woo's the gentle Air  
To hide her guilty front with innocent Snow,  
And on her naked shame,  
Pollute with sinfull blame,  
The Saintly Vail of Maiden white to throw,  
Confounded, that her Makers eyes  
Should look so neer upon her foul deformities.

40

### III

But he her fears to cease,  
Sent down the meek-eyd Peace,  
She crown'd with Olive green, came softly sliding  
Down through the turning sphear  
His ready Harbinger,  
With Turtle wing the amorous clouds dividing,  
And waving wide her mirtle wand,  
She strikes a universall Peace through Sea and Land.

50

# The Hymn.

## IV

No War, or Battails sound  
Was heard the World around,  
The idle spear and shield were high up hung ;  
The hooked Chariot stood  
Unstain'd with hostile blood,  
The Trumpet spake not to the armed throng,  
And Kings sate still with awfull eye,  
As if they surely knew their sovran Lord was by. 60

## V

But peacefull was the night  
Wherin the Prince of light  
His raign of peace upon the earth began :  
The Windes with wonder whist,  
Smoothly the waters kist,  
Whispering new joyes to the milde Ocean,  
Who now hath quite forgot to rave,  
While Birds of Calm sit brooding on the charmed wave.

## VI

The Stars with deep amaze  
Stand fixt in stedfast gaze, 70  
Bending one way their pretious influence,  
And will not take their flight,  
For all the morning light,  
Or *Lucifer* that often warn'd them thence ;  
But in their glimmering Orbs did glow,  
Untill their Lord himself bespake, and bid them go.

## VII

And though the shady gloom  
Had given day her room,  
The Sun himself with-held his wonted speed,  
And hid his head for shame, 80  
As his inferiour flame,  
The new enlightn'd world no more should need ;  
He saw a greater Sun appear  
Then his bright Throne, or burning Axletree could bear.

## Miscellaneous Poems.

### VIII

The Shepherds on the Lawn,  
Or ere the point of dawn,  
Sate simply chatting in a rustick row;  
Full little thought they than,  
That the mighty *Pan*  
Was kindly com to live with them below; 90  
Perhaps their loves, or els their sheep,  
Was all that did their silly thoughts so busie keep.

### IX

When such musick sweet  
Their hearts and ears did greet,  
As never was by mortall finger strook,  
Divinely-warbled voice  
Answering the stringed noise,  
As all their souls in blisfull rapture took :  
The Air such pleasure loth to lose,  
With thousand echo's still prolongs each heav'nly close.

### X

Nature that heard such sound 101  
Beneath the hollow round  
Of *Cynthia's* seat, the Airy region thrilling,  
Now was almost won  
To think her part was don,  
And that her reign had here its last fulfilling ;  
She knew such harmony alone  
Could hold all Heav'n and Earth in happier union.

### XI

At last surrounds their sight  
A Globe of circular light, 110  
That with long beams the shame-fac't night array'd,  
The helmed Cherubim  
And sworded Seraphim,  
Are seen in glittering ranks with wings displaid,  
Harping in loud and solemn quire,  
With unexpressive notes to Heav'ns new-born Heir.

# The Hymn.

## XII

Such Musick (as 'tis said)  
Before was never made,  
But when of old the sons of morning sung,  
While the Creator Great 120  
His constellations set,  
And the well-ballanc't world on hinges hung,  
And cast the dark foundations deep,  
And bid the weltring waves their oozy channel keep.

## XIII

Ring out ye Crystall sphears,  
Once bless our human ears,  
(If ye have power to touch our senses so)  
And let your silver chime  
Move in melodious time;  
And let the Base of Heav'ns deep Organ blow, 130  
And with your ninefold harmony  
Make up full consort to th'Angelike symphony.

## XIV

For if such holy Song  
Enwrap our fancy long,  
Time will run back, and fetch the age of gold,  
And speckl'd vanity  
Will sicken soon and die,  
And leprous sin will melt from earthly mould,  
And Hell it self will pass away,  
And leave her dolorous mansions to the peering day. 140

## XV

Yea Truth, and Justice then  
Will down return to men,  
Th'enameld *Arras* of the Rain-bow wearing,  
And Mercy set between,  
Thron'd in Celestiall sheen,  
With radiant feet the tissued clouds down steering,  
And Heav'n as at som festivall,  
Will open wide the Gates of her high Palace Hall.

143-4 Orb'd in a Rain-bow; and like glories wearing  
Mercy will sit between 1673

## Miscellaneous Poems.

### XVI

But wisest Fate says no,  
This must not yet be so, 150  
The Babe lies yet in smiling Infancy,  
That on the bitter cross  
Must redeem our loss ;  
So both himself and us to glorifie :  
Yet first to those ychain'd in sleep,  
The wakefull trump of doom must thunder through the deep,

### XVII

With such a horrid clang  
As on mount *Sinai* rang  
While the red fire, and smouldring clouds out brake :  
The aged Earth agast 160  
With terrour of that blast,  
Shall from the surface to the center shake ;  
When at the worlds last session,  
The dreadful Judge in middle Air shall spread his throne.

### XVIII

And then at last our bliss  
Full and perfect is,  
But now begins ; for from this happy day  
Th'old Dragon under ground  
In straiter limits bound,  
Not half so far casts his usurped sway, 170  
And wrath to see his Kingdom fail,  
Swindges the scaly Horror of his foulded tail.

### XIX

The Oracles are dumm,  
No voice or hideous humm  
Runs through the arched roof in words deceiving.  
*Apollo* from his shrine  
Can no more divine,  
With hollow shriek the steep of *Delphos* leaving.  
No nightly trance, or breathed spell,  
Inspire's the pale-ey'd Priest from the prophetic cell. 180



# The Hymn.

## XX

The lonely mountains o're,  
And the resounding shore,  
A voice of weeping heard, and loud lament;  
From haunted spring, and dale  
Edg'd with poplar pale,  
The parting Genius is with sighing sent,  
With flowre-inwov'n tresses torn  
The Nymphs in twilight shade of tangled thickets mourn.

## XXI

In consecrated Earth,  
And on the holy Hearth, 190  
The *Lars*, and *Lemures* moan with midnight plaint,  
In Urns, and Altars round,  
A drear, and dying sound  
Affrights the *Flamins* at their service quaint;  
And the chill Marble seems to sweat,  
While each peculiar power forgoes his wonted seat.

## XXII

*Peor*, and *Baalim*,  
Forsake their Temples dim,  
With that twice-batter'd god of *Palestine*,  
And mooned *Ashtaroth*, 200  
Heav'n's Queen and Mother both,  
Now sits not girt with Tapers holy shine,  
The Libyc *Hammon* shrinks his horn,  
In vain the *Tyrian* Maids their wounded *Thamuz* mourn.

## XXIII

And sullen *Moloch* fled,  
Hath left in shadows dred,  
His burning Idol all of blackest hue,  
In vain with Cymbals ring,  
They call the grisly king,  
In dismall dance about the furnace blue: 210  
The brutish gods of *Nile* as fast,  
*Isis* and *Orus*, and the Dog *Anubis* hast.

## Miscellaneous Poems.

### XXIV

Nor is *Osiris* seen  
In *Memphian* Grove, or Green,  
Trampling the unshowr'd Grasse with lowings loud :  
Nor can he be at rest  
Within his sacred chest.

Naught but profoundest Hell can be his shroud,  
In vain with Timbrel'd Anthems dark  
The sable-stoled Sorcerers bear his worshipt Ark. 220

### XXV

He feels from *Juda's* Land  
The dredged Infants hand,  
The rayes of *Bethlehem* blind his dusky eyn ;  
Nor all the gods beside,  
Longer dare abide,  
Not *Typhon* huge ending in snaky twine :  
Our Babe to shew his Godhead true,  
Can in his swadling bands controul the damned crew.

### XXVI

So when the Sun in bed,  
Curtain'd with cloudy red, 230  
Pillows his chin upon an Orient wave,  
The flocking shadows pale,  
Troop to th'infernall jail,  
Each fetter'd Ghost slips to his severall grave,  
And the yellow-skirted *Fayes*,  
Fly after the Night-steeds, leaving their Moon-lov'd maze.

### XXVII

But see the Virgin blest,  
Hath laid her Babe to rest.  
Time is our tedious Song should here have ending,  
Heav'ns youngest teemed Star, 240  
Hath fixt her polisht Car,  
Her sleeping Lord with Handmaid Lamp attending :  
And all about the Courtly Stable,  
Bright-harnest Angels sit in order serviceable.

# *Psalms.*

## A Paraphrase on *Psalm* 114.

This and the following *Psalm* were done  
by the Author at fifteen yeers old.

WHEN the blest seed of *Terah's* faithfull Son,  
After long toil their liberty had won,  
And past from *Pharian* fields to *Canaan* Land,  
Led by the strength of the Almighty's hand,  
*Jehovah's* wonders were in *Israel* shown,  
His praise and glory was in *Israel* known.  
'That saw the troubl'd Sea, and shivering fled,  
And sought to hide his froth-becurled head  
Low in the earth, *Jordans* clear streams recoil,  
As a faint host that hath receiv'd the foil. 10  
The high, huge-bellied Mountains skip like Rams  
Amongst their Ews, the little Hills like Lambs.  
Why fled the Ocean? And why skipt the Mountains?  
Why turned *Jordan* toward his Crystall Fountains?  
Shake earth, and at the presence be agast  
Of him that ever was, and ay shall last,  
That glassy flouds from rugged rocks can crush,  
And make soft rills from fiery flint-stones gush.

## *Psalm* 136.

LET us with a gladson mind  
Praise the Lord, for he is kind,  
For his mercies ay endure,  
Ever faithfull, ever sure.

Let us blaze his Name abroad,  
For of gods he is the God;  
For, &c.

O let us his praises tell,  
That doth the wrathfull tyrants quell. 10  
For, &c.

That with his miracles doth make  
Amazed Heav'n and Earth to shake.  
For, &c.

*Psalm* 136. 10, 13 That] who 1673

## Miscellaneous Poems.

That by his wisdom did create  
The painted Heav'ns so full of state.  
For, &c.

20

That did the solid Earth ordain  
To rise above the watry plain.  
For, &c.

That by his all-commanding might,  
Did fill the new-made world with light.  
For, &c.

And caus'd the Golden-tressed Sun,  
All the day long his cours to run.  
For, &c.

30

The horned Moon to shine by night,  
Amongst her spangled sisters bright.  
For, &c.

He with his thunder-clasping hand,  
Smote the first-born of *Egypt* Land.  
For, &c.

40

And in despite of *Pharao* fell,  
He brought from thence his *Israel*.  
For, &c.

The ruddy waves he cleft in twain,  
Of the *Erythraean* main.  
For, &c.

The floods stood still like Walls of Glass,  
While the Hebrew Bands did pass.  
For, &c.

50

But full soon they did devour  
The Tawny King with all his power.  
For, &c.

His chosen people he did bless  
In the wastfull Wildernes.  
For, &c.

60

17, 21, 25 That] who 1673

## Psalm 136.

In bloody battail he brought down  
Kings of prowess and renown.

For, &c.

He foild bold *Seon* and his host,  
That rul'd the *Amorrean* coast.

For, &c.

And large-lim'd *Og* he did subdue,  
With all his over hardy crew.

70

For, &c.

And to his Servant *Israel*,  
He gave their Land therin to dwell.

For, &c.

He hath with a piteous eye  
Beheld us in our misery.

For, &c.

80

And freed us from the slavery  
Of the invading enemy.

For, &c.

All living creatures he doth feed,  
And with full hand supplies their need.

For, &c.

Let us therefore warble forth  
His mighty Majesty and worth.

90

For, &c.

That his mansion hath on high  
Above the reach of mortall ey.

For his mercies ay endure,  
Ever faithfull, ever sure.

# Miscellaneous Poems.

## The Passion.

### I

ERE-while of Musick, and Ethereal mirth,  
Wherwith the stage of Ayr and Earth did ring,  
And joyous news of heav'nly Infants birth,  
My muse with Angels did divide to sing;  
But headlong joy is ever on the wing,  
In Wintry solstice like the shortn'd light  
Soon swallow'd up in dark and long out-living night.

### II

For now to sorrow must I tune my song,  
And set my Harpe to notes of saddest wo,  
Which on our dearest Lord did sease er'e long, 10  
Dangers, and snares, and wrongs, and worse then so,  
Which he for us did freely undergo.

Most perfect *Heroe*, try'd in heaviest plight  
Of labours huge and hard, too hard for human wight.

### III

He sov'ran Priest stooping his regall head  
That dropt with odorous oil down his fair eyes,  
Poor fleshly Tabernacle entered,  
His starry front low-rooft beneath the skies;  
O what a Mask was there, what a disguise!

Yet more; the stroke of death he must abide, 20  
Then lies him meekly down fast by his Brethrens side.

### IV

These latter scenes confine my roving vers,  
To this Horizon is my *Phoebus* bound,  
His Godlike acts, and his temptations fierce,  
And former sufferings other where are found;  
Loud o're the rest *Cremona's* Trump doth sound;  
Me softer airs befit, and softer strings  
Of Lute, or Viol still, more apt for mournful things.

22 latter] latest 1673

# The Passion.

## V

Befriend me night best Patroness of grief,  
Over the Pole thy thickest mantle throw, 30  
And work my flatter'd fancy to belief,  
That Heav'n and Earth are colour'd with my wo;  
My sorrows are too dark for day to know:  
The leaves should all be black wheron I write,  
And letters where my tears have washt a wannish white.

## VI

See see the Chariot, and those rushing wheels,  
That whirl'd the Prophet up at *Chebar* flood,  
My spirit som transporting *Cherub* feels,  
To bear me where the Towers of *Salem* stood,  
Once glorious Towers, now sunk in guiltles blood; 40  
There doth my soul in holy vision sit  
In pensive trance, and anguish, and ecstatic fit.

## VII

Mine eye hath found that sad Sepulchral rock  
That was the Casket of Heav'ns richest store,  
And here though grief my feeble hands up-lock,  
Yet on the softned Quarry would I score  
My plaining vers as lively as before;  
For sure so well instructed are my tears,  
That they would fitly fall in order'd Characters.

## VIII

Or should I thence hurried on viewles wing, 50  
Take up a weeping on the Mountains wilde,  
The gentle neighbourhood of grove and spring  
Would soon unboosom all their Echoes milde,  
And I (for grief is easily beguild)  
Might think th'infection of my sorrows loud,  
Had got a race of mourners on som pregnant cloud.

*This Subject the Author finding to be above the yeers he had,  
when he wrote it, and nothing satisfi'd with what was  
begun, left it unfinisht.*

# Miscellaneous Poems.

## On Time.

FLY envious *Time*, till thou run out thy race,  
Call on the lazy leaden-stepping hours,  
Whose speed is but the heavy Plummets pace;  
And glut thy self with what thy womb devours,  
Which is no more then what is false and vain,  
And meerly mortal dross;  
So little is our loss,  
So little is thy gain.  
For when as each thing bad thou hast entomb'd,  
And last of all, thy greedy self consum'd, 10  
Then long Eternity shall greet our bliss  
With an individual kiss;  
And Joy shall overtake us as a flood,  
When every thing that is sincerely good  
And perfectly divine,  
With Truth, and Peace, and Love shall ever shine  
About the supreme Throne  
Of him, t'whose happy-making sight alone,  
When once our heav'nly-guided soul shall clime,  
Then all this Earthy grosnes quit, 20  
Attir'd with Stars, we shall for ever sit,  
Triumphing over Death, and Chance, and thee O Time.

## Upon the Circumcision.

YE flaming Powers, and winged Warriours bright,  
That erst with Musick, and triumphant song  
First heard by happy watchful Shepherds ear,  
So sweetly sung your Joy the Clouds along  
Through the soft silence of the list'ning night;  
Now mourn, and if sad share with us to bear  
Your fiery essence can distill no tear,  
Burn in your sighs, and borrow  
Seas wept from our deep sorrow,  
He who with all Heav'ns heraldry whileare 10  
Enter'd the world, now bleeds to give us ease;  
Alas, how soon our sin  
Sore doth begin  
His Infancy to sease!



## *At a Solemn Musick.*

O more exceeding love or law more just?  
Just law indeed, but more exceeding love!  
For we by rightfull doom remediles  
Were lost in death, till he that dwelt above  
High thron'd in secret bliss, for us frail dust  
Emptied his glory, ev'n to nakednes; 20  
And that great Cov'nant which we still transgress  
Intirely satisfi'd,  
And the full wrath beside  
Of vengeful Justice bore for our excess,  
And seals obedience first with wounding smart  
This day, but O ere long  
Huge pangs and strong  
Will pierce more neer his heart.

## *At a Solemn Musick.*

BLEST pair of *Sirens*, pledges of Heav'ns joy,  
Sphear-born harmonious Sisters, Voice, and Vers,  
Wed your divine sounds, and mixt power employ  
Dead things with inbreath'd sense able to pierce,  
And to our high-raisd phantasie present,  
That undisturbed Song of pure content,  
Ay sung before the saphire-colour'd throne  
To him that sits thereon  
With Saintly shout, and solemn Jubily,  
Where the bright Seraphim in burning row 10  
Their loud up-lifted Angel trumpets blow,  
And the Cherubick host in thousand quires  
Touch their immortal Harps of golden wires,  
With those just Spirits that wear victorious Palms,  
Hymns devout and holy Psalms  
Singing everlastingly;  
That we on Earth with undiscording voice  
May rightly answer that melodious noise;  
As once we did, till disproportion'd sin  
Jarr'd against natures chime, and with harsh din 20  
Broke the fair musick that all creatures made  
To their great Lord, whose love their motion sway'd

## Miscellaneous Poems.

In perfect Diapason, whilst they stood  
In first obedience, and their state of good.  
O may we soon again renew that Song,  
And keep in tune with Heav'n, till God ere long  
To his celestial consort us unite,  
To live with him, and sing in endles morn of light.

### An Epitaph on the Marchioness of *Winchester.*

THIS rich Marble doth enterr  
The honour'd Wife of *Winchester*,  
A Vicounts daughter, an Earls heir,  
Besides what her vertues fair  
Added to her noble birth,  
More then she could own from Earth.  
Summers three times eight save one  
She had told, alas too soon,  
After so short time of breath,  
To house with darknes, and with death. 10  
Yet had the number of her days  
Bin as compleat as was her praise,  
Nature and fate had had no strife  
In giving limit to her life.  
Her high birth, and her graces sweet,  
Quickly found a lover meet;  
The Virgin quire for her request  
The God that sits at marriage feast;  
He at their invoking came  
But with a scarce-wel-lighted flame; 20  
And in his Garland as he stood,  
Ye might discern a Cipress bud.  
Once had the early Matrons run  
To greet her of a lovely son,  
And now with second hope she goes,  
And calls *Lucina* to her throws;  
But whether by mischance or blame  
*Atropos* for *Lucina* came;

## Epitaph

And with remorseles cruelty,  
Spoil'd at once both fruit and tree : 30  
The haples Babe before his birth  
Had burial, yet not laid in earth,  
And the languisht Mothers Womb  
Was not long a living Tomb.  
So have I seen som tender slip  
Sav'd with care from Winters nip,  
The pride of her carnation train,  
Pluck't up by som unheedy swain,  
Who onely thought to crop the flowr  
New shot up from vernall showr ; 40  
But the fair blossom hangs the head  
Side-ways as on a dying bed,  
And those Pearls of dew she wears,  
Prove to be presaging tears  
Which the sad morn had let fall  
On her hast'ning funerall.  
Gentle Lady may thy grave  
Peace and quiet ever have ;  
After this thy travail sore  
Sweet rest sease thee evermore, 50  
That to give the world encrease,  
Shortned hast thy own lives lease ;  
Here besides the sorrowing  
That thy noble House doth bring,  
Here be tears of perfect moan  
Weept for thee in *Helicon*,  
And som Flowers, and som Bays,  
For thy Hears to strew the ways,  
Sent thee from the banks of *Came*,  
Devoted to thy vertuous name ; 60  
Whilst thou bright Saint high sit'st in glory,  
Next her much like to thee in story,  
That fair *Syrian* Shepherdess,  
Who after yeers of barrennes,  
The highly favour'd *Joseph* bore  
To him that serv'd for her before,  
And at her next birth much like thee,  
Through pangs fled to felicity,  
Far within the boosom bright  
Of blazing Majesty and Light, 70

## Miscellaneous Poems.

There with thee, new welcom Saint,  
Like fortunes may her soul acquaint,  
With thee there clad in radiant sheen,  
No Marchioness, but now a Queen.

### SONG

#### On *May* morning.

Now the bright morning Star, Dayes harbinger,  
Comes dancing from the East, and leads with her  
The Flowry *May*, who from her green lap throws  
The yellow Cowslip, and the pale Primrose.

Hail bounteous *May* that dost inspire  
Mirth and youth, and warm desire,  
Woods and Groves, are of thy dressing,  
Hill and Dale, doth boast thy blessing.  
Thus we salute thee with our early Song,  
And welcom thee, and wish thee long.

10

#### On *Shakespear*. 1630.

WHAT needs my *Shakespear* for his honour'd Bones,  
The labour of an age in piled Stones,  
Or that his hallow'd reliques should be hid  
Under a Star-ypointing *Pyramid*?

Dear son of memory, great heir of Fame,  
What need'st thou such weak witnes of thy name?

Thou in our wonder and astonishment  
Hast built thy self a live-long Monument.

For whilst to th'shame of slow-endeavouring art,  
Thy easie numbers flow, and that each heart

10

Hath from the leaves of thy unvalu'd Book,  
Those Delphick lines with deep impression took,  
Then thou our fancy of it self bereaving,  
Dost make us Marble with too much conceaving;  
And so Sepulcher'd in such pomp dost lie,  
That Kings for such a Tomb would wish to die.

On *Shakespear*. Reprinted 1632 in the second folio *Shakespeare*: Title]  
An epitaph on the admirable dramaticke poet W. Shakespeare ( needs]  
neede 6 weak] dull 8 live-long] lasting 10 heart, part 13 it] her

## *On the University Carrier.*

On the University Carrier who  
sickn'd in the time of his vacancy, being  
forbid to go to *London*, by reason of  
the Plague.

HERE lies old *Hobson*, Death hath broke his girt,  
And here alas, hath laid him in the dirt,  
Or els the ways being foul, twenty to one,  
He's here stuck in a slough, and overthrown.  
'Twas such a shifter, that if truth were known,  
Death was half glad when he had got him down ;  
For he had any time this ten yeers full,  
Dodg'd with him, betwixt *Cambridge* and the Bull.  
And surely, Death could never have prevail'd,  
Had not his weekly cours of carriage fail'd ; 10  
But lately finding him so long at home,  
And thinking now his journeys end was come,  
And that he had tane up his latest Inne,  
In the kind office of a Chamberlin  
Shew'd him his room where he must lodge that night,  
Pull'd off his Boots, and took away the light :  
If any ask for him, it shall be sed,  
*Hobson* has supt, and's newly gon to bed.

### Another on the same.

HERE lieth one who did most truly prove,  
That he could never die while he could move,  
So hung his destiny never to rot  
While he might still jogg on, and keep his trot,  
Made of sphear-métal, never to decay  
Untill his revolution was at stay.  
'Time numbers motion, yet (without a crime  
'Gainst old truth) motion number'd out his time :  
And like an Engin mov'd with wheel and waight,  
His principles being ceast, he ended strait. 10  
Rest that gives all men life, gave him his death,  
And too much breathing put him out of breath ;

## Miscellaneous Poems.

Nor were it contradiction to affirm  
Too long vacation hastned on his term.  
Meerly to drive the time away he sickn'd,  
Fainted, and died, nor would with Ale be quickn'd;  
Nay, quoth he, on his swooning bed out-stretch'd,  
If I may not carry, sure Ile ne're be fetch'd,  
But vow though the cross Doctors all stood hearers,  
For one Carrier put down to make six bearers. 20  
Ease was his chief disease, and to judge right,  
He di'd for heavines that his Cart went light,  
His leasure told him that his time was com,  
And lack of load, made his life burdensom,  
That even to his last breath (ther be that say't)  
As he were prest to death, he cry'd more waight;  
But had his doings lasted as they were,  
He had bin an immortall Carrier.  
Obedient to the Moon he spent his date  
In cours reciprocal, and had his fate 30  
Linkt to the mutual flowing of the Seas,  
Yet (strange to think) his wain was his increase:  
His Letters are deliver'd all and gon,  
Onely remains this superscription.

### *L' Allegro.*

HENCE loathed Melancholy  
Of *Cerberus*, and blackest midnight born,  
In *Stygian* Cave forlorn  
'Mongst horrid shapes, and shreiks, and sights unholy,  
Find out som uncouth cell,  
Where brooding darknes spreads his jealous wings,  
And the night-Raven sings;  
There under *Ebon* shades, and low-brow'd Rocks,  
As ragged as thy Locks,  
In dark *Cimmerian* desert ever dwell. 10  
But com thou Goddes fair and free,  
In Heav'n ycleap'd *Euphrosyne*,  
And by men, heart-easing Mirth,  
Whom lovely *Venus* at a birth  
With two sister Graces more  
To Ivy-crowned *Bacchus* bore;

## *L' Allegro.*

Or whether (as som Sager sing)  
The frolick Wind that breathes the Spring,  
*Zephir* with *Aurora* playing,  
As he met her once a Maying, 20  
There on Beds of Violets blew,  
And fresh-blown Roses washt in dew,  
Fill'd her with thee a daughter fair,  
So bucksom, blith, and debonair.  
Haste thee nymph, and bring with thee  
Jest and youthful Jollity,  
Quips and Cranks, and wanton Wiles,  
Nods, and Becks, and Wreathed Smiles,  
Such as hang on *Hebe's* cheek,  
And love to live in dimple sleek ; 30  
Sport that wrincled Care derides,  
And Laughter holding both his sides.  
Com, and trip it as ye go  
On the light fantastick toe,  
And in thy right hand lead with thee,  
The Mountain Nymph, sweet Liberty ;  
And if I give thee honour due,  
Mirth, admit me of thy crue  
To live with her, and live with thee,  
In unreprieved pleasures free ; 40  
To hear the Lark begin his flight,  
And singing startle the dull night,  
From his watch-towre in the skies,  
Till the dappled dawn doth rise ;  
Then to com in spight of sorrow,  
And at my window bid good morrow,  
Through the Sweet-Briar, or the Vine,  
Or the twisted Eglantine.  
While the Cock with lively din,  
Scatters the rear of darknes thin, 50  
And to the stack, or the Barn dore,  
Stoutly struts his Dames before,  
Oft list'ning how the Hounds and horn  
Chearly rouse the slumbring morn,  
From the side of som Hoar Hill,  
Through the high wood echoing shrill.

## Miscellaneous Poems.

Som time walking not unseen  
By Hedge-row Elms, on Hillocks green,  
Right against the Eastern gate,  
Wher the great Sun begins his state, 60  
Rob'd in flames, and Amber light,  
The clouds in thousand Liveries dight.  
While the Plowman neer at hand,  
Whistles ore the Furrow'd Land,  
And the Milkmaid singeth blithe,  
And the Mower whets his sithe,  
And every Shepherd tells his tale  
Under the Hawthorn in the dale.  
Streit mine eye hath caught new pleasures  
Whilst the Lantskip round it measures, 70  
Russet Lawns, and Fallows Gray,  
Where the nibling flocks do stray,  
Mountains on whose barren brest  
The labouring clouds do often rest :  
Meadows trim with Daisies pide,  
Shallow Brooks, and Rivers wide.  
Towers, and Battlements it sees  
Boosom'd high in tufted Trees,  
Wher perhaps som beauty lies, 80  
The Cynosure of neighbouring eyes.  
Hard by, a Cottage chimney smokes,  
From betwixt two aged Okes,  
Where *Corydon* and *Thyrsis* met,  
Are at their savory dinner set  
Of Hearbs, and other Country Messes,  
Which the neat-handed *Phyllis* dresses ;  
And then in haste her Bower she leaves,  
With *Thestylis* to bind the Sheaves ;  
Or if the earlier season lead  
To the tann'd Haycock in the Mead, 90  
Som times with secure delight  
The up-land Hamlets will invite,  
When the merry Bells ring round,  
And the jocond rebecks sound  
To many a youth, and many a maid,  
Dancing in the Chequer'd shade ;  
And young and old com forth to play  
On a Sunshine Holyday,



## *L' Allegro.*

Till the live-long day-light fail,  
Then to the Spicy Nut-brown Ale, 100  
With stories told of many a feat,  
How *Faery Mab* the junkets eat,  
She was pinch't, and pull'd she sed,  
And he by Friars Lanthorn led  
Tells how the drudging *Goblin* swet,  
To ern his Cream-bowle duly set,  
When in one night, ere glimps of morn,  
His shadowy Flae hath thresh'd the Corn  
That ten day-labourers could not end, 110  
Then lies him down the Lubbar Fend.  
And stretch'd out all the Chimney's length,  
Basks at the fire his hairy strength ;  
And Crop-full out of dores he flings,  
Ere the first Cock his Mattin rings.  
Thus don the Tales, to bed they creep,  
By whispering Windes soon lull'd asleep.  
Towred Cities please us then,  
And the busie humm of men,  
Where throngs of Knights and Barons hold,  
In weeds of Peace high triumphs hold, 120  
With store of Ladies, whose bright eies  
Rain influence, and judge the prise  
Of Wit, or Arms, while both contend  
To win her Grace, whom all commend.  
There let *Hymen* oft appear  
In Saffron robe, with Taper clear,  
And pomp, and feast, and revelry,  
With mask, and antique Pageantry,  
Such sights as youthfull Poets dream  
On Summer eeves by haunted stream. 130  
Then to the well-trod stage anon,  
If *Jonsons* learned Sock be on,  
Or sweetest *Shakespear* fancies childe,  
Warble his native Wood-notes wilde,  
And ever against eating Cares,  
Lap me in soft *Lydian* Aires,  
Married to immortal verse  
Such as the meeting soul may pierce

## Miscellaneous Poems.

In notes, with many a winding bout  
Of lincked sweetnes long drawn out,  
With wanton heed, and giddy cunning,  
The melting voice through mazes running;  
Untwisting all the chains that ty  
The hidden soul of harmony.  
That *Orpheus* self may heave his head  
From golden slumber on a bed  
Of heapt *Elysian* flowres, and hear  
Such streins as would have won the ear  
Of *Pluto*, to have quite set free  
His half regain'd *Eurydice*.  
These delights, if thou canst give,  
Mirth with thee, I mean to live.

147

150

### *Il Penseroso.*

HENCE vain deluding joyes,  
The brood of folly without father bred,  
How little you bested,  
Or fill the fixed mind with all your toyes;  
Dwell in som idle brain,  
And fancies fond with gaudy shapes possess,  
As thick and numberless  
As the gay motes that people the Sun Beams,  
Or likest hovering dreams  
The fickle Pensioners of *Morpheus* train.  
But hail thou Goddes, sage and holy,  
Hail divinest Melancholy,  
Whose Saintly visage is too bright  
To hit the Sense of human sight;  
And therefore to our weaker view,  
Ore laid with black staid Wisdoms hue.  
Black, but such as in esteem,  
Prince *Memnons* sister might beseeem,  
Or that Starr'd *Ethiops* Queen that strove  
To set her beauties praise above  
The Sea Nymphs, and their powers offended.  
Yet thou art higher far descended,

10

20

## *Il Penseroso.*

Thee bright-hair'd *Vesta* long of yore,  
To solitary *Saturn* bore;  
His daughter she (in *Saturns* reign,  
Such mixture was not held a stain)  
Oft in glimmering Bowres, and glades  
He met her, and in secret shades  
Of woody *Ida's* inmost grove,  
While yet there was no fear of *Jove*. 30  
Com pensive Nun, devout and pure,  
Sober, stedfast, and demure,  
All in a robe of darkest grain,  
Flowing with majestick train,  
And sable stole of *Cipres* Lawn,  
Over thy decent shoulders drawn.  
Com, but keep thy wonted state,  
With eev'n step, and musing gate,  
And looks commercing with the skies,  
Thy rapt soul sitting in thine eyes: 40  
There held in holy passion still,  
Forget thy self to Marble, till  
With a sad Leaden downward cast,  
Thou fix them on the earth as fast.  
And joyn with thee calm Peace, and Quiet,  
Spare Fast, that oft with gods doth diet,  
And hears the Muses in a ring,  
Ay round about *Joves* Altar sing.  
And adde to these retired Leasure,  
That in trim Gardens takes his pleasure; 50  
But first, and chiefest, with thee bring,  
Him that yon soars on golden wing,  
Guiding the fiery-wheeled throne,  
The Cherub Contemplation,  
And the mute Silence hist along,  
'Less *Philomel* will daign a Song,  
In her sweetest, saddest plight,  
Smoothing the rugged brow of night,  
While *Cynthia* checks her Dragon yoke,  
Gently o're th'accustom'd Oke; 60  
Sweet Bird that shunn'st the noise of folly,  
Most musicall, most melancholy!  
Thee Chauntress oft the Woods among,  
I woo to hear thy eeven-Song;

## Miscellaneous Poems.

And missing thee, I walk unseen  
On the dry smooth-shaven Green,  
To behold the wandring Moon,  
Riding neer her highest noon,  
Like one that had bin led astray  
Through the Heav'ns wide pathles way ; 70  
And oft, as if her head she bow'd,  
Stooping through a fleecy cloud.  
Oft on a Plat of rising ground,  
I hear the far-off *Curfeu* sound,  
Over som wide-water'd shoar,  
Swinging slow with sullen roar :  
Or if the Ayr will not permit,  
Som still removed place will fit,  
Where glowing Embers through the room  
Teach light to counterfeit a gloom, 80  
Far from all resort of mirth,  
Save the Cricket on the hearth,  
Or the Belmans drousie charm,  
To bless the dores from nightly harm :  
Or let my Lamp at midnight hour,  
Be seen in som high lonely Towr,  
Where I may oft out-watch the *Bear*,  
With thrice great *Hermes*, or unsphear  
The spirit of *Plato* to unfold  
What Worlds, or what vast Regions hold 90  
The immortal mind that hath forsook  
Her mansion in this fleshly nook :  
And of those *Dæmons* that are found  
In fire, air, flood, or under ground,  
Whose power hath a true consent  
With Planet, or with Element.  
Som time let Gorgeous Tragedy  
In Scepter'd Pall com sweeping by,  
Presenting *Thebs*, or *Pelops* line,  
Or the tale of *Troy* divine. 100  
Or what (though rare) of later age,  
Ennobled hath the Buskind stage.  
But, O sad Virgin, that thy power  
Might raise *Musæus* from his bower,  
Or bid the soul of *Orpheus* sing  
Such notes as warbled to the string,

## *Il Penseroso.*

Drew Iron tears down *Pluto's* cheek,  
And made Hell grant what Love did seek.  
Or call up him that left half told  
The story of *Cambuscan* bold,  
Of *Camball*, and of *Algarsife*,  
And who had *Canace* to wife,  
That own'd the vertuous Ring and Glass,  
And of the wondrous Hors of Brass,  
On which the *Tartar* King did ride;  
And if ought els, great *Bards* beside,  
In sage and solemn tunes have sung,  
Of Turneys and of Trophies hung;  
Of Forests, and enchantments drear,  
Where more is meant then meets the ear.  
Thus night oft see me in thy pale career,  
Till civil-suited Morn appeer,  
Not trickt and frounc't as she was wont,  
With the Attick Boy to hunt,  
But Chercheft in a comly Cloud.  
While rocking Winds are Piping loud,  
Or usher'd with a shower still,  
When the gust hath blown his fill,  
Ending on the russling Leaves,  
With minute drops from off the Eaves.  
And when the Sun begins to fling  
His flaring beams, me Goddes bring  
To arched walks of twilight groves,  
And shadows brown that *Sylvan* loves  
Of Pine, or monumental Oake,  
Where the rude Ax with heaved stroke,  
Was never heard the Nymphs to daunt,  
Or fright them from their hallow'd haunt.  
There in close covert by som Brook,  
Where no profaner eye may look,  
Hide me from Day's garish eie,  
While the Bee with Honied thie,  
That at her flowry work doth sing,  
And the Waters murmuring  
With such consort as they keep,  
Entice the dewy-feather'd Sleep;  
And let som strange mysterious dream,  
Wave at his Wings in Airy stream,

110

120

130

140

## Miscellaneous Poems.

Of lively portrature display'd,  
Softly on my eye-lids laid. 150  
And as I wake, sweet musick breath  
Above, about, or underneath,  
Sent by som spirit to mortals good,  
Or th'unseen Genius of the Wood.  
But let my due feet never fail,  
To walk the studious Cloysters pale,  
And love the high embowed Roof,  
With antick Pillars massy proof,  
And storied Windows richly dight,  
Casting a dimm religious light. 160  
There let the pealing Organ blow,  
To the full voic'd Quire below,  
In Service high, and Anthems cleer,  
As may with sweetnes, through mine ear,  
Dissolve me into extasies,  
And bring all Heav'n before mine eyes.  
And may at last my weary age  
Find out the peacefull hermitage,  
The Hairy Gown and Mossy Cell,  
Where I may sit and rightly spell 170  
Of every Star that Heav'n doth shew,  
And every Herb that sips the dew ;  
Till old experience do attain  
To somthing like Prophetic strain.  
These pleasures *Melancholy* give,  
And I with thee will choose to live.

## SONNETS.

### I

O Nightingale, that on yon bloomy Spray  
Warbl'st at eeve, when all the Woods are still,  
Thou with fresh hope the Lovers heart dost fill,  
While the jolly hours lead on propitious *May*,  
Thy liquid notes that close the eye of Day,  
First heard before the shallow Cuccoo's bill  
Portend success in love ; O if *Jove's* will  
Have linkt that amorous power to thy soft lay,

## Sonnets.

Now timely sing, ere the rude Bird of Hate  
Foretell my hopeles doom in som Grove ny: 10  
As thou from yeer to yeer hast sung too late  
For my relief; yet hadst no reason why,  
Whether the Muse, or Love call thee his mate,  
Both them I serve, and of their train am I.

### II

*Donna leggiadra il cui bel nome honora  
L'herbosa val di Rheno, e il nobil varco,  
Ben è colui d'ogni valore scarco  
Qual tuo spirto gentil non innamora,  
Che dolcemente mostra sì di fuora  
De suoi atti souvi giamai parco,  
E i don', che son d'amor saette ed arco,  
La onde l' alta tua virtù s'infiora.  
Quando tu vaga parli, o lieta canti 10  
Che mover possa duro alpestre legno,  
Guardi ciascun a gli occhi, ed a gli orecchi  
L'entrata, chi di te si truova indegno;  
Gratia sola di sù gli vaglia, inanti  
Che'l disio amoroso al cuor s'invecchi.*

### III

*Qual in colle aspro, al imbrunir di sera  
L'avezza giovinetta pastorella  
Va bagnando l'herbetta strana e bella  
Che mal si spande a disusata spera  
Fuor di sua natia alma primavera,  
Cosi Amor meco insù la lingua snella  
Desta il fior novo di strania favella,  
Mentre io di te, vezzosamente altera,  
Canto, dal mio buon popol non inteso  
E'l bel Tamigi cangio col bel Arno. 10  
Amor lo volse, ed io a l'altrui peso  
Seppi ch' Amor cosa mai volse indarno.  
Deh! foss' il mio cuor lento e'l duro seno  
A chi pianta dal ciel sì buon terreno.*

# Miscellaneous Poems.

## Canzone.

*Ridonsi donne e giovani amorosi  
M' accostandosi attorno, e perche scrivi,  
Perche tu scrivi in lingua ignota e strana  
Verseggiando d'amor, e come f'osi?  
Dinne, se la tua speme sia mai vana,  
E de pensieri lo miglior t' arrivi;  
Così mi van burlando, altri rivi  
Altri lidi t' aspettan, & altre onde  
Nelle cui verdi sponde  
Spuntati ad hor, ad hor a la tua chioma  
L'immortal guiderdon d'eterni frondi  
Perche alle spalle tue soverchia soma?  
Canzon dirotti, e tu per me rispondi  
Dice mia Donna, e'l suo dir, è il mio cuore  
Questa è lingua di cui si vanta Amore.*

10

## IV

*Diodati, e te'l dirò con maraviglia,  
Quel ritroso io ch'amor spreggiar solca  
E de suoi lacci spesso mi ridca  
Gia caddi, ov'huom dabben talhor s'impiglia.  
Ne treccie d'oro, ne guancia vermiglia  
M' abbaglian sì, ma sotto nova idea  
Pellegrina bellezza che'l cuor bea,  
Portamenti alti honesti, e nelle ciglia  
Quel sereno fulgor d' amabil nero,  
Parole adorne di lingua piu d'una,  
E'l cantar che di mezzo l'hemispero  
Traviar ben può la faticosa Luna,  
E degli occhi suoi auventa sì gran fuoco  
Che l'incerar gli orecchi mi fia poco.*

10

## V

*Per certo i bei vostr'occhi Donna mia  
Esser non puo che non fian lo mio sole  
Sì mi percuoton forte, come ei suole  
Per l'arene di Libia chi s'invia,*



## Sonnets.

*Mentre un caldo vapor (ne senti pria)  
Da quel lato si spinge ove mi duole,  
Che forse amanti nelle lor parole  
Chiaman sospir ; io non so che si sia :  
Parte rinchiusa, e turbida si cela  
Scosso mi il petto, e poi n'uscendo poco  
Quivi d' attorno o s'agghiaccia, o s'ingiela ;  
Ma quanto a gli occhi giunge a trovar loco  
Tutte le notti a me suol far pioverse  
Finche mia Alba rivien colma di rose.*

10

### VI

*Giovane piano, e semplicetto amante  
Poi che fuggir me stesso in dubbio sono,  
Madonna a voi del mio cuor l'humil dono  
Farò divoto ; io certo a prove tante  
L'ebbi fedele, intrepido, costante,  
De pensieri leggiadro, accorto, e buono ;  
Quando rugge il gran mondo, e scocca il tuono,  
S'arma di se, e d' intero diamante,  
Tanto del forse, e d' invidia sicuro,  
Di timori, e speranze al popol use  
Quanto d'ingegno, e d' alto valor vago,  
E di cetra sonora, e delle muse :  
Sol troverete in tal parte men duro  
Ove amor mise l'insanabil ago.*

10

### VII

How soon hath Time the subtle thief of youth,  
Stoln on his wing my three and twentieth yeer !  
My hasting dayes flie on with full career,  
But my late spring no bud or blossom shew'th.  
Perhaps my semblance might deceive the truth,  
That I to manhood am arriv'd so near,  
And inward ripenes doth much less appear,  
That som more timely-happy spirits indu'th.  
Yet be it less or more, or soon or slow,  
It shall be still in strictest measure eev'n,  
To that same lot, however mean, or high,  
Toward which Time leads me, and the will of Heav'n ;  
All is, if I have grace to use it so,  
As ever in my great task Masters eye.

10

# Miscellaneous Poems.

## VIII

Captain or Colonel, or Knight in Arms,  
Whose chance on these defenceless dores may sease,  
If ever deed of honour did thee please,  
Guard them, and him within protect from harms,  
He can requite thee, for he knows the charms  
That call Fame on such gentle acts as these,  
And he can spread thy Name o're Lands and Seas,  
What ever clime the Suns bright circle warms.  
Lift not thy spear against the Muses Bowre,  
The great *Emathian* Conqueror bid spare  
The house of *Pindarus*, when Temple and Towre  
Went to the ground: And the repeated air  
Of sad *Electra's* Poet had the power  
To save th' *Athenian* Walls from ruine bare.

10

## IX

Lady that in the prime of earliest youth,  
Wisely hath shun'd the broad way and the green,  
And with those few art eminently seen,  
That labour up the Hill of heav'nly Truth,  
The better part with *Mary* and with *Ruth*,  
Chosen thou hast, and they that overween,  
And at thy growing vertues fret their spleen,  
No anger find in thee, but pity and ruth.  
Thy care is fixt and zealously attends  
To fill thy odorous Lamp with deeds of light,  
And Hope that reaps not shame. Therefore be sure  
Thou, when the Bridegroom with his feastfull friends  
Passes to bliss at the mid hour of night,  
Hast gain'd thy entrance, Virgin wise and pure.

10

## X

Daughter to that good Earl, once President  
Of *Englands* Counsel, and her Treasury,  
Who liv'd in both, unstain'd with gold or fee,  
And left them both, more in himself content,  
Till the sad breaking of that Parlament

VIII. Camb. autograph supplies title, *When the assault was intended to the city* 3 If deed of honour did thee ever please, 1673.

IX. 5 with *Ruth* the *Ruth* 1645.

X. Camb. autograph supplies title, *To the Lady Margaret Ley*.

## Arcades.

Broke him, as that dishonest victory  
At *Chæronéa*, fatal to liberty  
Kil'd with report that Old man eloquent,  
Though later born, then to have known the dayes :o  
Wherin your Father flourisht, yet by you  
Madam, me thinks I see him living yet ;  
So well your words his noble vertues praise,  
That all both judge you to relate them true,  
And to possess them, Honour'd *Margaret*.

## Arcades.

Part of an entertainment presented to the Countess Dowager of *Darby*  
at *Harefield*, by som Noble persons of her Family, who appear  
on the Scene in pastoral habit, moving toward the  
seat of State with this Song.

### I. SONG.

LOOK Nymphs, and Shepherds look,  
What sudden blaze of majesty  
Is that which we from hence descry  
Too divine to be mistook :  
This this is she  
To whom our vows and wishes bend,  
Heer our solemn search hath end.

*Fame* that her high worth to raise,  
Seem'd erst so lavish and profuse,  
We may justly now accuse 10  
Of detraction from her praise,  
Less then half we find exprest,  
*Envy* bid conceal the rest.

Mark what radiant state she spreads,  
In circle round her shining throne,  
Shooting her beams like silver threds,  
This this is she alone,  
Sitting like a Goddess bright,  
In the center of her light.

## Miscellaneous Poems.

Might she the wise *Latona* be,  
Or the towred *Cybele*,  
Mother of a hunderd gods;  
*Juno* dare's not give her odds;  
Who had thought this clime had held  
A deity so unparale'd?

20

As they com forward, the genius of the Wood appears, and  
turning toward them, speaks.

*Gen.* Stay gentle Swains, for though in this disguise,  
I see bright honour sparkle through your eyes,  
Of famous *Arcady* ye are, and sprung  
Of that renowned flood, so often sung,  
Divine *Alpheus*, who by secret sluse,  
Stole under Seas to meet his *Arethuse*;  
And ye the breathing Roses of the Wood,  
Fair silver-buskind Nymphs as great and good,  
I know this quest of yours, and free intent  
Was all in honour and devotion ment  
To the great Mistres of yon princely shrine,  
Whom with low reverence I adore as mine,  
And with all helpful service will comply  
To further this nights glad solemnity;  
And lead ye where ye may more neer behold  
What shallow-searching *Fame* hath left untold;  
Which I full oft amidst these shades alone  
Have sate to wonder at, and gaze upon:  
For know by lot from *Jove* I am the powr  
Of this fair Wood, and live in Oak'n bowr,  
To nurse the Saplings tall, and curl the grove  
With Ringlets quaint, and wanton windings wove.  
And all my Plants I save from nightly ill,  
Of noisom winds, and blasting vapours chill.  
And from the Boughs brush off the evil dew,  
And heal the harms of thwarting thunder blew,  
Or what the cross dire-looking Planet smites,  
Or hurtfull Worm with canker'd venom bites.  
When Eev'ning gray doth rise, I fetch my round  
Over the mount, and all this hallow'd ground,  
And early ere the odorous breath of morn  
Awakes the slumbring leaves, or tasseld horn

30

40

50

## Arcades.

Shakes the high thicket, haste I all about,  
Number my ranks, and visit every sprout  
With puissant words, and murmurs made to bless, 60  
But els in deep of night when drowsines  
Hath lockt up mortal sense, then listen I  
To the celestial *Sirens* harmony,  
That sit upon the nine enfolded Sphears,  
And sing to those that hold the vital shears,  
And turn the Adamantine spindle round,  
On which the fate of gods and men is wound.  
Such sweet compulsion doth in musick ly,  
To lull the daughters of *Necessity*,  
And keep unsteddy Nature to her law, 70  
And the low world in measur'd motion draw  
After the heavenly tune, which none can hear  
Of human mould with grosse unpurged ear;  
And yet such musick worthiest were to blaze  
The peerles height of her immortal praise,  
Whose lustre leads us, and for her most fit,  
If my inferior hand or voice could hit  
Inimitable sounds, yet as we go,  
What ere the skill of lesser gods can show,  
I will assay, her worth to celebrate, 80  
And so attend ye toward her glittering state;  
Where ye may all that are of noble stemm  
Approach, and kiss her sacred vestures hemm.

### 2. SONG.

O're the smooth enameld green  
Where no print of step hath been,  
Follow me as I sing,  
And touch the warbled string.  
Under the shady roof  
Of branching Elm Star-proof,  
Follow me, 90  
I will bring you where she sits  
Clad in splendor as befits  
Her deity.  
Such a rural Queen  
All *Arcadia* hath not seen.

## Miscellaneous Poems.

### 3. SONG.

Nymphs and Shepherds dance no more  
By sandy *Ladons* Lillied banks.  
On old *Lycæus* or *Cyllene* hoar,  
Trip no more in twilight ranks,  
Though *Erymanth* your loss deplore, 100  
A better soyl shall give ye thanks.  
From the stony *Mænalus*,  
Bring your Flocks, and live with us,  
Here ye shall have greater grace,  
To serve the Lady of this place.  
Though *Syrinx* your *Pans* Mistres were,  
Yet *Syrinx* well might wait on her.  
Such a rural Queen  
All *Arcadia* hath not seen.

JUSTA  
EDOVARDO KING  
naufrago,  
ab  
Amicis mœrentibus,  
amoris  
&  
μυρίας χάριν.

---

---

*Si rectè calculum ponas, ubique naufragium est.*

Pet. Arb.

---

---

CANTABRIGIÆ:

Apud Thomam Buck, & Rogerum Daniel, celeberrimæ  
Academiæ typographos. 1638.

# Miscellaneous Poems.

## *Lycidas.*

In this Monody the Author bewails a learned Friend, unfortunately drown'd in his Passage from *Chester* on the *Irish Seas*, 1637. And by occasion foretels the ruine of our corrupted Clergy then in their height.

YET once more, O ye Laurels, and once more  
Ye Myrtles brown, with Ivy never-sear,  
I com to pluck your Berries harsh and crude,  
And with forc'd fingers rude,  
Shatter your leaves before the mellowing year.  
Bitter constraint, and sad occasion dear,  
Compels me to disturb your season due:  
For *Lycidas* is dead, dead ere his prime  
Young *Lycidas*, and hath not left his peer:  
Who would not sing for *Lycidas*? he knew  
Himself to sing, and build the lofty rhyme.  
He must not flote upon his watry bear  
Unwept, and welter to the parching wind,  
Without the meed of som melodious tear.

10

Begin then, Sisters of the sacred well,  
That from beneath the seat of *Jove* doth spring,  
Begin, and somewhat loudly sweep the string.  
Hence with denial vain, and coy excuse,  
So may som gentle Muse  
With lucky words favour my destin'd Urn,  
And as he passes turn,  
And bid fair peace be to my sable shroud.  
For we were nurst upon the self-same hill,  
Fed the same flock, by fountain, shade, and rill.

20

Together both, ere the high Lawns appear'd  
Under the opening eye-lids of the morn,  
We drove a field, and both together heard  
What time the Gray-fly winds her sultry horn,  
Batt'ning our flocks with the fresh dews of night,  
Oft till the Star that rose, at Ev'ning, bright  
Toward Heav'n's descent had slop'd his westering wheel.  
Mean while the Rural ditties were not mute,  
Temper'd to th'Oaten Flute;  
Rough *Satyrs* danc'd, and *Fauns* with clov'n heel,

30



## *Lycidas.*

From the glad sound would not be absent long,  
And old *Damætas* lov'd to hear our song.

But O the heavy change, now thou art gon,  
Now thou art gon, and never must return!  
Thee Shepherd, thee the Woods, and desert Caves,  
With wilde Thyme and the gadding Vine o'regrown, 40  
And all their echoes mourn.

The Willows, and the Hazle Copses green,  
Shall now no more be seen,  
Fanning their joyous Leaves to thy soft layes.  
As killing as the Canker to the Rose,  
Or Taint-worm to the weanling Herds that graze,  
Or Frost to Flowers, that their gay wardrop wear,  
When first the White thorn blows;  
Such, *Lycidas*, thy loss to Shepherds ear.

Where were ye Nymphs when the remorseless deep  
Clos'd o're the head of your lov'd *Lycidas*? 51

For neither were ye playing on the steep,  
Where your old *Bards*, the famous *Druids* ly,  
Nor on the shaggy top of *Mona* high,  
Nor yet where *Deva* spreads her wisard stream:  
Ay me, I fondly dream!

Had ye bin there—for what could that have don?  
What could the Muse her self that *Orpheus* bore,  
The Muse her self, for her enchanting son  
Whom Universal nature did lament, 60  
When by the rout that made the hideous roar,  
His goary visage down the stream was sent,  
Down the swift *Hebrus* to the *Lesbian* shore.

Alas! What boots it with uncessant care  
To tend the homely slighted Shepherds trade,  
And strictly meditate the thankles Muse,  
Were it not better don as others use,  
To sport with *Amaryllis* in the shade,  
Or with the tangles of *Neæra's* hair?  
*Fame* is the spur that the clear spirit doth raise 70  
(That last infirmity of Noble mind)

To scorn delights, and live laborious dayes;  
But the fair Guerdon when we hope to find,  
And think to burst out into sudden blaze,  
Comes the blind *Fury* with th'abhorred shears,  
And slits the thin spun life. But not the praise,

## Miscellaneous Poems.

*Phœbus* repli'd, and touch'd my trembling ears ;  
*Fame* is no plant that grows on mortal soil,  
Nor in the glistering foil  
Set off to th'world, nor in broad rumour lies, 80  
But lives and spreads aloft by those pure eyes,  
And perferet witnes of all judging *Jove* ;  
As he pronounces lastly on each deed,  
Of so much fame in Heav'n expect thy meed.

O Fountain *Arethuse*, and thou honour'd fload,  
Smooth-sliding *Mincius*, crown'd with vocall reeds,  
That strain I heard was of a higher mood :  
But now my Oate proceeds,  
And listens to the Herald of the Sea 90  
That came in *Neptune's* plea,  
He ask'd the Waves, and ask'd the Fellon winds,  
What hard mishap hath doom'd this gentle swain?  
And question'd every gust of rugged wings  
That blows from off each beaked Promontory,  
They knew not of his story,  
And sage *Hippotades* their answer brings,  
That not a blast was from his dungeon stray'd,  
The Ayr was calm, and on the level brine,  
Sleek *Panope* with all her sisters play'd.  
It was that fatall and perfidious Bark 100  
Built in th'eclipse, and rigg'd with curses dark,  
That sunk so low that sacred head of thine.

Next *Camus*, reverend Sire, went footing slow,  
His Mantle hairy, and his Bonnet sedge,  
Inwrought with figures dim, and on the edge  
Like to that sanguine flower inscrib'd with woe.  
Ah ; Who hath reft (quoth he) my dearest pledge?  
Last came, and last did go,  
The Pilot of the *Galilean* lake,  
Two massy Keyes he bore of metals twain, 110  
(The Golden opes, the Iron shuts amain)  
He shook his Miter'd locks, and stern bespake,  
How well could I have spar'd for thee, young swain,  
Anow of such as for their bellies sake,  
Creep and intrude, and climb into the fold?  
Of other care they little reck'ning make,  
Then how to scramble at the shearers feast,  
And shove away the worthy bidden guest.

## *Lycidas.*

Blind mouths! that scarce themselves know how to hold  
A Sheep-hook, or have learn'd ought els the least 120  
That to the faithfull Herdmans art belongs!

What reck's it them? What need they? They are sped;  
And when they list, their lean and flashy songs  
Grate on their scrannel Pipes of wretched straw,  
The hungry Sheep look up, and are not fed,  
But swoln with wind, and the rank mist they draw,  
Rot inwardly, and foul contagion spread:  
Besides what the grim Woolf with privy paw  
Daily devours apace, and nothing sed,  
But that two-handed engine at the door, 130  
Stands ready to smite once, and smite no more.

Return *Alpheus*, the dread voice is past,  
That shrunk thy streams; Return *Sicilian* Muse,  
And call the Vales, and bid them hither cast  
Their Bels, and Flourets of a thousand hues.  
Ye valleys low where the milde whispers use,  
Of shades and wanton winds, and gushing brooks,  
On whose fresh lap the swart Star sparely looks,  
Throw hither all your quaint enameld eyes,  
That on the green terf suck the honied showres, 140  
And purple all the ground with vernal flowres.  
Bring the rathe Primrose that forsaken dies.  
The tufted Crow-toe, and pale Gessamine,  
The white Pink, and the Pansie freakt with jeat,  
The glowing Violet.

The Musk-rose, and the well attir'd Woodbine.  
With Cowslips wan that hang the pensive hed,  
And every flower that sad embroidery wears:  
Bid *Amaranthus* all his beauty shed,  
And Daffadillies fill their cups with tears, 150  
To strew the Laureat Herse where *Lycid* lies.  
For so to interpose a little ease,  
Let our frail thoughts dally with false surmise.  
Ay me! Whilst thee the shores, and sounding Seas  
Wash far away, where ere thy bones are hurld,  
Whether beyond the stormy *Hebrides*,  
Where thou perhaps under the whelming tide  
Visit'st the bottom of the monstrous world;

## *Lycidas.*

Or whether thou to our moist vows deny'd,  
Sleep'st by the fable of *Bellerus* old, 160  
Where the great vision of the guarded Mount  
Looks toward *Namancos* and *Bayona's* hold;  
Look homeward Angel now, and melt with ruth.  
And, O ye *Dolphins*, waft the haples youth.

Weep no more, woful Shepherds weep no more,  
For *Lycidas* your sorrow is not dead,  
Sunk though he be beneath the watry floor,  
So sinks the day-star in the Ocean bed,  
And yet anon repairs his drooping head,  
And tricks his beams, and with new spangled Ore, 170  
Flames in the forehead of the morning sky:  
So *Lycidas* sunk low, but mounted high,  
Through the dear might of him that walk'd the waves  
Where other groves, and other streams along,  
With *Nectar* pure his oozy Lock's he laves,  
And hears the unexpressive nuptiall Song,  
In the blest Kingdoms meek of joy and love.  
There entertain him all the Saints above,  
In solemn troops, and sweet Societies 180  
That sing, and singing in their glory move,  
And wipe the tears for ever from his eyes.  
Now *Lycidas* the Shepherds weep no more;  
Hence forth thou art the Genius of the shore,  
In thy large recompense, and shalt be good  
To all that wander in that perilous flood.

Thus sang the uncouth Swain to th'Okes and rills,  
While the still morn went out with Sandals gray,  
He touch'd the tender stops of various Quills,  
With eager thought warbling his *Dorick* lay:  
And now the Sun had stretch'd out all the hills, 190  
And now was dropt into the Western bay;  
At last he rose, and twitch'd his Mantle blew:  
To morrow to fresh Woods, and Pastures new.

# A M A S K E

PRESENTED

At Ludlow Castle,

1 6 3 4 :

*On Michaelmasse night, before the*

RIGHT HONORABLE,

JOHN Earle of Bridgewater, Vicount BRACKLY,  
Lord President of WALES, And one of  
His MAJESTIES most honorable  
Privie Counsell.

---

*Eheu quid volui misero mihi ! floribus austrum  
Perditus* —————

---

L O N D O N

Printed for Hymphrey ROBINSON,  
at the signe of the *Three Pidgeons* in  
*Pauls Church-yard.* 1 6 3 7.



<sup>1</sup> To the Right Honourable, John Lord Vicount  
Bracly, Son and Heir apparent to the  
Earl of *Bridgewater*, &c.

MY LORD,

*This Poem, which receiv'd its first occasion of Birth from your Self, and others of your Noble Family, and much honour from your own Person in the performance, now returns again to make a finall Dedication of it self to you. Although not openly acknowledg'd by the Author, yet it is a legitimate off-spring, so lovely, and so much desired, that the often Copying of it hath tir'd my Pen to give my severall friends satisfaction, and brought me to a necessity of producing it to the publike view; and now to offer it up in all rightfull devotion to those fair Hopes, and rare Endowments of your much-promising Youth, which give a full assurance, to all that know you, of a future excellence. Live sweet Lord to be the honour of your Name, and receive this as your own, from the hands of him, who hath by many favours been long oblig'd to your most honour'd Parents, and as in this representation your attendant Thyrsis, so now in all reall expression*

*Your faithfull, and most  
humble Servant*

H. LAWES.

<sup>1</sup> The Copy of a Letter writt'n by Sir HENRY  
WOOTTON, to the Author, upon the  
following Poem.

*From the Colledge, this 13. of April, 1638.*

SIR,

It was a special favour, when you lately bestowed upon me here, the first taste of your acquaintance, though no longer then to make me know that I wanted more time to value it, and

<sup>1</sup> Omitted in 1673.

## Miscellaneous Poems.

to enjoy it rightly ; and in truth, if I could then have imagined your farther stay in these parts, which I understood afterwards by Mr. *H.* I would have been bold in our vulgar phrase to mend my draught (for you left me with an extreme thirst) and to have begged your conversation again, joyntly with your said learned Friend, at a poor meal or two, that we might have banded together som good Authors of the antient time : Among which, I observed you to have been familiar.

Since your going, you have charg'd me with new Obligations, both for a very kinde Letter from you dated the sixth of this Month, and for a dainty peece of entertainment which came therewith. Wherin I should much commend the Tragical part, if the Lyrical did not ravish me with a certain Dorique delicacy in your Songs and Odes, wherunto I must plainly confess to have seen yet nothing parallel in our Language : *Ipsa mollities*. But I must not omit to tell you, that I now onely owe you thanks for intimating unto me (how modestly soever) the true Artificer. For the work it self I had view'd som good while before, with singular delight, having receiv'd it from our common Friend Mr. *R.* in the very close of the late *R*'s Poems, Printed at *Oxford*, wherunto it was added (as I now suppose) that the Accessory might help out the Principal, according to the Art of *Stationers*, and to leave the Reader *Con la bocca dolce*.

Now Sir, concerning your travels, wherin I may chalenge a little more priviledge of Discours with you ; I suppose you will not blanch *Paris* in your way ; therefore I have been bold to trouble you with a few lines to Mr. *M. B.* whom you shall easily find attending the young Lord *S.* as his Governour, and you may surely receive from him good directions for the shaping of your farther journey into *Italy*, where he did reside by my choice som time for the King, after mine own recess from *Venice*.

I should think that your best Line will be thorow the whole length of *France* to *Marseilles*, and thence by Sea to *Genoa*, whence the passage into *Tuscany* is as Diurnal as a *Gravesend* Barge : I hasten as you do to *Florence*, or *Siena*, the rather to tell you a short story from the interest you have given me in your safety.

At *Siena* I was tabled in the House of one *Alberto Scipioni*, an old *Roman* Courtier in dangerous times, having bin Steward to the *Duca di Pagliano*, who with all his Family were strangled, save this onely man that escap'd by foresight of the Tempest : With him I had often much chat of those affairs ; Into which he



## A Mask.

took pleasure to look back from his Native Harbour ; and at my departure toward *Rome* (which had been the center of his experience) I had wonn confidence enough to beg his advice, how I might carry my self securely there, without offence of others, or of mine own conscience. *Signor Arrigo mio* (sayes he) *I pensieri stretti, & il viso sciolto* will go safely over the whole World : Of which *Delphian* Oracle (for so I have found it) your judgement doth need no commentary ; and therfore (Sir) I will commit you with it to the best of all securities, Gods dear love, remaining

Your Friend as much at command

as any of longer date,

*Henry Wootton.*

### Postscript.

SIR, *I have expressly sent this my Foot-boy to prevent your departure without som acknowledgement from me of the receipt of your obliging Letter, having myself through som busines, I know not how, neglected the ordinary conveyance. In any part where I shall understand you fixed, I shall be glad, and diligent to entertain you with Home-Novelties ; even for som fomentation of our friendship, too soon interrupted in the Cradle.*

---

### The Persons.

The attendant Spirit afterwards in the habit of *Thyrsis*.

*Comus* with his crew.

The Lady.

1. Brother.

2. Brother.

*Sabrina* the Nymph.

*The cheif persons which presented, were*

The Lord *Brady*,

Mr. *Thomas Egerton* his Brother,

The Lady *Alice Egerton*.

A  
MASK

PRESENTED

At LUDLOW-Castle,

1634. &c.

The first Scene discovers a wilde Wood.

*The attendant Spirit descends or enters.*

BEFORE the starry threshold of *Joves* Court  
My mansion is, where those immortal shapes  
Of bright æreal Spirits live insphear'd  
In Regions milde of calm and serene Ayr,  
Above the smoak and stirr of this dim spot,  
Which men call Earth, and with low-thoughted care  
Confin'd, and pester'd in this pin-fold here,  
Strive to keep up a frail, and Feaverish being  
Unmindfull of the crown that Vertue gives  
After this mortal change, to her true Servants  
Amongst the enthron'd gods on Sainted seats.  
Yet som there be that by due steps aspire  
To lay their just hands on that Golden Key  
That ope's the Palace of Eternity:  
To such my errand is, and but for such,  
I would not soil these pure Ambrosial weeds,  
With the rank vapours of this Sin-worn mould.

10

But to my task. *Neptune* besides the sway  
Of every salt Flood, and each ebbing Stream,  
Took in by lot 'twixt high, and neather *Jove*,  
Imperial rule of all the Sea-girt Iles  
That like to rich, and various gemms inlay  
The unadorned boosom of the Deep,  
Which he to grace his tributary gods

20

## Miscellaneous Poems.

By course commits to severall government,  
And gives them leave to wear their Saphire crowns,  
And weild their little tridents, but this Ile  
The greatest, and the best of all the main  
He quarters to his blu-hair'd deities,  
And all this tract that fronts the falling Sun 30  
A noble Peer of mickle trust, and power  
Has in his charge, with temper'd awe to guide  
An old, and haughty Nation proud in Arms:  
Where his fair off-spring nurs't in Princely lore,  
Are coming to attend their Fathers state,  
And new-entrusted Scepter, but their way  
Lies through the perplex't paths of this drear Wood,  
The nodding horror of whose shady brows  
Threats the forlorn and wandring Passinger.  
And here their tender age might suffer perill, 40  
But that by quick command from Soveran *Jove*  
I was dispatcht for their defence, and guard;  
And listen why, for I will tell ye now  
What never yet was heard in Tale or Song  
From old, or modern Bard in Hall, or Bowr.

*Bacchus* that first from out the purple Grape,  
Crush't the sweet poyson of mis-used Wine  
After the *Tuscan* Mariners transform'd  
Coasting the *Tyrrhene* shore, as the winds listed,  
On *Circes* Iland fell (who knows not *Circe* 50  
The daughter of the Sun? Whose charmed Cup  
Whoever tasted, lost his upright shape,  
And downward fell into a groveling Swine)  
This Nymph that gaz'd upon his clustring locks,  
With Ivy berries wreath'd, and his blithe youth,  
Had by him, ere he parted thence, a Son  
Much like his Father, but his Mother more,  
Whom therfore she brought up and *Comus* nam'd,  
Who ripe, and frolick of his full grown age,  
Roaving the *Celtick*, and *Iberian* fields, 60  
At last betakes him to this ominous Wood,  
And in thick shelter of black shades imbowr'd,  
Excels his Mother at her mighty Art,  
Offering to every weary Travailer,

## *A Mask.*

His orient liquor in a Crystal Glasse,  
To quench the drouth of *Phæbus*, which as they taste  
(For most do taste through fond intemperate thirst)  
Soon as the Potion works, their human count'nance,  
'Th' express resemblance of the gods, is chang'd  
Into som brutish form of Woolf, or Bear, 70  
Or Ounce, or Tiger, Hog, or bearded Goat,  
All other parts remaining as they were,  
And they, so perfect is their misery,  
Not once perceive their foul disfigurement,  
But boast themselves more comely then before  
And all their friends, and native home forget  
'To roule with pleasure in a sensual stie.  
'Therefore when any favour'd of high *Jove*,  
Chances to pass through this adventrous glade,  
Swift as the Sparkle of a glancing Star, 80  
I shoot from Heav'n to give him safe convoy,  
As now I do: But first I must put off  
These my skie robes spun out of *Iris* Wooff,  
And take the Weeds and likenes of a Swain,  
That to the service of this house belongs,  
Who with his soft Pipe, and smooth-dittied Song,  
Well knows to still the wilde winds when they roar,  
And hush the waving Woods, nor of lesse faith,  
And in this office of his Mountain watch,  
Likeliest, and neerest to the present ayd 90  
Of this occasion. But I hear the tread  
Of hatefull steps, I must be viewles now.

*Comus enters with a Charming Rod in one hand, his Glass in the other, with him a rout of Monsters, headed like sundry sorts of wilde Beasts, but otherwise like Men and Women, their Apparel glistring, they com in making a riotous and unruly noise, with Torches in their hands.*

*Comus.* The Star that bids the Shepherd fold,  
Now the top of Heav'n doth hold,  
And the gilded Car of Day,  
His glowing Axle doth allay  
In the steep *Atlantick* stream,  
And the slope Sun his upward beam  
Shoots against the dusky Pole,  
Pacing toward the other gole 100  
Of his Chamber in the East.  
Mean while welcom Joy, and Feast,

## Miscellaneous Poems.

Midnight shout, and revelry,  
Tipsie dance, and Jollity.  
Braid your Locks with rosie Twine  
Dropping odours, dropping Wine.  
Rigor now is gon to bed,  
And Advice with scrupulous head,  
Strict Age, and sowre Severity,  
With their grave Saws in slumber ly. 110  
We that are of purer fire  
Imitate the Starry Quire,  
Who in their nightly watchfull Sphears,  
Lead in swift round the Months and Years.  
The Sounds, and Seas with all their finny drove  
Now to the Moon in wavering Morrice move,  
And on the Tawny Sands and Shelves,  
Trip the pert Fairies and the dapper Elves ;  
By dimpled Brook, and Fountain brim,  
The Wood-Nymphs deckt with Daisies trim, 120  
Their merry wakes and pastimes keep :  
What hath night to do with sleep ?  
Night hath better sweets to prove,  
*Venus* now wakes, and wak'ns Love.  
Com let us our rights begin,  
'Tis onely day-light that makes Sin  
Which these dun shades will ne're report.  
Hail Goddess of Nocturnal sport  
Dark vaild *Cotytto*, t' whom the secret flame  
Of mid-night Torchets burns ; mysterious Dame 130  
That ne're art call'd, but when the Dragon woom  
Of Stygian darknes spets her thickest gloom,  
And makes one blot of all the ayre,  
Stay thy cloudy Ebon chair,  
Wherin thou rid'st with *Hecat'*, and befriend  
Us thy vow'd Priests, til utmost end  
Of all thy dues be done, and none left out,  
Ere the blabbing Eastern scout,  
The nice Morn on th' *Indian* steep  
From her cabin'd loop hole peep, 140  
And to the tel-tale Sun discry  
Our conceal'd Solemnity.  
Com, knit hands, and beat the ground,  
In a light fantastick round.

# A Mask.

## The Measure.

Break off, break off, I feel the different pace,  
Of som chast footing neer about this ground.  
Run to your shrouds, within these Brakes and Trees,  
Our number may affright: Som Virgin sure  
(For so I can distinguish by mine Art)  
Benighted in these Woods. Now to my charms, 150  
And to my wily trains, I shall e're long  
Be well stock't with as fair a herd as graz'd  
About my Mother *Circe*. Thus I hurl  
My dazling Spells into the spungy ayr,  
Of power to cheat the eye with blear illusion,  
And give it false presentments, lest the place  
And my quaint habits breed astonishment,  
And put the Damsel to suspicious flight,  
Which must not be, for that's against my course;  
I under fair pretence of friendly ends, 160  
And well plac't words of glozing courtesie  
Baited with reasons not unplaussible  
Wind me into the easie-hearted man,  
And hugg him into snares. When once her eye  
Hath met the vertue of this Magick dust,  
I shall appear som harmles Villager  
Whom thrift keeps up about his Country gear,  
But here she comes, I fairly step aside,  
And hearken, if I may, her busines here.

## The Lady enters.

This way the noise was, if mine ear be true, 170  
My best guide now, me thought it was the sound  
Of Riot, and ill manag'd Merriment,  
Such as the jocond Flute, or gamesom Pipe  
Stirs up among the loose unleter'd Hinds,  
When for their teeming Flocks, and granges full  
In wanton dance they praise the bounteous *Pan*,  
And thank the gods amiss. I should be loath  
To meet the rudenesse, and swill'd insolence  
Of such late Wassailers; yet O where els  
Shall I inform my unacquainted feet 180

167 omitted 1673

168, 9 order inverted 1673

169 If I may, her busines here] If I may her business hear 1673 Errata.

## Miscellaneous Poems.

In the blind mazes of this tangl'd Wood?  
My Brothers when they saw me wearied out  
With this long way, resolving here to lodge  
Under the spreading favour of these Pines,  
Stept as they se'd to the next Thicket side  
To bring me Berries, or such cooling fruit  
As the kind hospitable Woods provide.  
They left me then, when the gray-hooded Eev'n  
Like a sad Votarist in Palmers weed  
Rose from the hindmost wheels of *Phæbus* wain. 190  
But where they are, and why they came not back,  
Is now the labour of my thoughts, 'tis likeliest  
They had ingag'd their wandring steps too far,  
And envious darknes, e're they could return,  
Had stole them from me, els O theevish Night  
Why shouldst thou, but for som felonious end,  
In thy dark lantern thus close up the Stars,  
That nature hung in Heav'n, and fill'd their Lamps  
With everlasting oil, to give due light  
To the misled and lonely Travailer? 200  
This is the place, as well as I may guess,  
Whence eev'n now the tumult of loud Mirth  
Was rife, and perfet in my list'ning ear,  
Yet nought but single darknes do I find.  
What might this be? A thousand fantasies  
Begin to throng into my memory  
Of calling shapes, and beckning shadows dire,  
And airy tongues, that syllable mens names  
On Sands, and Shoars, and desert Wildernesses.  
These thoughts may startle well, but not astound 210  
The vertuous mind, that ever walks attended  
By a strong siding champion Conscience.—  
O welcom pure-ey'd Faith, white-handed Hope,  
Thou hovering Angel girt with golden wings,  
And thou unblemish't form of Chastity,  
I see ye visibly, and now beleieve  
That he, the Supreme good, t' whom all things ill  
Are but as slavish officers of vengeance,  
Would send a glistening Guardian if need were  
To keep my life and honour unassail'd. 220  
Was I deceiv'd, or did a sable cloud  
Turn forth her silver lining on the night?



## A Mask.

I did not err, there does a sable cloud  
Turn forth her silver lining on the night,  
And casts a gleam over this tufted Grove.  
I cannot hallow to my Brothers, but  
Such noise as I can make to be heard farthest  
Ile venter, for my new enliv'nd spirits  
Prompt me ; and they perhaps are not far off.

### SONG.

*Sweet Echo, sweetest Nymph that liv'st unscen* 230  
*Within thy airy shell*  
*By slow Meander's margent green,*  
*And in the violet imbroider'd vale*  
*Where the love-lorn Nightingale*  
*Nightly to thee her sad Song mourneth well.*  
*Canst thou not tell me of a gentle Pair*  
*That likest thy Narcissus are ?*  
*O if thou have*  
*Hid them in som flowry Cave,*  
*Tell me but where* 240  
*Sweet Queen of Parly, Daughter of the Sphear,*  
*So maist thou be translated to the skies,*  
*And give resounding grace to all Heav'n's Harmonies.*

*Com.* Can any mortal mixture of Earths mould  
Breath such Divine enchanting ravishment ?  
Sure somthing holy lodges in that brest,  
And with these raptures moves the vocal air  
To testifie his hidd'n residence ;  
How sweetly did they float upon the wings  
Of silence, through the empty-vaulted night 250  
At every fall smoothing the Raven doune  
Of darknes till it smil'd : I have oft heard  
My mother *Circe* with the Sirens three,  
Amid'st the flowry-kirtl'd *Naiades*  
Culling their Potent hearbs, and balefull drugs,  
Who as they sung, would take the prison'd soul,  
And lap it in *Elysium*, *Scylla* wept,  
And chid her barking waves into attention,  
And fell *Charybdis* murmur'd soft applause :  
Yet they in pleasing slumber lull'd the sense,  
And in sweet madnes rob'd it of it self,

260

## Miscellaneous Poems.

But such a sacred, and home-felt delight,  
Such sober certainty of waking bliss  
I never heard till now. Ile speak to her  
And she shall be my Queen. Hail forren wonder  
Whom certain these rough shades did never breed  
Unlesse the Goddess that in rurall shrine  
Dwell'st here with *Pan*, or *Silvan*, by blest Song  
Forbidding every bleak unkindly Fog  
To touch the prosperous growth of this tall Wood. 270

*La.* Nay gentle Shepherd ill is lost that praise  
That is addrest to unattending Ears,  
Not any boast of skill, but extreme shift  
How to regain my sever'd company  
Compell'd me to awake the courteous Echo  
To give me answer from her mossie Couch.

*Co.* What chance good Lady hath bereft you thus?

*La.* Dim darknes, and this leavy Labyrinth.

*Co.* Could that divide you from neer-ushering guides?

*La.* They left me weary on a grassie terf. 280

*Co.* By falshood, or discourtesie, or why?

*La.* To seek i'th vally som cool friendly Spring.

*Co.* And left your fair side all unguarded Lady?

*La.* They were but twain, and purpos'd quick return.

*Co.* Perhaps fore-stalling night prevented them.

*La.* How easie my misfortune is to hit!

*Co.* Imports their loss, beside the present need?

*La.* No less then if I should my brothers loose.

*Co.* Were they of manly prime, or youthful bloom?

*La.* As smooth as *Hebe's* their unrazor'd lips. 290

*Co.* Two such I saw, what time the labour'd Oxe  
In his loose traces from the furrow came,  
And the swink't hedger at his Supper sate;  
I saw them under a green mantling vine  
That crawls along the side of yon small hill,  
Plucking ripe clusters from the tender shoots,  
Their port was more then human, as they stood;  
I took it for a faëry vision  
Of som gay creatures of the element  
That in the colours of the Rainbow live  
And play i'th plighted clouds. I was aw-strook,  
And as I past, I worshipt: if those you seek  
It were a journey like the path to Heav'n,

300

## *A Mask.*

To help you find them. *La.* Gentle villager  
What readiest way would bring me to that place?

*Co.* Due west it rises from this shrubby point.

*La.* To find out that, good Shepherd, I suppose,  
In such a scant allowance of Star-light,  
Would overtask the best Land-Pilots art,  
Without the sure guess of well-practiz'd feet, 310

*Co.* I know each lane, and every alley green  
Dingle, or bushy dell of this wilde Wood,  
And every bosky bourn from side to side  
My daily walks and ancient neighbourhood,  
And if your stray attendance be yet lodg'd,  
Or shroud within these limits, I shall know  
Ere morrow wake, or the low roosted lark  
From her thatch't pallat rowse, if otherwise  
I can conduct you Lady to a low

But loyal cottage, where you may be safe 320  
Till further quest'. *La.* Shepherd I take thy word,  
And trust thy honest offer'd courtesie,  
Which oft is sooner found in lowly sheds  
With smoaky rafters, then in tapstry Halls  
And Courts of Princes, where it first was nam'd,  
And yet is most pretended: In a place  
Less warranted then this, or less secure  
I cannot be, that I should fear to change it.  
Eie me blest Providence, and square my triall  
To my proportion'd strength. Shepherd lead on.— 330

### *The Two Brothers.*

*Eld. Bro.* Unmuffle ye faint stars, and thou fair Moon  
That wontst to love the travailers benizon,  
Stoop thy pale visage through an amber cloud,  
And disinherit *Chaos*, that raigns here  
In double night of darknes, and of shades;  
Or if your influence be quite damm'd up  
With black usurping mists, som gentle taper  
Though a rush Candle from the wicker hole  
Of som clay habitation visit us  
With thy long levell'd rule of streaming light, 340  
And thou shalt be our star of *Arcady*,  
Or *Tyrian* Cynosure. 2. *Bro.* Or if our eyes  
Be barr'd that happines, might we but hear

## Miscellaneous Poems.

The folded flocks pen'd in their watled cotes,  
Or sound of pastoral reed with oaten stops,  
Or whistle from the Lodge, or village cock  
Count the night watches to his feathery Dames,  
'Twould be som solace yet, som little chearing  
In this close dungeon of innumerable bowes.  
But O that haples virgin our lost sister  
Where may she wander now, whether betake her  
From the chill dew, amongst rude burrs and thistles?  
Perhaps som cold bank is her boulder now  
Or 'gainst the rugged bark of som broad Elm  
Leans her unpillow'd head fraught with sad fears.  
What if in wild amazement, and affright,  
Or while we speak within the direfull grasp  
Of Savage hunger, or of Savage heat?

350

*Eld. Bro.* Peace brother, be not over-exquisite  
To cast the fashion of uncertain evils ;  
For grant they be so, while they rest unknown,  
What need a man forestall his date of grief,  
And run to meet what he would most avoid?  
Or if they be but false alarms of Fear,  
How bitter is such self-delusion?  
I do not think my sister so to seek,  
Or so unprincip'l'd in vertues book,  
And the sweet peace that goodnes boosoms ever,  
As that the single want of light and noise  
(Not being in danger, as I trust she is not)  
Could stir the constant mood of her calm thoughts,  
And put them into mis-becoming plight.  
Vertue could see to do what vertue would  
By her own radiant light, though Sun and Moon  
Were in the flat Sea sunk. And Wisdoms self  
Oft seeks to sweet retired Solitude,  
Where with her best nurse Contemplation  
She plumes her feathers, and lets grow her wings  
That in the various bussle of resort  
Were all to ruffl'd, and sometimes impair'd.  
He that has light within his own cleer brest  
May sit i'th center, and enjoy bright day,  
But he that hides a dark soul, and foul thoughts  
Benighted walks under the mid-day Sun ;  
Himself is his own dungeon.

360

370

380

## *A Mask.*

2. *Bro.* Tis most true

That musing meditation most affects  
The pensive secrecy of desert cell,  
Far from the cheerfull haunt of men, and herds,  
And sits as safe as in a Senat house,  
For who would rob a Hermit of his Weeds, 390  
His few Books, or his Beads, or Maple Dish,  
Or do his gray hairs any violence?  
But beauty like the fair Hesperian Tree  
Laden with blooming gold, had need the guard  
Of dragon watch with unincharnted eye,  
To save her blossoms, and defend her fruit  
From the rash hand of bold Incontinence.  
You may as well spread out the unsun'd heaps  
Of Misers treasure by an out-laws den,  
And tell me it is safe, as bid me hope 400  
Danger will wink on Opportunity,  
And let a single helpless maiden pass  
Uninjur'd in this wilde surrounding wast.  
Of night, or lonelines it recks me not,  
I fear the dred events that dog them both,  
Lest som ill greeting touch attempt the person  
Of our unowned sister.

*Eld. Bro.* I do not, brother,  
Infer, as if I thought my sisters state  
Secure without all doubt, or controversie :  
Yet where an equall poise of hope and fear 410  
Does arbitrate th'event, my nature is  
That I encline to hope, rather then fear,  
And gladly banish squint suspicion.  
My sister is not so defenceless left  
As you imagine, she has a hidden strength  
Which you remember not.

2. *Bro.* What hidden strength,  
Unless the strength of Heav'n, if you mean that?

*Eld. Bro.* I mean that too, but yet a hidden strength  
Which if Heav'n gave it, may be term'd her own :  
'Tis chastity, my brother, chastity : 420  
She that has that, is clad in compleat steel,  
And like a quiver'd Nymph with Arrows keen  
May trace huge Forests, and unharbour'd Heaths,  
Infamous Hills, and sandy perilous wildes,

## Miscellaneous Poems.

Where through the sacred rayes of Chastity,  
No savage fierce, Bandite, or mountaneer  
Will dare to soyl her Virgin purity,  
Yea there, where very desolation dwels  
By grots, and caverns shag'd with horrid shades,  
She may pass on with unblench't majesty, 430  
Be it not don in pride, or in presumption.  
Som say no evil thing that walks by night  
In fog, or fire, by lake, or moorish fen,  
Blew meager Hag, or stubborn unlaid ghost,  
That breaks his magick chains at *curfeu* time,  
No goblin, or swart faëry of the mine,  
Hath hurtfull power o're true virginity.  
Do ye beleeve me yet, or shall I call  
Antiquity from the old Schools of Greece  
To testifie the arms of Chastity? 440  
Hence had the huntress *Dian* her dred bow  
Fair silver-shafted Queen for ever chaste,  
Wherwith she tam'd the brinded lioness  
And spotted mountain pard, but set at nought  
The frivolous bolt of *Cupid*, gods and men  
Fear'd her stern frown, and she was queen oth' Woods.  
What was that snaky-headed *Gorgon* sheild  
That wise *Minerva* wore, unconquer'd Virgin,  
Wherwith she freez'd her foes to congeal'd stone?  
But rigid looks of Chast austerity, 450  
And noble grace that dash't brute violence  
With sudden adoration, and blank aw.  
So dear to Heav'n is Saintly chastity,  
That when a soul is found sincerely so,  
A thousand liveried Angels lacky her,  
Driving far off each thing of sin and guilt,  
And in cleer dream, and solemn vision  
Tell her of things that no gross ear can hear,  
Till oft convers with heav'nly habitants  
Begin to cast a beam on th'outward shape, 460  
The unpolluted temple of the mind,  
And turns it by degrees to the souls essence,  
Till all be made immortal: but when lust  
By unchaste looks, loose gestures, and foul talk,  
But most by leud and lavish act of sin,  
Lets in defilement to the inward parts,

## A Mask.

The soul grows clotted by contagion,  
Imbodies, and imbrutes, till she quite loose  
The divine property of her first being.  
Such are those thick and gloomy shadows damp 470  
Oft seen in Charnell vaults, and Sepulchers  
Lingering, and sitting by a new made grave,  
As loath to leave the body that it lov'd,  
And link't it self by carnal sensuality  
To a degenerate and degraded state.

2. *Bro.* How charming is divine Philosophy!  
Not harsh, and crabbed as dull fools suppose,  
But musical as is *Apollo's* lute,  
And a perpetual feast of nectar'd sweets,  
Where no crude surfet reigns. *Eld. Bro.* List, list, I hear  
Som far off hallow break the silent Air. 481

2. *Bro.* Me thought so too; what should it be?

*Eld. Bro.* For certain

Either som one like us night-founder'd here,  
Or els som neighbour Wood-man, or at worst,  
Som roaving Robber calling to his fellows.

2. *Bro.* Heav'n keep my sister, agen agen and neer,  
Best draw, and stand upon our guard.

*Eld. Bro.* Ile hallow,

If he be friendly he comes well, if not,  
Defence is a good cause, and Heav'n be for us.

*The attendant Spirit habited like a Shepherd.*

That hallow I should know, what are you? speak; 490  
Com not too neer, you fall on iron stakes else.

*Spir.* What voice is that, my young Lord? speak agen.

2. *Bro.* O brother, 'tis my father Shepherd sure.

*Eld. Bro. Thyrsis?* Whose artful strains have oft delaid  
The huddling brook to hear his madrigal,  
And sweeten'd every muskrose of the dale,  
How cam'st thou here good Swain? hath any ram  
Slip't from the fold, or young Kid lost his dam,  
Or straggling weather the pen't flock forsook?  
How couldst thou find this dark sequester'd nook? 500

*Spir.* O my lov'd masters heir, and his next joy,  
I came not here on such a trivial toy  
As a stray'd Ewe, or to pursue the stealth



## Miscellaneous Poems.

Of pilfering Woolf, not all the fleecy wealth  
That doth enrich these Downs, is worth a thought  
To this my errand, and the care it brought.  
But O my Virgin Lady, where is she?  
How chance she is not in your company?

*Eld. Bro.* To tell thee sadly Shepherd, without blame,  
Or our neglect, we lost her as we came. 510

*Spir.* Ay me unhappy then my fears are true.

*Eld. Bro.* What fears good *Thyrsis*? Prethee briefly shew.

*Spir.* Ile tell ye, 'tis not vain or fabulous,  
(Though so esteem'd by shallow ignorance)  
What the sage Poëts taught by th' heav'nly Muse,  
Storied of old in high immortal vers  
Of dire *Chimera's* and enchanted Iles,  
And rifted Rocks whose entrance leads to hell,  
For such there be, but unbelief is blind.

Within the navil of this hideous Wood, 520

Immur'd in cypress shades a Sorcerer dwels  
Of *Bacchus*, and of *Circe* born, great *Comus*,  
Deep skill'd in all his mothers witcheries,  
And here to every thirsty wanderer,  
By sly enticement gives his banefull cup,  
With many murmurs mixt, whose pleasing poison  
The visage quite transforms of him that drinks,  
And the inglorious likenes of a beast

Fixes instead, unmoulding reasons mintage  
Character'd in the face; this have I learn't 530

Tending my flocks hard by i'th hilly crofts,  
That brow this bottom glade, whence night by night  
He and his monstrous rout are heard to howl  
Like stabl'd wolves, or tigers at their prey,  
Doing abhorred rites to *Hecate*

In their obscured haunts of inmost bowres.  
Yet have they many baits, and guilefull spells  
To inveigle and invite th'unwary sense  
Of them that pass unweeting by the way.

This evening late by then the chewing flocks 540  
Had ta'n their supper on the savoury Herb  
Of Knot-grass dew-besprent, and were in fold,  
I sate me down to watch upon a bank  
With Ivy canopied, and interwove  
With flaunting Hony-suckle, and began



## *A Mask.*

Wrapt in a pleasing fit of melancholy  
 'To meditate my rural minstrelsie,  
 Till fancy had her fill, but ere a close  
 The wonted roar was up amidst the Woods,  
 And fill'd the Air with barbarous dissonance, 550  
 At which I ceas't, and listen'd them a while,  
 Till an unusuall stop of sudden silence  
 Gave respite to the drowsie frightened steeds  
 That draw the litter of close-curtain'd sleep.  
 At last a soft and solemn breathing sound  
 Rose like a steam of rich distill'd Perfumes,  
 And stole upon the Air, that even Silence  
 Was took e're she was ware, and wish't she might  
 Deny her nature, and be never more  
 Still to be so displac't. I was all eare, 560  
 And took in strains that might create a soul  
 Under the ribs of Death, but O ere long  
 Too well I did perceive it was the voice  
 Of my most honour'd Lady, your dear sister.  
 Amaz'd I stood, harrow'd with grief and fear,  
 And O poor hapless Nightingale thought I,  
 How sweet thou sing'st, how neer the deadly snare!  
 Then down the Lawns I ran with headlong hast  
 Through paths, and turnings oft'n trod by day,  
 Till guided by mine ear I found the place 570  
 Where that damn'd wisard hid in sly disguise  
 (For so by certain signes I knew) had met  
 Already, ere my best speed could prævent,  
 The aidless innocent Lady his wish't prey,  
 Who gently ask't if he had seen such two,  
 Supposing him som neighbour villager;  
 Longer I durst not stay, but soon I guess't  
 Ye were the two she mean't, with that I sprung  
 Into swift flight, till I had found you here,  
 But further know I not. 2. *Bro.* O night and shades, 580  
 How are ye joyn'd with hell in triple knot  
 Against th'unarmed weakness of one Virgin  
 Alone, and helpless! Is this the confidence  
 You gave me Brother? *Eld. Bro.* Yes, and keep it still,  
 Lean on it safely, not a period

547 meditate] meditate upon 1673      556 steam] stream 1673  
 580 furder] further 1673

## Miscellaneous Poems.

Shall be unsaid for me: against the threats  
Of malice or of sorcery, or that power  
Which erring men call Chance, this I hold firm,  
Vertue may be assail'd, but never hurt,  
Surpriz'd by unjust force, but not enthrall'd, 590  
Yea even that which mischief meant most harm,  
Shall in the happy trial prove most glory.  
But evil on it self shall back recoil,  
And mix no more with goodness, when at last  
Gather'd like scum, and settl'd to it self  
It shall be in eternal restless change  
Self-fed, and self-consum'd, if this fail,  
The pillar'd firmament is rott'nness,  
And earths base built on stubble. But com let's on.  
Against th' opposing will and arm of Heav'n 600  
May never this just sword be lifted up,  
But for that damn'd magician, let him be girt  
With all the greisly legions that troop  
Under the sooty flag of *Acheron*,  
*Harpyies* and *Hydra's*, or all the monstrous forms  
'Twixt *Africa* and *Inde*, Ile find him out,  
And force him to restore his purchase back,  
Or drag him by the curls, to a foul death,  
Curs'd as his life.

*Spir.* Alas good ventrous youth,  
I love thy courage yet, and bold Emprise, 610  
But here thy sword can do thee little stead,  
Farr other arms, and other weapons must  
Be those that quell the might of hellish charms,  
He with his bare wand can unthred thy joynts,  
And crumble all thy sinews.

*Eld. Bro.* Why prethee Shepherd  
How durst thou then thy self approach so neer  
As to make this relation?

*Spir.* Care and utmost shifts  
How to secure the Lady from surprisal,  
Brought to my mind a certain Shepherd Lad  
Of small regard to see to, yet well skill'd 620  
In every vertuous plant and healing herb  
That spreads her verdant leaf to th'morning ray,  
He lov'd me well, and oft would beg me sing,  
Which when I did, he on the tender grass

## A Mask.

Would sit, and hearken even to extasie,  
And in requitall ope his leather'n scrip,  
And shew me simples of a thousand names  
Telling their strange and vigorous faculties;  
Amongst the rest a small unsightly root,  
But of divine effect, he cull'd me out ; 630  
The leaf was darkish, and had prickles on it,  
But in another Countrey, as he said,  
Bore a bright golden flowre, but not in this soyl :  
Unknown, and like esteem'd, and the dull swayn  
Treads on it daily with his clouted shoon,  
And yet more med'cinal is it then that *Moly*  
That *Hermes* once to wise *Ulysses* gave ;  
He call'd it *Hæmony*, and gave it me,  
And bad me keep it as of sov'ran use  
'Gainst all enchantments, mildew blast, or damp 640  
Or gastly furies apparition ;  
I purs't it up, but little reck'ning made,  
Till now that this extremity compell'd,  
But now I find it true ; for by this means  
I knew the foul inchanter though disguis'd,  
Enter'd the very lime-twigs of his spells,  
And yet came off : if you have this about you  
(As I will give you when we go) you may  
Boldly assault the necromancers hall ;  
Where if he be, with dauntless hardihood, 650  
And brandish't blade rush on him, break his glass,  
And shed the luscious liquor on the ground,  
But sease his wand, though he and his curst crew  
Feirce signe of battail make, and menace high,  
Or like the sons of *Vulcan* vomit smoak,  
Yet will they soon retire, if he but shrink.

*Eld. Bro. Thyrsis* lead on apace, Ile follow thee,  
And som good angel bear a sheild before us.

*The Scene changes to a stately Palace, set out with all manner of deliciousness ; soft Musick, Tables spread with all dainties. Comus appears with his rabble, and the Lady set in an enchanted Chair, to whom he offers his Glass, which she puts by, and goes about to rise.*

*Comus.* Nay Lady sit ; if I but wave this wand,  
Your nerves are all chain'd up in Alablasters, 660  
And you a statue ; or as *Daphne* was  
Root-bound, that fled *Apollo*.

## Miscellaneous Poems.

*La.* Fool do not boast,  
Thou canst not touch the freedom of my minde  
With all thy charms, although this corporal rinde  
Thou haste immanacl'd, while Heav'n sees good.

*Co.* Why are you vext Lady? why do you frown?  
Here dwell no frowns, nor anger, from these gates  
Sorrow flies farr: See here be all the pleasures  
That fancy can beget on youthfull thoughts,  
When the fresh blood grows lively, and returns 670  
Brisk as the *April* buds in Primrose-season.  
And first behold this cordial Julep here  
That flames, and dances in his crystal bounds  
With spirits of balm, and fragrant Syrops mixt.  
Not that *Nepenthes* which the wife of *Thone*,  
In *Egypt* gave to *Jove-born Helena*  
Is of such power to stir up joy as this,  
To life so friendly, or so cool to thirst.  
Why should you be so cruel to your self,  
And to those dainty limms which nature lent 680  
For gentle usage, and soft delicacy?  
But you invert the cov'nants of her trust,  
And harshly deal like an ill borrower  
With that which you receiv'd on other terms,  
Scorning the unexempt condition  
By which all mortal frailty must subsist,  
Refreshment after toil, ease after pain,  
That have been tir'd all day without repast,  
And timely rest have wanted, but fair Virgin  
This will restore all soon.

*La.* 'Twill not false traitor, 690  
'Twill not restore the truth and honesty  
That thou hast banish't from thy tongue with lies,  
Was this the cottage, and the safe abode  
Thou told'st me of? What grim aspects are these,  
These oughly-headed Monsters? Mercy guard me!  
Hence with thy brew'd enchantments, foul deceiver,  
Hast thou betrai'd my credulous innocence  
With visor'd falshood, and base forgery,  
And wouldst thou seek again to trap me here  
With lickerish baits fit to ensnare a brute? 700  
Were it a draft for *Juno* when she banquets,  
I would not taste thy treasonous offer; none

## *A Mask.*

But such as are good men can give good things,  
And that which is not good, is not delicious  
To a well-govern'd and wise appetite.

*Co.* O foolishnes of men! that lend their ears  
To those budge doctors of the *Stoick* Furr,  
And fetch their precepts from the *Cynick* Tub,  
Praising the lean and sallow Abstinence.  
Wherefore did Nature powre her bounties forth, 710  
With such a full and unwithdrawing hand,  
Covering the earth with odours, fruits, and flocks,  
Thronging the Seas with spawn innumerable,  
But all to please, and sate the curious taste?  
And set to work millions of spinning Worms,  
That in their green shops weave the smooth-hair'd silk  
To deck her Sons, and that no corner might  
Be vacant of her plenty, in her own loyns  
She hutch't th'all-worshipt ore, and precious gems  
To store her children with; if all the world 720  
Should in a pet of temperance feed on Pulse,  
Drink the clear stream, and nothing wear but Freize,  
Th'all-giver would be unthank't, would be unprais'd,  
Not half his riches known, and yet despis'd,  
And we should serve him as a grudging master,  
As a penurious niggard of his wealth,  
And live like Natures bastards, not her sons,  
Who would be quite surcharged with her own weight,  
And strangl'd with her waste fertility;  
Th'earth cumber'd, and the wing'd air dark't with plumes,  
The herds would over-multitude their Lords, 731  
The Sea o'refraught would swell, and th'unsought diamonds  
Would so emblaze the forehead of the Deep,  
And so bestudd with Stars, that they below  
Would grow inur'd to light, and com at last  
To gaze upon the Sun with shameless brows.  
List Lady be not coy, and be not cosen'd  
With that same vaunted name Virginity,  
Beauty is natures coyn, must not be hoorded,  
But must be currant, and the good thereof 740  
Consists in mutual and partak'n bliss,  
Unsavoury in th'injoyment of it self  
If you let slip time, like a neglected rose  
It withers on the stalk with languish't head.

## Miscellaneous Poems.

Beauty is natures brag, and must be shown  
In courts, at feasts, and high solemnities  
Where most may wonder at the workmanship;  
It is for homely features to keep home,  
They had their name thence; course complexions  
And cheeks of sorry grain will serve to ply 750  
The sampler, and to teize the huswifes wooll.

What need a vermeil-tinctured lip for that  
Love-darting eyes, or tresses like the Morn?  
There was another meaning in these gifts,  
Think what, and be adviz'd, you are but young yet.

*La.* I had not thought to have unlockt my lips  
In this unhallow'd air, but that this Jugler  
Would think to charm my judgement, as mine eyes,  
Obtruding false rules pranckt in reasons garb.  
I hate when vice can bolt her arguments, 760  
And vertue has no tongue to check her pride:

Impostor do not charge most innocent nature,  
As if she would her children should be riotous  
With her abundance, she good cateress  
Means her provision onely to the good  
That live according to her sober laws,  
And holy dictate of spare Temperance:  
If every just man that now pines with want  
Had but a moderate and beseeming share  
Of that which lewdly-pamper'd Luxury 770  
Now heaps upon som few with vast excess,  
Natures full blessings would be well dispenc't

In unsuperfluous eeven proportion,  
And she no whit encomber'd with her store,  
And then the giver would be better thank't,  
His praise due paid, for swinish gluttony  
Ne're looks to Heav'n amidst his gorgeous feast,  
But with besotted base ingratitude  
Cramms, and blasphemes his feeder. Shall I go on?  
Or have I said anough? To him that dares 780  
Arm his profane tongue with contemptuous words  
Against the Sun-clad power of Chastity,  
Fain would I something say, yet to what end?  
Thou hast nor Eare, nor Soul to apprehend  
The sublime notion, and high mystery

780 anough] anow 1673

## *A Mask.*

That must be utter'd to unfold the sage  
And serious doctrine of Virginitie,  
And thou art worthy that thou shouldst not know  
More happiness then this thy present lot.  
Enjoy your deer Wit, and gay Rhetorick 790  
That hath so well been taught her dazling fence,  
Thou art not fit to hear thy self convinc't ;  
Yet should I try, the uncontrouled worth  
Of this pure cause would kindle my rap't spirits  
To such a flame of sacred vehemence,  
That dumb things would be mov'd to sympathize,  
And the brute Earth would lend her nerves, and shake,  
Till all thy magick structures rear'd so high,  
Were shatter'd into heaps o're thy false head.

*Co.* She fables not, I feel that I do fear 800  
Her words set off by som superior power ;  
And though not mortal, yet a cold shuddring dew  
Dips me all o're, as when the wrath of *Jove*  
Speaks thunder, and the chains of *Erebus*  
To som of *Saturns* crew. I must dissemble,  
And try her yet more strongly. Com, no more,  
This is meer moral babble, and direct  
Against the canon laws of our foundation ;  
I must not suffer this, yet 'tis but the lees  
And setlings of a melancholy blood ; 810  
But this will cure all streight, one sip of this  
Will bathe the drooping spirits in delight  
Beyond the bliss of dreams. Be wise, and taste.—

*The Brothers rush in with Swords drawn, wrest his Glass out of his hand, and break it against the ground ; his rout make signe of resistance, but are all driven in ; The attendant Spirit comes in.*

*Spir.* What, have you let the false enchanter scape ?  
O ye mistook, ye should have snatcht his wand  
And bound him fast ; without his rod revers't,  
And backward mutters of dissevering power,  
We cannot free the Lady that sits here  
In stony fetters fixt, and motionless ;  
Yet stay, be not disturb'd, now I bethink me, 820  
Som other means I have which may be us'd,  
Which once of *Melibæus* old I learnt  
The soothest Shepherd that ere pip't on plains.



## Miscellaneous Poems.

There is a gentle Nymph not farr from hence,  
That with moist curb sways the smooth Severn stream,  
*Sabrina* is her name, a Virgin pure,  
Whilom she was the daughter of *Lochrine*,  
That had the Scepter from his father *Brute*.  
The guiltless damsel flying the mad pursuit  
Of her enraged stepdam *Guendolen*, 830  
Commended her fair innocence to the flood  
That stay'd her flight with his cross-flowing course,  
The water Nymphs that in the bottom plaid,  
Held up their pearled wrists and took her in,  
Bearing her straight to aged *Nereus* Hall,  
Who piteous of her woes, rear'd her lank head,  
And gave her to his daughters to imbathe  
In nectar'd lavers strew'd with *Asphodil*,  
And through the porch and inlet of each sense  
Dropt in Ambrosial Oils till she reviv'd, 840  
And underwent a quick immortal change  
Made Goddess of the River; still she retains  
Her maid'n gentlenes, and oft at Eeve  
Visits the herds along the twilight meadows,  
Helping all urchin blasts, and ill luck signes  
That the shrewd medling Elfe delights to make,  
Which she with pretious viold liquors heals.  
For which the Shepherds at their festivals  
Carrol her goodnes lowd in rustick layes,  
And throw sweet garland wreaths into her stream 850  
Of pancies, pinks, and gaudy Daffadils.  
And, as the old Swain said, she can unlock  
The clasping charm, and thaw the numming spell,  
If she be right invok't in warbled Song,  
For maid'nhood she loves, and will be swift  
To aid a Virgin, such as was her self  
In hard besetting need, this will I try  
And adde the power of som adjuring verse.

### SONG.

*Sabrina fair*

*Listen where thou art sitting  
Under the glassie, cool, translucent wave,  
In twisted braids of Lillies knitting*

860



## *A Mask.*

*The loose train of thy amber-dropping hair,  
Listen for dear honour's sake,  
Goddess of the silver lake,  
Listen and save.*

Listen and appear to us  
In name of great *Oceanus*,  
By the earth-shaking *Neptune's* mace,  
And *Tethys* grave majestick pace, 870  
By hoary *Nereus* wrinckled look,  
And the *Carpathian* wisards hook,  
By scaly *Tritons* winding shell,  
And old sooth-saying *Glaucus* spell,  
By *Leucothea's* lovely hands,  
And her son that rules the strands,  
By *Thetis* tinsel-slipper'd feet,  
And the Songs of *Sirens* sweet,  
By dead *Parthenope's* dear tomb,  
And fair *Ligea's* golden comb, 880  
Wherewith she sits on diamond rocks  
Sleeking her soft alluring locks,  
By all the *Nymphs* that nightly dance  
Upon thy streams with wily glance,  
Rise, rise, and heave thy rosie head  
From thy coral-pav'n bed,  
And bridle in thy headlong wave,  
Till thou our summons answered have.  
Listen and save.

*Sabrina rises, attended by water-Nymphes, and sings.*

*By the rushy-fringed bank,* 890  
*Where grows the Willow and the Osier dank,*  
*My sliding Chariot staves,*  
*Thick set with Agat, and the azurn sheen*  
*Of Turkis blew, and Emrauld green*  
*That in the channell straves,*  
*Whilst from off the waters fleet*  
*Thus I set my printless feet*  
*O're the Cowslips Velvet head,*  
*That bends not as I tread,*  
*Gentle swain at thy request* 900  
*I am here.*

## Miscellaneous Poems.

*Spir.* Goddess dear  
We implore thy powerful hand  
To undo the charmed band  
Of true Virgin here distrest,  
Through the force, and through the wile  
Of unblest inchanter vile.

*Sab.* Shepherd 'tis my office best  
To help insnared chastity ;  
Brightest Lady look on me, 910  
Thus I sprinkle on thy brest  
Drops that from my fountain pure,  
I have kept of pretious cure,  
Thrice upon thy fingers tip,  
Thrice upon thy rubied lip,  
Next this marble venom'd seat  
Smear'd with gumms of glutenous heat  
I touch with chaste palms moist and cold,  
Now the spell hath lost his hold ;  
And I must haste ere morning hour 920  
To wait in *Amphitrite's* bowr.

*Sabrina descends, and the Lady rises out of her seat.*

*Spir.* Virgin, daughter of *Lochrine*  
Sprung of old *Anchises* line,  
May thy brimmed waves for this  
Their full tribute never miss  
From a thousand petty rills,  
That tumble down the snowy hills :  
Summer drouth, or singed air  
Never scorch thy tresses fair,  
Nor wet *Octobers* torrent flood 930  
Thy molten crystal fill with mudd,  
May thy billows rowl ashoar  
The beryl, and the golden ore,  
May thy lofty head be crown'd  
With many a tower and terrass round,  
And here and there thy banks upon  
With Groves of myrrhe, and cinnamon.  
Com Lady while Heaven lends us grace,  
Let us fly this cursed place,  
Lest the Sorcerer us intice 940  
With som other new device.

## A Mask.

Not a waste, or needless sound  
Till we com to holier ground,  
I shall be your faithfull guide  
Through this gloomy covert wide,  
And not many furlongs thence  
Is your Fathers residence,  
Where this night are met in state  
Many a friend to gratulate  
His wish't presence, and beside 950  
All the Swains that there abide,  
With Jiggs, and rural dance resort,  
We shall catch them at their sport,  
And our sudden coming there  
Will double all their mirth and chere;  
Com let us haste, the Stars grow high,  
But night sits monarch yet in the mid sky.

*The Scene changes, presenting Ludlow Town and the Presidents Castle, then com in Countrey-Dancers, after them the attendant Spirit, with the two Brothers and the Lady.*

### SONG.

Spir. *Back Shepherds, back, anough your play,  
Till next Sun-shine holiday,  
Here be without duck or nod 960  
Other trippings to be trod  
Of lighter toes, and such Court guise  
As Mercury did first devise  
With the mincing Dryades  
On the Lawns, and on the Leas.*

This second Song presents them to their father and mother.

*Noble Lord, and Lady bright,  
I have brought ye new delight,  
Here behold so goodly grown  
Three fair branches of your own,  
Heav'n hath timely tri'd their youth, 970  
Their faith, their patience, and their truth.  
And sent them here through hard assays  
With a crown of deathless Praise,  
To triumph in victorious dance  
O're sensual Folly, and Intemperance.*

## Miscellaneous Poems.

*The dances ended, the Spirit Epiloguizes.*

*Spir.* To the Ocean now I fly,  
And those happy climes that ly  
Where day never shuts his eye,  
Up in the broad fields of the sky :  
There I suck the liquid ayre  
All amidst the Gardens fair  
Of *Hesperus*, and his daughters three  
That sing about the golden tree :  
Along the crisped shades and bowres  
Revels the spruce and jocond Spring,  
The Graces, and the rosie-boosom'd Howres,  
Thither all their bounties bring,  
That there eternal Summer dwels,  
And West winds, with musky wing  
About the cedar'n alleys fling  
*Nard*, and *Cassia's* balmy smels.

980

990

*Iris* there with humid bow,  
Waters the odorous banks that blow  
Flowers of more mingled hew  
Then her purfl'd scarf can shew,  
And drenches with *Elysian* dew  
(List mortals, if your ears be true)  
Beds of *Hyacinth*, and roses  
Where young *Adonis* oft reposes,  
Waxing well of his deep wound  
In slumber soft, and on the ground  
Sadly sits th' *Assyrian* Queen ;  
But far above in spangled sheen  
Celestial *Cupid* her fam'd son advanc't,  
Holds his dear *Psyche* sweet intranc't  
After her wandring labours long,  
Till free consent the gods among  
Make her his eternal Bride,  
And from her fair unspotted side  
Two blissful twins are to be born,  
Youth and Joy ; so *Jove* hath sworn.

1000

1010

But now my task is smoothly don,  
I can fly, or I can run  
Quickly to the green earths end,  
Where the bow'd welkin slow doth bend,

## *A Mask.*

And from thence can soar as soon  
To the corners of the Moon.

Mortals that would follow me,  
Love vertue, she alone is free,  
She can teach ye how to clime  
Higher then the Spheary chime ;  
Or if Vertue feeble were,  
Heav'n it self would stoop to her.

1020

*The End.*

---

## POEMS ADDED IN THE 1673 EDITION.

---

Anno ætatis 17.

### *On the Death of a fair Infant dying of a Cough.*

I

O FAIREST flower no sooner blown but blasted,  
Soft silken Primrose fading timeleslie,  
Summers chief honour if thou hadst out-lasting  
Bleak winters force that made thy blossome drie;  
For he being amorous on that lovely die  
That did thy cheek envermeil, thought to kiss  
But kill'd alas, and then bewayl'd his fatal bliss.

II

For since grim Aquilo his charioter  
By boistrous rape th' Athenian damsel got,  
He thought it toucht his Deitie full neer,  
If likewise he some fair one wedded not,  
Thereby to wipe away th' infamous blot,  
Of long-uncoupled bed, and childless eld,  
Which 'mongst the wanton gods a foul reproach was held.

III

So mounting up in ycie-pearled carr,  
Through middle empire of the freezing aire  
He wanderd long, till thee he spy'd from farr,  
There ended was his quest, there ceast his care.  
Down he descended from his Snow-soft chaire,  
But all unwares with his cold-kind embrace  
Unhous'd thy Virgin Soul from her fair biding place.

# *On the Death of a fair Infant.*

## IV

Yet art thou not inglorious in thy fate ;  
For so *Apollo*, with unweeting hand  
Whilome did slay his dearly-loved mate  
Young *Hyacinth* born on *Eurotas*' strand,  
Young *Hyacinth* the pride of *Spartan* land ;  
But then transform'd him to a purple flower  
Alack that so to change thee winter had no power.

## V

Yet can I not perswade me thou art dead  
Or that thy coarse corrupts in earths dark wombe, 30  
Or that thy beauties lie in wormie bed,  
Hid from the world in a low delved tombe ;  
Could Heav'n for pittie thee so strictly doom ?  
Oh no ! for something in thy face did shine  
Above mortalitie that shew'd thou wast divine.

## VI

Resolve me then oh Soul most surely blest  
(If so it be that thou these plaints dost hear)  
Tell me bright Spirit where e're thou hoverest  
Whether above that high first-moving Spheare  
Or in the Elisian fields (if such there were.) 40  
Oh say me true if thou wert mortal wight  
And why from us so quickly thou didst take thy flight.

## VII

Wert thou some Starr which from the ruin'd roofe  
Of shak't Olympus by mischance didst fall ;  
Which carefull *Jove* in natures true behoofe  
Took up, and in fit place did reinstall ?  
Or did of late earths Sonnes besiege the wall  
Of sheenie Heav'n, and thou some goddess fled  
Amongst us here below to hide thy nectar'd head.

# Miscellaneous Poems.

## VIII

Or wert thou that just Maid who once before 50  
Forsook the hated earth, O tell me sooth  
And cam'st again to visit us once more?  
Or wert thou that sweet smiling Youth!  
Or that c[r]own'd Matron sage white-robed Truth?  
Or any other of that heav'nly brood  
Let down in clowdie throne to do the world some good.

## IX

Or wert thou of the golden-winged hoast,  
Who having clad thy self in humane weed,  
To earth from thy præfixed seat didst boast,  
And after short abode flie back with speed, 60  
As if to shew what creatures Heav'n doth breed,  
Thereby to set the hearts of men on fire  
To scorn the sordid world, and unto Heav'n aspire.

## X

But oh why didst thou not stay here below  
To bless us with thy heav'n-lov'd innocence,  
To slake his wrath whom sin hath made our foe  
To turn Swift-rushing black perdition hence,  
Or drive away the slaughtering pestilence,  
To stand 'twixt us and our deserved smart  
But thou canst best perform that office where thou art. 70

## XI

Then thou the mother of so sweet a child  
Her false imagin'd loss cease to lament,  
And wisely learn to curb thy sorrows wild;  
Think what a present thou to God hast sent,  
And render him with patience what he lent;  
This if thou do he will an off-spring give,  
That till the worlds last-end shall make thy name to live.

53 Or wert thou] Or wert thou Mercy conjectured by John Heskin of  
*Ch. Ch. Oxon.* from Ode on Nativity, st. 15.



## *At a Vacation Exercise.*

Anno Aetatis 19. *At a Vacation Exercise in the Colledge, part Latin, part English. The Latin speeches ended, the English thus began.*

HAIL native Language, that by sinews weak  
Didst move my first endeavouring tongue to speak,  
And mad'st imperfect words with childish tripps,  
Half unpronounc't, slide through my infant-lipps,  
Driving dum silence from the portal dore,  
Where he had mutely sate two years before :  
Here I salute thee and thy pardon ask,  
That now I use thee in my latter task :  
Small loss it is that thence can come unto thee,  
I know my tongue but little Grace can do thee : 10  
Thou needst not be ambitious to be first,  
Believe me I have thither packt the worst :  
And, if it happen as I did forecast,  
The daintest dishes shall be serv'd up last.  
I pray thee then deny me not thy aide  
For this same small neglect that I have made :  
But haste thee strait to do me once a Pleasure,  
And from thy wardrope bring thy chieftest treasure ;  
Not those new fangled toys, and trimming slight  
Which takes our late fantasticks with delight, 20  
But cull those richest Robes, and gay'st attire  
Which deepest Spirits, and choicest Wits desire :  
I have some naked thoughts that rove about  
And loudly knock to have their passage out ;  
And wearie of their place do only stay  
Till thou hast deck't them in thy best aray ;  
That so they may without suspect or fears  
Fly swiftly to this fair Assembly's ears ;  
Yet I had rather if I were to chuse,  
Thy service in some graver subject use, 30  
Such as may make thee search thy coffers round,  
Before thou cloath my fancy in fit sound :  
Such where the deep transported mind may soare  
Above the wheeling poles, and at Heav'ns dore

## Miscellaneous Poems.

Look in, and see each blissful Deitie  
How he before the thunderous throne doth lie,  
Listening to what unshorn *Apollo* sings  
To th'touch of golden wires, while *Hebe* brings  
Immortal Nectar to her Kingly Sire :  
Then passing through the Spherse of watchful fire, 40  
And mistie Regions of wide air next under,  
And hills of Snow and lofts of piled Thunder,  
May tell at length how green-ey'd *Neptune* raves,  
In Heav'ns defiance mustering all his waves ;  
Then sing of secret things that came to pass  
When Beldam Nature in her cradle was ;  
And last of Kings and Queens and *Hero's* old,  
Such as the wise *Demodocus* once told  
In solemn Songs at King *Alcinous* feast,  
While sad *Uliesses* soul and all the rest 50  
Are held with his melodious harmonie  
In willing chains and sweet captivitie.  
But fie my wandring Muse how thou dost stray !  
Expectance calls thee now another way,  
Thou know'st it must be now thy only bent  
To keep in compass of thy Predicament :  
Then quick about thy purpos'd business come,  
That to the next I may resign my Roome.

*Then Ens is represented as Father of the Prædicaments his ten Sons, whereof the Eldest stood for Substance with his Canons, which Ens thus speaking, explains.*

Good luck befriend thee Son ; for at thy birth  
The Faiery Ladies daunc't upon the hearth ; 60  
Thy drowsie Nurse hath sworn she did them spie  
Come tripping to the Room where thou didst lie ;  
And sweetly singing round about thy Bed  
Strew all their blessings on thy sleeping Head.  
She heard them give thee this, that thou should'st still  
From eyes of mortals walk invisible,  
Yet there is something that doth force my fear,  
For once it was my dismal hap to hear  
A *Sybil* old, bow-bent with crooked age,  
That far events full wisely could presage, 70

## *At a Vacation Exercise.*

And in Times long and dark Prospective Glass  
Fore-saw what future dayes should bring to pass,  
Your Son, said she, (nor can you it prevent)  
Shall subject be to many an Accident.  
O're all his Brethren he shall Reign as King,  
Yet every one shall make him underling,  
And those that cannot live from him asunder  
Ungratefully shall strive to keep him under,  
In worth and excellence he shall out-go them,  
Yet being above them, he shall be below them ; 80  
From others he shall stand in need of nothing,  
Yet on his Brothers shall depend for Cloathing.  
To find a Foe it shall not be his hap,  
And peace shall lull him in her flowry lap ;  
Yet shall he live in strife, and at his dore  
Devouring war shall never cease to roare ;  
Yea it shall be his natural property  
To harbour those that are at enmity.  
What power, what force, what mighty spell, if not  
Your learned hands, can loose this Gordian knot? 90

*The next Quantity and Quality, spake in Prose, then Relation was call'd  
by his Name.*

Rivers arise ; whether thou be the Son,  
Of utmost *Tweed*, or *Oose*, or gulphie *Dun*,  
Or *Trent*, who like some earth-born Giant spreads  
His thirty Armes along the indented Meads,  
Or sullen *Mole* that runneth underneath,  
Or *Severn* swift, guilty of Maidens death,  
Or Rockie *Avon*, or of Sedgie *Lee*,  
Or Coaly *Tine*, or antient hallowed *Dee*,  
Or *Humber* loud that keeps the *Scythians* Name,  
Or *Medway* smooth, or Royal Towred *Thame*. 100

*The rest was Prose.*

# Miscellaneous Poems.

## *The Fifth Ode of Horace. Lib. I.*

Quis multa gracilis te puer in Rosa. *Rendred almost word for word without Rhyme according to the Latin Measure, as near as the Language will permit.*

WHAT slender Youth bedew'd with liquid odours

Courts thee on Roses in some pleasant Cave,

*Pyrrha* for whom bind'st thou

In wreaths thy golden Hair,

Plain in thy neatness; O how oft shall he

On Faith and changed Gods complain: and Seas

Rough with black winds and storms

Unwonted shall admire:

Who now enjoys thee credulous, all Gold,

Who alwayes vacant, alwayes amiable

10

Hopes thee; of flattering gales

Unmindfull. Hapless they

To whom thou untry'd seem'st fair. Me in my vow'd

Picture the sacred wall declares t' have hung

My dank and dropping weeds

To the stern God of Sea.

[*The Latin text follows.*]

## SONNETS.

### XI

A Book was writ of late call'd *Tetrachordon*;

And wov'n close, both matter, form and stile;

The Subject new: it walk'd the Town a while,

Numbring good intellects; now seldom por'd on.

Cries the stall-reader, bless us! what a word on

A title page is this! and some in file

Stand spelling fals, while one might walk to Mile-

End Green. Why is it harder Sirs then Gordon,

Colkitto, or Macdonnel, or Galasp?

Those rugged names to our like mouths grow sleek

10

That would have made *Quintilian* stare and gasp.

Thy age, like ours, O Soul of Sir *John Cheek*,

Hated not Learning wors then Toad or Asp;

When thou taught'st *Cambridge*, and King *Edward* Greek.

xi. Camb. Autograph supplies title, *On the Detraction which followed upon my writing certain Treatises.*

## Sonnets.

### XII. *On the same.*

I did but prompt the age to quit their cloggs  
By the known rules of antient libertie,  
When strait a barbarous noise environs me  
Of Owles and Cuckoes, Asses, Apes and Doggs.  
As when those Hinds that were transform'd to Froggs  
Raild at *Latona's* twin-born progenie  
Which after held the Sun and Moon in fee.  
But this is got by casting Pearl to Hoggs;  
That bawle for freedom in their senceless mood,  
And still revolt when truth would set them free. 10  
Licence they mean when they cry libertie;  
For who loves that, must first be wise and good;  
But from that mark how far they roave we see  
For all this wast of wealth, and loss of blood.

### *To Mr. H. Lawes, on his Aires.*

#### XIII

*Harry* whose tuneful and well measur'd Song  
First taught our English Musick how to span  
Words with just note and accent, not to scan  
With *Midas* Ears, committing short and long;  
Thy worth and skill exempts thee from the throng,  
With praise enough for Envy to look wan;  
To after age thou shalt be writ the man,  
That with smooth aire couldst humor best our tongue.  
Thou honour'st Verse, and Verse must send her wing  
To honour thee, the Priest of *Phæbus* Quire 10  
That tun'st their happiest lines in Hymn, or Story.  
*Dante* shall give Fame leave to set thee higher  
Then his *Casella*, whom he woo'd to sing  
Met in the milder shades of Purgatory.

9 send] lend *Cambridge Autograph MS.*

## Miscellaneous Poems.

### XIV

When Faith and Love which parted from thee never,  
Had ripen'd thy just soul to dwell with God,  
Meekly thou didst resign this earthy load  
Of Death, call'd Life ; which us from Life doth sever.  
Thy Works and Alms and all thy good Endeavour  
Staid not behind, nor in the grave were trod :  
But as Faith pointed with her golden rod,  
Follow'd thee up to joy and bliss for ever.  
Love led them on, and Faith who knew them best  
Thy hand-maids, clad them o're with purple beams 10  
And azure wings, that up they flew so drest,  
And speak the truth of thee on glorious Theams  
Before the Judge, who thenceforth bid thee rest  
And drink thy fill of pure immortal streams.

### *On the late Massacher in Piemont.*

### XV

Avenge O Lord thy slaughter'd Saints, whose bones  
Lie scatter'd on the Alpine mountains cold,  
Ev'n them who kept thy truth so pure of old  
When all our Fathers worship't Stocks and Stones,  
Forget not: in thy book record their groanes  
Who were thy Sheep and in their antient Fold  
Slayn by the bloody *Piemontese* that roll'd  
Mother with Infant down the Rocks. Their moans  
The Vales redoubl'd to the Hills, and they  
To Heav'n. Their martyr'd blood and ashes sow 10  
O're all th'*Italian* fields where still doth sway  
The triple Tyrant: that from these may grow  
A hunder'd-fold, who having learnt thy way  
Early may fly the *Babylonian* wo.

xiv. Camb. Autograph supplies title, *On the Religious Memory of Mrs. Catherine Thomson, my Christian Friend, deceased 16 Decemb. 1646.*

# Sonnets.

## XVI

When I consider how my light is spent,  
E're half my days, in this dark world and wide,  
And that one Talent which is death to hide,  
Lodg'd with me useless, though my Soul more bent  
To serve therewith my Maker, and present  
My true account, least he returning chide,  
Doth God exact day-labour, light deny'd,  
I fondly ask; But patience to prevent  
That murmur, soon replies, God doth not need  
Either man's work or his own gifts, who best 10  
Bear his milde yoke, they serve him best, his State  
Is Kingly. Thousands at his bidding speed  
And post o're Land and Ocean without rest:  
They also serve who only stand and waite.

## XVII

*Lawrence* of vertuous Father vertuous Son,  
Now that the Fields are dank, and ways are mire,  
Where shall we sometimes meet, and by the fire  
Help wast a sullen day; what may be won  
From the hard Season gaining: time will run  
On smoother, till *Favonius* re-inspire  
The frozen earth; and cloth in fresh attire  
The Lillie and Rose, that neither sow'd nor spun.  
What neat repast shall feast us, light and choice,  
Of Attick tast, with Wine, whence we may rise 10  
To hear the Lute well toucht, or artfull voice  
Warble immortal Notes and *Tuskan* Ayre?  
He who of those delights can judge, and spare  
To interpose them oft, is not unwise.

## XVIII

*Cyriack*, whose Grandsire on the Royal Bench  
Of Brittish *Themis*, with no mean applause  
Pronounc't and in his volumes taught our Lawes,  
Which others at their Barr so often wrench:  
To day deep thoughts resolve with me to drench  
In mirth, that after no repenting drawes;  
Let *Euclid* rest and *Archimedes* pause,

## Miscellaneous Poems.

And what the *Swede* intend, and what the *French*.  
To measure life, learn thou betimes, and know  
Toward solid good what leads the nearest way ; 10  
For other things mild Heav'n a time ordains,  
And disapproves that care, though wise in show,  
That with superfluous burden loads the day,  
And when God sends a cheerful hour, refrains.

### XIX

Methought I saw my late espoused Saint  
Brought to me like *Alcestis* from the grave,  
Whom *Joves* great Son to her glad Husband gave,  
Rescu'd from death by force though pale and faint.  
Mine as whom washt from spot of child-bed taint,  
Purification in the old Law did save,  
And such, as yet once more I trust to have  
Full sight of her in Heaven without restraint,  
Came vested all in white, pure as her mind :  
Her face was vail'd, yet to my fancied sight, 10  
Love, sweetness, goodness, in her person shin'd  
So clear, as in no face with more delight.  
But O as to embrace me she enclin'd  
I wak'd, she fled, and day brought back my night.

### *On the new forcers of Conscience under the Long PARLIAMENT.*

Because you have thrown of your Prelate Lord,  
And with stiff Vowes renounc'd his Liturgie  
To seise the widdow'd whore Pluralitie  
From them whose sin ye envi'd, not abhor'd,  
Dare ye for this adjure the Civill Sword  
To force our Consciences that Christ set free,  
And ride us with a classic Hierarchy  
Taught ye by meer *A. S.* and *Rotherford*?  
Men whose Life, Learning, Faith and pure intent  
Would have been held in high esteem with *Paul* 10  
Must now be nam'd and printed Hereticks  
By shallow *Edwards* and Scotch what d'ye call :  
But we do hope to find out all your tricks,



## Sonnets.

Your plots and packing wors then those of *Trent*,  
That so the Parliament  
May with their wholsom and preventive Shears  
Clip your Phylacteries, though bauk your Ears,  
And succour our just Fears  
When they shall read this clearly in your charge  
*New Presbyter* is but *Old Priest* writ Large.

70

---

The four following sonnets were not published until 1694, and then in a mangled form by Phillips, in his *Life of Milton*; they are here printed from the Cambridge MS., where that to Fairfax is in Milton's autograph.

### *On the Lord Gen. Fairfax at the seige of Colchester.*

*Fairfax*, whose name in armes through Europe rings  
Filling each mouth with envy, or with praise,  
And all her jealous monarchs with amaze,  
And rumors loud, that daunt remotest kings,  
Thy firm unshak'n vertue ever brings  
Victory home, though new rebellions raise  
Thir Hydra heads, & the fals North displaies  
Her brok'n league, to impe their serpent wings,  
O yet a nobler task awaites thy hand;  
For what can Warr, but endless warr still breed,  
Till Truth, & Right from Violence be freed,  
And Public Faith cleard from the shamefull brand  
Of Public Fraud. In vain doth Valour bleed  
While Avarice, & Rapine share the land.

10

## Miscellaneous Poems.

### *To the Lord Generall Cromwell May 1652.*

*On the proposalls of certaine ministers at the Committee for Propagation of the Gospell.*

*Cromwell*, our cheif of men, who through a cloud  
Not of warr onely, but detractions rude,  
Guided by faith & matchless Fortitude  
To peace & truth thy glorious way hast plough'd,  
And on the neck of crowned Fortune proud  
Hast reard Gods Trophies, & his work pursu'd,  
While Darwen stream with blood of Scotts imbru'd,  
And *Dunbarr feild* resounds thy praises loud,  
And Worsters laureat wreath; yet much remaines  
To conquer still; peace hath her victories  
No less renound then warr, new foes aries  
Threatning to bind our soules with secular chaines:  
Helpe us to save free Conscience from the paw  
Of hireling wolves whose Gospell is their maw.

10

### *To Sr Henry Vane the younger.*

*Vane*, young in yeares, but in sage counsell old,  
Then whome a better Senatour nere held  
The helme of Rome, when gownes not armes repell'd  
The feirce Epeirrot & the African bold,  
Whether to settle peace, or to unfold  
The drift of hollow states, hard to be spell'd,  
Then to advise how warr may best, upheld,  
Move by her two maine nerves, Iron & Gold  
In all her equipage; besides to know  
Both spirituall powre & civill, what each meanes  
What severs each thou 'hast learnt, which few have don.  
The bounds of either sword to thee wee ow.  
Therefore on thy firme hand religion leanes  
In peace, & reck'ns thee her eldest son.

10

## *Psalm i.*

*To Mr. Cyriack Skinner upon his Blindness.*

*Cyriack*, this three years day these eys, though clear  
To outward view, of blemish or of spot;  
Bereft of light thir seeing have forgot,  
Nor to thir idle orbs doth sight appear  
Of Sun or Moon or Starre throughout the year,  
Or man or woman. Yet I argue not  
Against heavns hand or will, nor bate a jot  
Of heart or hope; but still bear vp and steer  
Right onward. What supports me, dost thou ask?  
The conscience, Friend, to have lost them overply'd 10  
In libertyes defence, my noble task,  
Of which all Europe talks from side to side.  
This thought might lead me through the world's vain mask  
Content though blind, had I no better guide.

*PSAL. I. Done into Verse, 1653.*

BLESS'D is the man who hath not walk'd astray  
In counsel of the wicked, and ith'way  
Of sinners hath not stood, and in the seat  
Of scorers hath not sate. But in the great  
*Jehovahs* Law is ever his delight,  
And in his Law he studies day and night.  
He shall be as a tree which planted grows  
By watry streams, and in his season knows  
To yield his fruit, and his leaf shall not fall,  
And what he takes in hand shall prosper all. 10  
Not so the wicked, but as chaff which fann'd  
The wind drives, so the wicked shall not stand  
In judgment, or abide their tryal then,  
Nor sinners in th'assembly of just men.  
For the Lord knows th'upright way of the just,  
And the way of bad men to ruine must.

## Miscellaneous Poems.

PSAL. II. Done Aug. 8. 1653. Terzetti.

WHY do the Gentiles tumult, and the Nations  
Muse a vain thing, the Kings of th'earth upstand  
With power, and Princes in their Congregations  
Lay deep their plots together through each Land,  
Against the Lord and his Messiah dear.  
Let us break off, say they, by strength of hand  
Their bonds, and cast from us, no more to wear,  
Their twisted cords: he who in Heaven doth dwell  
Shall laugh, the Lord shall scoff them, then severe  
Speak to them in his wrath, and in his fell 10  
And fierce ire trouble them; but I saith hee  
Anointed have my King (though ye rebell)  
On Sion my holi' hill. A firm decree  
I will declare; the Lord to me hath say'd  
Thou art my Son I have begotten thee  
This day; ask of me, and the grant is made;  
As thy possession I on thee bestow  
Th'Heathen, and as thy conquest to be sway'd  
Earths utmost bounds: them shalt thou bring full low  
With Iron Scepter bruis'd, and them disperse 20  
Like to a potters vessel shiver'd so.  
And now be wise at length ye Kings averse  
Be taught ye Judges of the earth; with fear  
Jehovah serve, and let your joy converse  
With trembling; kiss the Son lest he appear  
In anger and ye perish in the way  
If once his wrath take fire like fuel sere.  
Happy all those who have in him their stay.

PSAL. III. Aug. 9. 1653.

*When he fled from Absalom.*

LORD how many are my foes  
How many those  
That in arms against me rise  
Many are they

## *Psalm iv.*

That of my life distrustfully thus say,  
No help for him in God there lies.  
But thou Lord art my shield my glory,  
Thee through my story  
Th' exalter of my head I count  
Aloud I cry'd 10  
Unto Jehovah, he full soon reply'd  
And heard me from his holy mount.  
I lay and slept, I wak'd again,  
For my sustain  
Was the Lord. Of many millions  
The populous rout  
I fear not though incamping round about  
They pitch against me their Pavillions.  
Rise Lord, save me my God for thou  
Hast smote ere now 20  
On the cheek-bone all my foes,  
Of men abhor'd  
Hast broke the teeth. This help was from the Lord ;  
Thy blessing on thy people flows.

### *PSAL. IV. Aug. 10. 1653.*

ANSWER me when I call  
God of my righteousness ;  
In straights and in distress  
Thou didst me disinthrall  
And set at large ; now spare,  
Now pity me, and hear my earnest prai'r.  
Great ones how long will ye  
My glory have in scorn  
How long be thus forborn  
Still to love vanity, 10  
To love, to seek, to prize  
Things false and vain and nothing else but lies ?  
Yet know the Lord hath chose  
Chose to himself a part  
The good and meek of heart  
(For whom to chuse he knows)  
Jehovah from on high  
Will hear my voyce what time to him I crie.  
(91)

## Miscellaneous Poems.

Be aw'd, and do not sin,  
Speak to your hearts alone, 20  
Upon your beds, each one,  
And be at peace within.  
Offer the offerings just

Of righteousness and in Jehovah trust.

Many there be that say  
Who yet will shew us good?  
Talking like this worlds brood.  
But Lord, thus let me pray,  
On us lift up the light

Lift up the favour of thy count'nance bright. 30

Into my heart more joy  
And gladness thou hast put  
Then when a year of glut  
Their stores doth over-cloy  
And from their plenteous grounds

With vast increase their corn and wine abounds.

In peace at once will I  
Both lay me down and sleep  
For thou alone dost keep  
Me safe where ere I lie

As in a rocky Cell 40

Thou Lord alone in safety mak'st me dwell.

### *PSAL. V. Aug. 12. 1653.*

JEHOVAH to my words give ear

My meditation waigh

The voyce of my complaining hear

My King and God for unto thee I pray.

Jehovah thou my early voyce

Shalt in the morning hear

Ith'morning I to thee with choyce

Will rank my Prayers, and watch till thou appear.

For thou art not a God that takes

In wickedness delight

Evil with thee no biding makes

Fools or mad men stand not within thy sight.

All workers of iniquity

(92)

## *Psalm vi.*

Thou hat'st ; and them unblest  
Thou wilt destroy that speak a ly  
The bloodi' and guileful man God doth detest.  
But I will in thy mercies dear  
Thy numerous mercies go  
Into thy house ; I in thy fear  
Will towards thy holy temple worship low. 20  
Lord lead me in thy righteousness  
Lead me because of those  
That do observe if I transgress,  
Set thy wayes right before, where my step goes.  
For in his faltring mouth unstable  
No word is firm or sooth  
Their inside, troubles miserable ;  
An open grave their throat, their tongue they smooth.  
God, find them guilty, let them fall  
By their own counsels quell'd ; 30  
Push them in their rebellions all  
Still on ; for against thee they have rebell'd ;  
Then all who trust in thee shall bring  
Their joy, while thou from blame  
Defend'st them, they shall ever sing  
And shall triumph in thee, who love thy name.  
For thou Jehovah wilt be found  
To bless the just man still,  
As with a shield thou wilt surround  
Him with thy lasting favour and good will. 40

### *PSAL. VI. Aug. 13. 1653.*

LORD in thine anger do not reprehend me  
Nor in thy hot displeasure me correct ;  
Pity me Lord for I am much deject  
Am very weak and faint ; heal and amend me,  
For all my bones, that even with anguish ake,  
Are troubled, yea my soul is troubled sore ;  
And thou O Lord how long ? turn Lord, restore  
My soul, O save me for thy goodness sake  
For in death no remembrance is of thee ;  
Who in the grave can celebrate thy praise ? 10  
Wearied I am with sighing out my dayes,  
Nightly my Couch I make a kind of Sea ;

## Miscellaneous Poems.

My Bed I water with my tears ; mine Eie  
Through grief consumes, is waxen old and dark  
Ith' mid'st of all mine enemies that mark.  
Depart all ye that work iniquitie.  
Depart from me, for the voice of my weeping  
The Lord hath heard, the Lord hath heard my prai'r  
My supplication with acceptance fair  
The Lord will own, and have me in his keeping. 20  
Mine enemies shall all be blank and dash't  
With much confusion ; then grow red with shame,  
They shall return in hast the way they came  
And in a moment shall be quite abash't.

PSAL. VII. Aug. 14. 1653.

*Upon the words of Chush the Benjamite  
against him.*

LORD my God to thee I flie  
Save me and secure me under  
Thy protection while I crie  
Least as a Lion (and no wonder)  
He hast to tear my Soul asunder  
Tearing and no rescue nigh.

Lord my God if I have thought  
Or done this, if wickedness  
Be in my hands, if I have wrought  
Ill to him that meant me peace,  
Or to him have render'd less, 10  
And not fre'd my foe for naught ;

Let th'enemy pursue my soul  
And overtake it, let him tread  
My life down to the earth and roul  
In the dust my glory dead,  
In the dust and there out spread  
Lodge it with dishonour foul.



## *Psalm vii.*

Rise Jehovah in thine ire  
Rouze thy self amidst the rage 20  
Of my foes that urge like fire ;  
And wake for me, their furi' asswage ;  
Judgment here thou didst ingage  
And command which I desire.

So th' assemblies of each Nation  
Will surround thee, seeking right,  
Thence to thy glorious habitation  
Return on high and in their sight.  
Jehovah judgeth most upright  
All people from the worlds foundation. 30

Judge me Lord, be judge in this  
According to my righteousness  
And the innocence which is  
Upon me : cause at length to cease  
Of evil men the wickedness  
And their power that do amiss.

But the just establish fast,  
Since thou art the just God that tries  
Hearts and reins. On God is cast  
My defence, and in him lies 40  
In him who both just and wise  
Saves th' upright of Heart at last.

God is a just Judge and severe,  
And God is every day offended ;  
If th' unjust will not forbear,  
His Sword he whets, his Bow hath bended  
Already, and for him intended  
The tools of death, that waits him near.

(His arrows purposely made he  
For them that persecute.) Behold 50  
He travels big with vanitie,  
Trouble he hath conceav'd of old  
As in a womb, and from that mould  
Hath at length brought forth a Lie.

## Miscellaneous Poems.

He dig'd a pit, and delv'd it deep,  
And fell into the pit he made,  
His mischief that due course doth keep,  
Turns on his head, and his ill trade  
Of violence will undelay'd  
Fall on his crown with ruine steep.

60

Then will I Jehovah's praise  
According to his justice raise  
And sing the Name and Deitie  
Of Jehovah the most high.

### PSAL. VIII. Aug. 14. 1653.

O JEHOVAH our Lord how wondrous great  
And glorious is thy name through all the earth?  
So as above the Heavens thy praise to set  
Out of the tender mouths of latest bearth,

Out of the mouths of babes and sucklings thou  
Hast founded strength because of all thy foes  
To stint th'enemy, and slack th'avengers brow  
That bends his rage thy providence to oppose.

When I behold thy Heavens, thy Fingers art,  
The Moon and Starrs which thou so bright hast set, 10  
In the pure firmament, then saith my heart,  
O what is man that thou remembrest yet,

And think'st upon him; or of man begot  
That him thou visit'st and of him art found;  
Scarce to be less then Gods, thou mad'st his lot,  
With honour and with state thou hast him crown'd.

O're the works of thy hand thou mad'st him Lord,  
Thou hast put all under his lordly feet,  
All Flocks, and Herds, by thy commanding word,  
All beasts that in the field or forrest meet.

20

Fowl of the Heavens, and Fish that through the wet  
Sea-paths in shoals do slide. And know no dearth.  
O Jehovah our Lord how wondrous great  
And glorious is thy name through all the earth.

# Psalm lxxx.

April, 1648. J. M.

*Nine of the Psalms done into Metre, wherein all but  
what is in a different Character, are the  
very words of the Text, translated  
from the Original.*

## PSAL. LXXX.

- 1 THOU Shepherd that dost Israel *keep*  
Give ear *in time of need*,  
Who leadest like a flock of sheep  
Thy loved Josephs seed,  
That sitt'st between the Cherubs *bright*  
*Between their wings out-spread*  
Shine forth, *and from thy cloud give light*,  
*And on our foes thy dread.*
- 2 In Ephraims view and Benjamins,  
And in Manasse's sight 10  
Awake \* thy strength, come, and *be seen* \* *Gnoreræ.*  
*To save us by thy might.*
- 3 Turn us again, *thy grace divine*  
*To us O God vouchsafe ;*  
Cause thou thy face on us to shine  
And then we shall be safe.
- 4 Lord God of Hosts, how long wilt thou,  
How long wilt thou declare  
Thy \*smoking wrath, *and angry brow* \* *Gnashanta.* 20  
Against thy peoples praise.
- 5 Thou feed'st them with the bread of tears,  
Their bread with tears they eat,  
And mak'st them \* largely drink the tears \* *Shalish.*  
*Wherwith their cheeks are wet.*
- 6 A strife thou mak'st us *and a prey*  
To every neighbour foe,  
Among themselves they \* laugh, they \* play, \* *Jilgnagu.*  
And \* flouts at us they throw.

## Miscellaneous Poems.

- 7 Return us, *and thy grace divine,*  
O God of Hosts *vouchsafe* 30  
Cause thou thy face on us to shine,  
And then we shall be safe.
- 8 A Vine from *Ægypt* thou hast brought,  
*Thy free love made it thine,*  
And drov'st out Nations *proud and haut*  
To plant this *lovely* Vine.
- 9 Thou did'st prepare for it a place  
And root it deep and fast  
That it *began to grow apace,*  
*And fill'd the land at last.* 40
- 10 With her *green shade that cover'd all,*  
The Hills were *over-spread*  
Her Bows as *high as Cedars tall*  
*Advanc'd their lofty head.*
- 11 Her branches *on the western side*  
Down to the Sea she sent,  
And *upward* to that river *wide*  
Her other branches *went.*
- 12 Why hast thou laid her Hedges low  
And brok'n down her Fence, 50  
That all may pluck her, as they go,  
*With rudest violence?*
- 13 The *tusked* Boar out of the wood  
Up turns it by the roots,  
Wild Beasts there brouze, and make their food  
*Her Grapes and tender Shoots.*
- 14 Return now, God of Hosts, look down  
From Heav'n, thy Seat divine,  
Behold *us, but without a frown,*  
And visit this *thy* Vine. 60
- 15 Visit this Vine, which thy right hand  
Hath set, and planted *long,*  
And the young branch, that for thy self  
Thou hast made firm and strong.
- 16 But now it is consum'd with fire,  
And cut *with Axes* down,  
They perish at thy dreadfull ire,  
At thy rebuke and frown.
- 17 Upon the man of thy right hand  
Let thy *good* hand be *laid,* 70

## Psalm lxxxi.

- Upon the Son of Man, whom thou  
Strong for thyself hast made.  
18 So shall we not go back from thee  
    *To wayes of sin and shame,*  
Quick'n us thou, then *gladly* wee  
    Shall call upon thy Name.  
Return us, *and thy grace divine*  
    Lord God of Hosts *voutsafe,*  
Cause thou thy face on us to shine,  
    And then we shall be safe.

80

## PSAL. LXXXI.

- 1 To God our strength sing loud, *and clear,*  
    Sing loud to God *our King,*  
To Jacobs God, *that all may hear*  
    Loud acclamations ring.  
2 Prepare a Hymn, prepare a Song  
    The Timbrel hither bring  
The *cheerfull* Psaltry bring along  
    And Harp *with pleasant string.*  
3 Blow, *as is wont,* in the new Moon  
    With Trumpets *lofty sound,*  
Th' appointed time, the day wheron  
    Our solemn Feast *comes round.*  
4 This was a Statute *giv'n of old*  
    For Israel *to observe*  
A Law of Jacobs God, *to hold*  
    *From whence they might not swerve.*  
5 This he a Testimony ordain'd  
    In Joseph, *not to change,*  
When as he pass'd through Ægypt land;  
    The Tongue I heard, was strange.  
6 From burden, *and from slavish toyle*  
    I set his shoulder free;  
His hands from pots, *and mirie soyle*  
    Deliver'd were *by me.*  
7 When trouble did thee sore assaile,  
    *On me then* didst thou call,

10

20

## Miscellaneous Poems.

- And I to free thee *did not faile,*  
*And led thee out of thrall.*  
I answer'd thee in \*thunder deep      *\* Be Sether ragnam.*  
With clouds encompass'd round ;      30  
I tri'd thee at the water *steep*  
Of Meriba *renown'd.*  
8 Hear O my people, *heark'n well,*  
I testifie to thee  
*Thou antient flock of Israel,*  
If thou wilt list to mee,  
9 Through out the land of thy abode  
No alien God shall be  
Nor shalt thou to a forein God  
In honour bend thy knee.      40  
10 I am the Lord thy God which brought  
Thee out of Ægypt land  
Ask large enough, and I, *besought,*  
Will grant thy full demand.  
11 And yet my people would not *hear,*  
*Nor* hearken to my voice ;  
And Israel *whom I lov'd so dear*  
Mislik'd me for his choice.  
12 Then did I leave them to their will  
And to their wandring mind ;      50  
Their own conceits they follow'd still  
Their own devises blind.  
13 O that my people would *be wise*  
*To serve me all their daies,*  
And O that Israel would *advise*  
*To walk my righteous waies.*  
14 Then would I soon bring down their foes  
*That now so proudly rise,*  
And turn my hand against *all those*  
*That are* their enemies.      60  
15 Who hate the Lord should *then be fain*  
*To bow to him and bend,*  
But *they, His people,* should remain,  
Their time should have no end.  
16 And he would feed them *from the shock*  
With flower of finest wheat,  
And satisfie them from the rock  
With Honey *for their Meat.*

# *Psalms lxxxii, lxxxiii.*

## *PSAL. LXXXII.*

- 1 GOD in the \* great \* assembly stands      \* *Bagnadath-el.*  
    *Of Kings and lordly States,*  
    Among the gods † on both his hands      † *Bekerev.*  
    He judges and debates.
- 2 How long will ye \* pervert the right      \* *Tishphetu*  
    With \* judgment false and wrong           *gnavel.*  
    Favouring the wicked *by your might,*  
    *Who thence grow bold and strong?*
- 3 \* Regard the \* weak and fatherless      \* *Shiphtu-dal.*  
    \* Dispatch the \* poor mans cause,      10  
    And † raise the man in deep distress  
    By † just and equal Lawes.      † *Hatzdiku.*
- 4 Defend the poor and desolate,  
    And rescue from the hands  
    Of wicked men the low estate  
    Of him *that help demands.*
- 5 They know not nor will understand,  
    In darkness they walk on,  
    The Earths foundations all are \* mov'd      \* *Jimmotu.*  
    And \* out of order gon.      20
- 6 I said that ye were Gods, yea all  
    The Sons of God most high
- 7 But ye shall die like men, and fall  
    As other Princes *die.*
- 8 Rise God, \* judge thou the earth *in might,*  
    This *wicked* earth \* redress,      \* *Shiphta.*  
    For thou art he who shalt by right  
    The Nations all possess.

## *PSAL. LXXXIII.*

- 1 BE not thou silent *now at length*  
    O God hold not thy peace,  
    Sit not thou still O God of *strength*  
    *We cry and do not cease.*  
( 101 )

*Miscellaneous Poems.*

- 2 For lo thy *furious* foes *now* \* swell  
And \* storm outrageously, \* *Jehemajun.*  
And they that hate thee *proud and fell*  
Exalt their heads full hie.
- 3 Against thy people they † contrive † *Jagnarimu.*  
† Their Plots and Counsels deep, † *Sod.* 10  
\* Them to ensnare they chiefly strive \* *Jithjagnatsu gnal.*  
\* Whom thou dost hide and keep. \* *Tsephuneca.*
- 4 Come let us cut them off say they,  
Till they no Nation be  
That Israels name for ever may  
Be lost in memory.
- 5 For they consult † with all their might, † *Lev jachdau.*  
And all as one in mind  
Themselves against thee they unite  
And in firm union bind. 20
- 6 The tents of Edom, and the brood  
Of *scornful* Ishmael,  
Moab, with them of Hagars blood  
*That in the Desert dwell,*
- 7 Gebal and Ammon *there conspire,*  
And *hateful* Amalec,  
The Philistims, and they of Tyre  
*Whose bounds the Sea doth check.*
- 8 With them *great* Asshur also bands  
*And doth confirm the knot,* 30  
*All these have lent their armed hands*  
To aid the Sons of Lot.
- 9 Do to them as to Midian *bold*  
*That wasted all the Coast.*  
To Sisera, and as *is told*  
*Thou didst to Jabins hoast,*  
*When at the brook of Kishon old*  
*They were repulst and slain,*
- 10 At Endor quite cut off, and rowl'd  
As dung upon the plain. 40
- 11 As Zeb and Oreb evil sped  
So let their Princes speed  
As Zeba, and Zalmunna *bled*  
So let their Princes *bleed.*
- 12 *For they amidst their pride* have said  
By right now shall we seize



## Psalm lxxxiv.

- † *Neoth Elohim*  
*bears both.*
- Gods houses, and *will now invade*  
 † Their stately Palaces.
- 13 My God, oh make them as a wheel  
*No quiet let them find,* 50  
 Giddy and *restless* let *them reel*  
 Like stubble from the wind.
- 14 As *when* an *aged* wood takes fire  
*Which on a sudden straits,*  
 The *greedy* flame runs hier and hier  
 Till all the mountains blaze,
- 15 So with thy whirlwind them pursue,  
 And with thy tempest chase ;
- 16 \* And till they \* yield thee honour due, \* *They seek thy*  
 Lord fill with shame their face. *Name. Heb.*
- 17 Asham'd and troubl'd let them be, 60  
 Troubl'd and sham'd for ever,  
 Ever confounded, and so die  
 With shame, *and scape it never.*
- 18 Then shall they know that thou whose name  
 Jehova is alone,  
 Art the most high, *and thou the same*  
 O're all the earth *art one.*

## PSAL. LXXXIV.

- 1 How lovely are thy dwellings fair !  
 O Lord of Hoasts, how dear  
 The *pleasant* Tabernacles are !  
*Where thou do'st dwell so near.*
- 2 My Soul doth long and almost die  
 Thy Courts O Lord to see,  
 My heart and flesh aloud do crie,  
 O living God, for thee.
- 3 There ev'n the Sparrow *freed from wrong*  
 Hath found a house of *rest,* 10  
 The Swallow there, to lay her young  
 Hath built her *brooding* nest,  
 Ev'n *by* thy Altars Lord of Hoasts  
*They find their safe abode,*  
*And home they fly from round the Coasts*  
*Toward thee, My King, my God.*

## Miscellaneous Poems.

- 4 Happy, who in thy house reside  
Where thee they ever praise,  
5 Happy, whose strength in thee doth bide,  
And in their hearts thy waies. 20  
6 They pass through Baca's *thirstie* Vale,  
*That dry and barren ground*  
As through a fruitfull watry Dale  
Where Springs and Showrs abound.  
7 They journey on from strength to strength  
*With joy and gladsom cheer*  
*Till all before our God at length*  
In Sion do appear.  
8 Lord God of Hoasts hear *now* my praier  
O Jacobs God give ear, 30  
9 Thou God our shield look on the face  
Of thy anointed *dear*.  
10 For one day in thy Courts *to be*  
*Is better, and more blest*  
*Then in the joyes of Vanity,*  
*A thousand daies at best.*  
I in the temple of my God  
Had rather keep a dore,  
Then dwell in Tents, *and rich abode*  
With Sin *for evermore*. 40  
11 For God the Lord both Sun and Shield  
Gives grace and glory *bright*,  
No good from them shall be with-held  
Whose waies are just and right.  
12 Lord God of Hoasts *that rain'st on high,*  
That man is *truly* blest  
Who *only* on thee doth relie.  
And in thee only rest.

### PSAL. LXXXV.

- 1 THY Land to favour graciously  
Thou hast not Lord been slack,  
Thou hast from *hard* Captivity  
Returned Jacob back.

*Psalm lxxxv.*

- 2 Th' iniquity thou didst forgive  
*That wrought thy people woe,*  
 And all their Sin, *that did thee grieve*  
*Hast hid where none shall know.*
- 3 Thine anger all thou hadst remov'd,  
 And *calmly* didst return  
 From thy † fierce wrath which we had prov'd † Heb. *The burning heat of thy wrath.*  
 Far worse then fire to burn.
- 4 God of our saving health and peace,  
 Turn us, and us restore,  
 Thine indignation cause to cease  
 Toward us, *and chide no more.*
- 5 Wilt thou be angry without end,  
 For ever angry thus  
 Wilt thou thy frowning ire extend  
 From age to age on us? 20
- 6 Wilt thou not \* turn, and *hear our voice* \* Heb. *Turn to quicken us.*  
 And us again \* revive,  
 That so thy people may rejoyce  
 By thee preserv'd alive.
- 7 Cause us to see thy goodness Lord,  
 To us thy mercy shew  
 Thy saving health to us afford  
*And life in us renew.*
- 8 *And now* what God the Lord will speak  
 I will *go strait* and hear, 30  
 For to his people he speaks peace  
 And to his Saints *full dear*,  
 To his dear Saints he will speak peace,  
 But let them never more  
 Return to folly, *but surcease*  
*To trespass as before.*
- 9 Surely to such as do him fear  
 Salvation is at hand  
 And glory shall *ere long appear*  
*To dwell within our Land.* 40
- 10 Mercy and Truth *that long were miss'd*  
 Now *joyfully* are met  
 Sweet Peace and Righteousness have kiss'd  
*And hand in hand are set.*
- 11 Truth from the earth *like to a flower*  
 Shall bud and blossom *then,*

## Miscellaneous Poems.

- And Justice from her heavenly bow  
 Look down *on mortal men*.
- 12 The Lord will also then bestow  
 Whatever thing is good 50  
 Our Land shall forth in plenty throw  
 Her fruits *to be our food*.
- 13 Before him Righteousness shall go  
*His Royal Harbinger*,  
 Then \* will he come, and not be slow \* Heb. He will  
 His footsteps cannot err. *set his steps*  
*to the way.*

### PSAL. LXXXVI.

- 1 THY *gracious* ear, O Lord, encline,  
 O hear me *I thee pray*,  
 For I am poor, and almost pine  
 With need, *and sad decay*.
- 2 Preserve my soul, for † I have trod † Heb. I am good,  
 Thy waies, and love the just, *loving, a doer of*  
 Save thou thy servant O my God *good and holy*  
 Who *still* in thee doth trust. *things.*
- 3 Pitty me Lord for daily thee  
 I call; 4 O make rejoyce 10  
 Thy Servants Soul; for Lord to thee  
 I lift my soul *and voice*,
- 5 For thou art good, thou Lord art prone  
 To pardon, thou to all  
 Art full of mercy, thou *alone*  
 To them that on thee call.
- 6 Unto my supplication Lord  
 Give ear, and to the crie  
 Of my *incessant* praiers afford  
 Thy hearing graciously. 20
- 7 I in the day of my distress  
 Will call on thee *for aid*;  
 For thou wilt *grant me free access*  
*And answer, what I pray'd*.
- 8 Like thee among the gods is none  
 O Lord, nor any works

## Psalm lxxxvi.

*Of all that other Gods have done*

*Like to thy glorious works.*

9 The Nations all whom thou hast made

*Shall come, and all shall frame*

30

To bow them low before thee Lord,

*And glorifie thy name.*

10 For great thou art, and wonders great

*By thy strong hand are done,*

*Thou in thy everlasting Seat*

*Remainest God alone.*

11 Teach me O Lord thy way *most right,*

*I in thy truth will bide,*

To fear thy name my heart unite

*So shall it never slide.*

40

12 Thee will I praise O Lord my God

*Thee honour, and adore*

With my whole heart, and blaze abroad

*Thy name for ever more.*

13 For great thy mercy is toward me,

*And thou hast free'd my Soul*

Eev'n from the lowest Hell set free

*From deepest darkness foul.*

14 O God the proud against me rise

*And violent men are met*

50

To seek my life, and in their eyes

*No fear of thee have set.*

15 But thou Lord art the God most mild

*Radiest thy grace to shew,*

Slow to be angry, and *art stil'd*

*Most mercifull, most true.*

16 O turn to me *thy face at length,*

*And me have mercy on,*

Unto thy servant give thy strength,

*And save thy hand-maids Son.*

60

17 Some sign of good to me afford,

*And let my foes then see*

And be asham'd, because thou Lord

*Do'st help and comfort me.*

# Miscellaneous Poems.

## PSAL. LXXXVII.

- 1 AMONG the holy Mountains *high*  
Is his foundation fast,  
*There Seated in his Sanctuary,*  
*His Temple there is plac't.*
- 2 Sions *fair* Gates the Lord loves more  
Then all the dwellings *faire*  
Of Jacobs *Land*, though there be store,  
*And all within his care.*
- 3 City of God, most glorious things  
Of thee *abroad* are spoke ; 10
- 4 I mention Egypt, *where proud Kings*  
*Did our forefathers yoke,*  
I mention Babel to my friends,  
Philistia *full of scorn,*  
And Tyre with Ethiops *utmost ends,*  
Lo this man there was born :
- 5 But *twice that praise shall in our ear*  
Be said of Sion *last*  
This and this man was born in her,  
High God shall fix her fast. 20
- 6 The Lord shall write it in a Scrowle  
That ne're shall be out-worn  
When he the Nations doth enrowle  
That this man there was born.
- 7 Both they who sing, and they who dance  
*With sacred Songs are there,*  
In thee *fresh brooks, and soft streams glance*  
*And all my fountains clear.*

## PSAL. LXXXVIII.

- 1 LORD God that dost me save and keep,  
All day to thee I cry ;  
And all night long, before thee *weep*  
Before thee *prostrate lie.*

*Psalm lxxxviii.*

- 2 Into thy presence let my praier  
*With sighs devout ascend*  
 And to my cries, that *ceaseless are*,  
 Thine ear with favour bend.
- 3 For cloy'd with woes and trouble store  
 Surcharg'd my Soul doth lie, 10  
 My life *at death's uncherful dore*  
 Unto the grave draws nigh.
- 4 Reck'n'd I am with them that pass  
 Down to the *dismal* pit  
 I am a \* man, but weak alas  
 And for that name unfit. \* Heb. *A man*  
*without manly*  
*strength.*
- 5 From life discharg'd and parted quite  
 Among the dead *to sleep*,  
 And like the slain *in bloody fight*  
 That in the grave lie *deep*. 20
- Whom thou rememberest no more,  
 Dost never more regard,  
 Them from thy hand deliver'd o're  
*Deaths hideous house hath barr'd.*
- 6 Thou in the lowest pit *profound*  
 Hast set me *all forlorn*,  
 Where thickest darkness *hovers round*,  
 In horrid deeps *to mourn*.
- 7 Thy wrath *from which no shelter saves*  
 Full sore doth press on me; 30  
 \* Thou break'st upon me all thy waves, \* The Heb.  
 \* And all thy waves break me. *bears both.*
- 8 Thou dost my friends from me estrange,  
 And mak'st me odious,  
 Me to them odious, *for they change*,  
 And I here pent up thus.
- 9 Through sorrow, and affliction great  
 Mine eye grows dim and dead,  
 Lord all the day I thee entreat,  
 My hands to thee I spread. 40
- 10 Wilt thou do wonders on the dead,  
 Shall the deceas'd arise  
 And praise thee *from their loathsom bed*  
*With pale and hollow eyes?*
- 11 Shall they thy loving kindness tell  
 On whom the grave *hath hold*,

## Miscellaneous Poems.

- Or they *who* in perdition dwell  
Thy faithfulness *unfold*?
- 12 In darkness can thy mighty *hand*  
Or wondrous acts be known,  
Thy justice in the *gloomy* land  
Of *dark* oblivion?
- 13 But I to thee O Lord do cry  
*E're yet my life be spent,*  
And *up to thee* my praier doth *hie*  
Each morn, and thee prevent.
- 14 Why wilt thou Lord my soul forsake,  
And hide thy face from me,
- 15 That am already bruise'd, and † shake † Heb. *Prae Con-*  
With terror sent from thee; *cussione.* 60  
Bruise'd, and afflicted and *so low*  
As ready to expire,  
While I thy terrors undergo  
Astonish'd with thine ire.
- 16 Thy fierce wrath over me doth flow  
Thy threatnings cut me through.
- 17 All day they round about me go,  
Like waves they me persue.
- 18 Lover and friend thou hast remov'd  
And sever'd from me far. 70  
They *fly me now* whom I have lov'd,  
And as in darkness are.

*Finis.*



# Passages from Prose Writings.

## A COLLECTION OF PASSAGES TRANSLATED IN THE PROSE WRITINGS.

[From *Of Reformation in England*, 1641.]

Ah *Constantine*, of how much ill was cause  
Not thy Conversion, but those rich remains  
That the first wealthy *Pope* receiv'd of thee.

DANTE, *Inf.* xix. 115.

Founded in chast and humble Poverty,  
'Gainst them that rais'd thee dost thou lift thy horn,  
Impudent whoore, where hast thou plac'd thy hope?  
In thy Adulterers, or thy ill got wealth?  
Another *Constantine* comes not in hast.

PETRARCA, *Son.* 108.

And to be short, at last his guid him brings  
Into a goodly valley, where he sees  
A mighty mass of things strangely confus'd  
Things that on earth were lost or were abus'd.

. . . . .

Then past he to a flowry Mountain green,  
Which once smelt sweet, now stinks as odiously;  
This was that gift (if you the truth will have)  
That *Constantine* to good *Sylvestro* gave.

ARIOSTO, *Orl. Fur.* xxxiv. 80.

[From *Reason of Church Government*, 1641.]

When I die, let the Earth be roul'd in flames.

## Miscellaneous Poems.

[From *Apology for Smectymnuus*, 1642.]

Laughing to teach the truth  
What hinders? as some teachers give to Boys  
Junkets and knacks, that they may learne apace.

HORACE, *Sat.* i. 24.

Jesting decides great things  
Stronglier, and better oft than earnest can.

*Ibid.* i. 10. 14.

'Tis you that say it, not I: you do the deeds  
And your ungodly deeds find me the words.

SOPHOCLES, *Elec.* 624.

[From *Areopagitica*, 1644.]

This is true Liberty, when free-born Men,  
Having to advise the Public, may speak free,  
Which he who can, and will, deserv's high praise;  
Who neither can nor will, may hold his peace,  
What can be juster in a state then this?

EURIPIDES, *Supp.* 438.

[From *Tetrachordon*, 1645.]

Whom do we count a good man, whom but he  
Who keeps the laws and statutes of the Senate,  
Who judges in great suits and controversies,  
Whose witness and opinion wins the cause?  
But his own house, and the whole neighbourhood  
See his foul inside through his whited skin.

HORACE, *Ep.* i. 16. 40.

[From *The Tenure of Kings and Magistrates*, 1649.]

There can be slaine  
No sacrifice to God more acceptable  
Than an unjust and wicked king.

SENECA, *Herc. Fur.* 922.

# Collection of Passages.

[From *History of Britain*, 1670.]

*Brutus thus addresses Diana in the country of Leogecia.*

Goddess of Shades, and Huntress, who at will  
Walk'st on the rowling Sphear, and through the deep,  
On thy third Reign the Earth look now, and tell  
What Land, what Seat of rest thou bidst me seek,  
What certain Seat, where I may worship thee  
For aye, with Temples vow'd, and Virgin quires.

*To whom sleeping before the altar, Diana in a Vision that night thus  
answer'd.*

*Brutus* far to the West, in th' Ocean wide  
Beyond the Realm of *Gaul*, a Land there lies,  
Sea-girt it lies, where Giants dwelt of old,  
Now void, it fits thy People; thether bend  
Thy course, there shalt thou find a lasting seat,  
There to thy Sons another *Troy* shall rise,  
And *Kings* be born of thee, whose dreddeed might  
Shall aw the World, and conquer Nations bold.



Joannis Miltoni

LONDINENSIS

POEMATATA.

Quorum pleraque intra

Annum ætatis Vigesium

Conscripsit.

*Nunc primum Edita.*



LONDINI,

Typis R. R. Prostant ad Insignia Principis,  
in Cœmeterio D. Pauli, apud Humphredum

Moseley. 1645.



HÆC quæ sequuntur de Authore testimonia, tametsi ipse intelligebat non tam de se quam supra se esse dicta, eo quod præclaro ingenio viri, nec non amici ita fere solent laudare, ut omnia suis potius virtutibus, quam veritati congruentia nimis cupide affingant, noluit tamen horum egregiam in se voluntatem non esse notam; Cum alii præsertim ut id faceret magnopere suaderent. Dum enim nimix laudis invidiam totis ab se viribus amolitur, sibique quod plus æquo est non attributum esse mavult, judicium interim hominum cordatorum atque illustrium quin summo sibi honori ducat, negare non potest.

*Joannes Baptista Mansus, Marchio Villensis  
Neapolitanus ad Joannem Miltonium  
Anglum.*

Ut mens, forma, decor, facies, mos, si pietas sic,  
Non Anglus, verùm herclè Angelus ipse fores.

*Ad Joannem Miltonem Anglum triplici poeseos  
laureâ coronandum Græcâ nimirum, Latinâ,  
atque Hetruscâ, Epigramma Joannis  
Salsilli Romani.*

CEDE Meles, cedat depressa Minciùs urna;  
Sebetus Tassum desinat usque loqui;  
At Thamesis victor cunctis ferat altior undas  
Nam per te Milto par tribus unus erit.

# Miscellaneous Poems.

## *Ad Joannem Miltonum.*

GRÆCIA Mæonidem, jactet sibi Roma Maronem,  
Anglia Miltonum jactat utrique parem.  
Selvaggi.

## *Al Signor Gio. Milioni Nobile Inglese.*

### ODE.

*Ergimi all' Etra ò Clio  
Perche di stelle intreccierò corona  
Non più del Biondo Dio  
La Fronde eterna in Pindo, e in Elicona,  
Diensi a merto maggior, maggiori i fregi,  
A' celeste virtù celesti pregi.*

*Non puo del tempo edace  
Rimaner preda, eterno alto valore  
Non puo l' oblio rapace  
Furar dalle memorie eccelso onore,  
Su l' arco di mia cetra un dardo forte  
Virtù m' adatti, e ferirò la morte.*

10

*Del Ocean profondo  
Cinta dagli ampi gorghi Anglia risiede  
Separata dal mondo,  
Però che il suo valor l' umano eccede:  
Questa feconda sà produrre Eroi,  
Ch' hanno a ragion del sovruman tra noi.*

*Alla virtù sbandita  
Danno ne i petti lor fido ricetta,  
Quella gli è sol gradita,  
Perche in lei san trovar gioia, e diletto;  
Ridillo tu Giovanni e mostra in tanto  
Con tua vera virtù, vero il mio Canto.*

20



## Ode.

*Lungi dal Patrio lido  
Spinse Zeusi l' industrie ardente brama ;  
Ch' udio d' Helena il grido  
Con aurea tromba rimbombar la fama,  
E per poterla effigiare al paro  
Dalle più belle Idee trasse il priù raro.*

30

*Così l' Ape Ingegnosa  
Trae con industria il suo liquor pregiato  
Dal giglio e dalla rosa,  
E quanti vaghi fiori ornano il prato ;  
Formano un dolce suon diverse Chorde,  
Fan varie voci melodia concorde.*

*Di bella gloria amante  
Milton dal Ciel natio per varie parti  
Le peregrine piante  
Volgesti a ricercar scienze, ed arti ;  
Del Gallo regnator vedesti i Regni,  
E dell' Italia ancor gl' Eroi più degni.*

40

*Fabro quasi divino  
Sol virtù rintracciando il tuo pensiero  
Vide in ogni confino  
Chi di nobil valor calca il sentiero ;  
L' ottimo dal miglior dopo scegliea  
Per fabbricar d' ogni virtù l' Idea.*

*Quanti nacquero in Flora  
O in lei del parlar Tosco appreser l' arte,  
La cui memoria onora  
Il mondo fatta eterna in dotte carte,  
Volesti ricercar per tuo tesoro,  
E parlasti con lor nell' opre loro.*

50

*Nell' altera Babelle  
Per te il parlar confuse Giove in vano,  
Che per varie favelle  
Di se stessa trofeo cadde su'l piano :  
Ch' Ode oltr' all' Anglia il suo più degno Idioma  
Spagna, Francia, Toscana, e Grecia e Roma.*

60

## Miscellaneous Poems.

*I piu profondi arcani  
Ch' occulta la natura e in cielo e in terra  
Ch' a Ingegni sovrumani  
Tropo avara tal' hor gli chiude, e serra,  
Chiaramente conosci, e giungi al fine  
Della moral virtude al gran confine.*

*Non batta il Tempo l' ale,  
Fermisi immoto, e in un ferminsi gl' anni,  
Che di virtù immortale  
Scorron di troppo ingiuriosi a i danni :  
Che s' opre degne di Poema o storia  
Furon già, l' hai presenti alla memoria.*

70

*Dammi tua dolce Cetra  
Se vuoi ch' io dica del tuo dolce canto,  
Ch' inalzandoti all' Etra  
Di farti huomo celeste ottiene il vanto,  
Il Tamigi il dirà che gl' è concesso  
Per te suo cigno pareggiar Permesso.*

*Io che in riva del Arno  
Tento spiegar tuo merto alto, e preclaro  
So che fatico indarno,  
E ad ammirar, non a lodarlo imparo ;  
Freno dunque la lingua, e ascolto il core  
Che ti prende a lodar con lo stupore.*

80

Del sig. Antonio Francini gentilhuomo Fiorentino.

*Joanni Miltoni Londiniensi.*

JOANNI MILTONI

LONDINIENSI.

Juveni Patria, virtutibus eximio,

*VIRO qui multa peregrinatione, studio cuncta orbis terrarum loca perspexit, ut novus Ulysses omnia ubique ab omnibus apprehenderet.*

*Polyglotto, in cujus ore linguae jam deperditae sic reviviscunt, ut idiomatica omnia sint in ejus laudibus infacunda; Et jure ea percallet ut admirationes & plausus populorum ab propria sapientia excitatos, intelligat.*

*Illi, cujus animi dotes corporisque, sensus ad admirationem commovent, & per ipsam motum cuique auferunt; cujus opera ad plausus hortantur, sed vastitate<sup>1</sup> vocem laudatoribus adimunt.*

*Cui in Memoria totus Orbis: In intellectu Sapientia: in voluntate ardor gloriae: in ore Eloquentia: Harmonicos celestium Sphaerarum sonitus Astronomia Duce audienti; Characteres mirabilium naturae per quos Dei magnitudo describitur magistra Philosophia legenti; Antiquitatum latebras, vetustatis excidia, eruditionis ambages comite assidua autorum Lectione.*

*Exquirenti, restauranti, percurrenti.*

*At cur nitor in arduum?*

*Illi in cujus virtutibus evulgandis ora Famæ non sufficiant, nec hominum stupor in laudandis satis est, Reverentiae & amoris ergo hoc ejus meritis debitum admirationis tributum offert Carolus Datus Patricius Florentinus.*

*Tanto homini servus, tantæ virtutis amator.*

<sup>1</sup> vastitate] venustate 1673.

# Miscellaneous Poems.

## ELEGIARUM

### Liber Primus.

#### Elegia prima ad *Carolum Diodatum*.

TANDEM, chare, tuæ mihi pervenere tabellæ,  
Pertulit & voces nuntia charta tuas,  
Pertulit occiduâ Devæ Cestrensis ab orâ  
Vergivium prono quâ petit amne salum.  
Multùm crede juvat terras aluisse remotas  
Pectus amans nostri, tamque fidele caput,  
Quòdque mihi lepidum tellus longinqua sodalem  
Debet, at unde brevi reddere jussa velit.  
Me tenet urbs reflûâ quam Thamesis alluit undâ,  
Meque nec invitum patria dulcis habet.  
Jam nec arundiferum mihi cura revisere Camum,  
Nec dudum vetiti me laris angit amor.  
Nuda nec arva placent, umbrasque negantia molles,  
Quàm male Phœbicolis convenit ille locus!  
Nec duri libet usque minas perferre magistri  
Cæteraque ingenio non subeunda meo.  
Si sit hoc exilium patrios adiisse penates,  
Et vacuum curis otia grata sequi,  
Non ego vel profugi nomen, sortemve recuso,  
Lætus & exilii conditione fruor.  
O utinam vates nunquam graviora tulisset  
Ille Tomitano flebilis exul agro;  
Non tunc Jonio quicquam cessisset Homero  
Neve foret victo laus tibi prima Maro.  
Tempora nam licet hîc placidis dare libera Musis,  
Et totum rapiunt me mea vita libri.  
Excipit hinc fessum sinuosi pompa theatri,  
Et vocat ad plausus garrula scena suos.

## *Elegia Prima.*

Seu catus auditur senior, seu prodigus hæres,  
Seu procus, aut positâ casside miles adest, 30  
Sive decennali fœcundus lite patronus  
Detonat inculto barbara verba foro,  
Sæpe vafer gnato succurrit servus amanti,  
Et nasum rigidi fallit ubique Patris ;  
Sæpe novos illic virgo mirata calores  
Quid sit amor nescit, dum quoque nescit, amat.  
Sive cruentatum furiosa Tragœdia sceptrum  
Quassat, & effusis crinibus ora rotat,  
Et dolet, & specto, juvat & spectasse dolendo,  
Interdum & lacrymis dulcis amaror inest : 40  
Seu puer infelix indelibata reliquit  
Gaudia, & abrupto flendus amore cadit,  
Seu ferus è tenebris iterat Styga criminis ultor  
Conscia funereo pectora torre movens,  
Seu mæret Pelopeia domus, feu nobilis Ili,  
Aut luit incestos aula Creontis avos.  
Sed neque sub tecto semper nec in urbe latemus,  
Irrita nec nobis tempora veris eunt.  
Nos quoque lucus habet vicinâ consitus ulmo  
Atque suburbani nobilis umbra loci. 50  
Sæpius hic blandas spirantia sydera flammæ  
Virgineos videas præteriisse choros.  
Ah quoties dignæ stupui miracula formæ  
Quæ possit senium vel reparare Jovis ;  
Ah quoties vidi superantia lumina gemmas,  
Atque faces quotquot volvit uterque polus ;  
Collaque bis vivi Pelopis quæ brachia vincant,  
Quæque fluit puro nectare tincta via,  
Et decus eximium frontis, tremulosque capillos, 60  
Aurea quæ fallax retia tendit Amor.  
Pellacesque genas, ad quas hyacinthina sordet  
Purpura, & ipse tui floris, Adoni, rubor.  
Cedite laudatæ toties Heroides olim,  
Et quæcunque vagum cepit amica Jovem.  
Cedite Achæmeniaë turritâ fronte puellæ,  
Et quot Susa colunt, Memnoniamque Ninon.  
Vos etiam Danaë fasces submittite Nymphæ,  
Et vos Iliacæ, Romuleæque nurus.  
Nec Pompeianas Tarpëia Musa columnas  
Jactet, & Ausoniis plena theatra stolis. 70  
(123)

## Miscellaneous Poems.

Gloria Virginibus debetur prima Britannis,  
Extera sat tibi sit fœmina posse sequi.  
Tuque urbs Dardaniis Londinum structa colonis  
Turrigerum latè conspicienda caput,  
Tu nimium felix intra tua mœnia claudis  
Quicquid formosi pendulus orbis habet.  
Non tibi tot cælo scintillant astra sereno  
Endymioneæ turba ministra deæ,  
Quot tibi conspicuæ formæque auróque puellæ  
Per medias radiant turba videnda vias. 80  
Creditur huc geminis venisse invecta columbis  
Alma pharetrigero milite cincta Venus,  
Huic Cnidon, & riguas Simoentis flumine valles,  
Huic Paphon, & roseam posthabitura Cypron.  
Ast ego, dum pueri sinit indulgentia cæci,  
Mœnia quàm subitò linquere fausta paro;  
Et vitare procul malefidæ infamia Circes  
Atria, divini Molyos usus ope.  
Stat quoque juncosas Cami remeare paludes,  
Atque iterum raucæ murmur adire Scholæ. 90  
Interea fidi parvum cape munus amici,  
Paucaque in alternos verba coacta modos.

Elegia secunda, Anno ætatis 17.

*In obitum Præconis Academici Cantabrigiensis.*

TE, qui conspicuus baculo fulgente solebas  
Palladium toties ore ciere gregem,  
Ultima præconum præconem te quoque sæva  
Mors rapit, officio nec favet ipsa suo.  
Candidiora licet fuerint tibi tempora plumis  
Sub quibus accipimus delituisse Jovem,  
O dignus tamen Hæmonio juvenescere succo,  
Dignus in Æsonios vivere posse dies,  
Dignus quem Stygiis medicâ revocaret ab undis  
Arte Coronides, sæpe rogante dea. 10  
Tu si jussus eras acies accire togatas,  
Et celer à Phoebō nuntius ire tuo,  
Talis in Iliacâ stabat Cyllenius aula  
Alipes, æthereâ missus ab arce Patris.

## *Elegia Tertia.*

Talis & Eurybates ante ora furentis Achillei  
Rettulit Atridæ jussa severa ducis.  
Magna sepulchrorum regina, satellites Averni  
Sæva nimis Musis, Palladi sæva nimis,  
Quin illos rapias qui pondus inutile terræ,  
Turba quidem est telis ista petenda tuis.  
Vestibus hunc igitur pullis Academia luge,  
Et madeant lachrymis nigra feretra tuis.  
Fundat & ipsa modos querebunda Elegiæ tristes,  
Personet & totis nœnia mœsta scholis.

20

*Elegia tertia, Anno ætatis 17.*

*In obitum Præsulis Wintoniensis.*

MÆSTUS eram, & tacitus nullo comitante sedebam,  
Hærebantque animo tristia plura meo,  
Protinus en subiit funestæ cladis Imago  
Fecit in Angliaco quam Libitina solo ;  
Dum procerum ingressa est splendentes marmore turres  
Dira sepulchrali mors metuenda face ;  
Pulsavitque auro gravidos & jaspide muros,  
Nec metuit satrapum sternere falce greges.  
Tunc memini clarique ducis, fratrisque verendi  
Intempestivis ossa cremata rogis.  
Et memini Heroum quos vidit ad æthera raptos,  
Flevit & amissos Belgia tota duces.  
At te præcipuè luxi dignissime præsul,  
Wintoniæque olim gloria magna tuæ ;  
Delicui fletu, & tristi sic ore querebar,  
Mors fera Tartareo diva secunda Jovi,  
Nonne satis quod sylva tuas persentiat iras,  
Et quod in herbosos jus tibi detur agros,  
Quodque afflata tuo marcescant lilia tabo,  
Et crocus, & pulchræ Cypridi sacra rosa,  
Nec sinis ut semper fluvio contermina quercus  
Miretur lapsus prætereuntis aquæ ?  
Et tibi succumbit liquido quæ plurima cœlo  
Evehitur pennis quamlibet augur avis,  
Et quæ mille nigris errant animalia sylvis,  
Et quod alunt mutum Proteos antra pecus.

10

20

## Miscellaneous Poems.

Invida, tanta tibi cum sit concessa potestas,  
Quid juvat humanâ tingere cæde manus?  
Nobileque in pectus certas acuisse sagittas,  
Semideamque animam sede fugâsse suâ? 30  
Taliam dum lacrymans alto sub pectore volvo,  
Roscidus occiduis Hesperus exit aquis,  
Et Tartessiaci submerserat æquore currum  
Phœbus, ab eöo littore mensus iter.  
Nec mora, membra cavo posui refovenda cubili,  
Condiderant oculos noxque soporque meos.  
Cum mihi visus eram lato spatiarier agro,  
Heu nequit ingenium visa referre meum.  
Illic puniceâ radiabant omnia luce,  
Ut matutino cum juga sole rubent. 40  
Ac veluti cum pandit opes Thaumantia proles,  
Vestitu nituit multicolore solum.  
Non dea tam variis ornavit floribus hortos  
Alcinoi, Zephyro Chloris amata levi.  
Flumina vernantes lambunt argentea campos,  
Ditior Hesperio flavet arena Tago.  
Serpit odoriferas per opes levis aura Favoni,  
Aura sub innumeris humida nata rosis.  
Talis in extremis terræ Gangetidis oris  
Luciferi regis fingitur esse domus. 50  
Ipse racemiferis dum densas vitibus umbras  
Et pelluentes miror ubique locos,  
Ecce mihi subito præsul Wintonius astat,  
Sydereum nitido fulsit in ore jubar;  
Vestis ad auratos defluxit candida talos,  
Infula divinum cinxerat alba caput.  
Dumque senex tali incedit venerandus amictu,  
Intremuit læto florea terra sono.  
Agmina gemmatis plaudunt cælestia pennis,  
Pura triumphali personat æthra tubâ. 60  
Quisque novum amplexu comitem cantuque salutat,  
Hosque aliquis placido misit ab ore sonos;  
Nate veni, & patrii felix cape gaudia regni,  
Semper ab hinc duro, nate, labore vaca.  
Dixit, & aligeræ tetigerunt nablia turmæ,  
At mihi cum tenebris aurea pulsa quies.  
Flebam turbatos Cephaleiâ pellice somnos,  
Taliam contingant somnia sæpe mihi.



## *Elegia Quarta.*

Elegia quarta. Anno ætatis 18.

*Ad Thomam Junium præceptorem suum apud  
mercatores Anglicos Hamburgæ agentes  
Pastoris munere fungentem.*

CURRE per immensum subitò mea littera pontum,  
I, pete Teutonicos læve per æquor agros,  
Segnes rumpe moras, & nil, precor, obstet eunti,  
Et festinantis nil remoretur iter.  
Ipse ego Sicanio frænantem carcere ventos  
Æolon, & virides sollicitabo Deos;  
Cæruleamque suis comitatam Dorida Nymphis,  
Ut tibi dent placidam per sua regna viam.  
At tu, si poteris, celeres tibi sume jugales,  
Vecta quibus Colchis fugit ab ore viri.  
Aut queis Triptolemus Scythicas devenit in oras  
Gratus Eleusinâ missus ab urbe puer.  
Atque ubi Germanas flavere videbis arenas  
Ditis ad Hamburgæ mœnia flecte gradum,  
Dicitur occiso quæ ducere nomen ab Hamâ,  
Cimbrica quem fertur clava dedisse neci.  
Vivit ibi antiquæ clarus pietatis honore  
Præsul Christicolas pascere doctus oves;  
Ille quidem est animæ plusquam pars altera nostræ,  
Dimidio vitæ vivere cogor ego.  
Hei mihi quot pelagi, quot montes interjecti  
Me faciunt aliâ parte carere mei!  
Charior ille mihi quam tu doctissime Graium  
Cliniadi, pronepos qui Telamonis erat.  
Quámque Stagiritès generoso magnus alumno,  
Quem peperit Libyco Chaonis alma Jovi.  
Qualis Amyntorides, qualis Philyræius Heros  
Myrmidonum regi, talis & ille mihi.  
Primus ego Aonios illo præeunte recessus  
Lustrabam, & bifidi sacra vireta jugi,  
Pieriosque hausi latices, Clioque favente,  
Castalio sparsi læta ter ora mero.

## Miscellaneous Poems.

Flammeus at signum ter viderat arietis Æthon  
Induxitque auro lanea terga novo,  
Bisque novo terram sparsisti Chlōri senilem  
Gramine, bisque tuas abstulit Auster opes :  
Necdum ejus licuit mihi lumina pascere vultu,  
Aut linguæ dulces aure bibisse sonos.  
Vade igitur, cursuque Eurum præverte sonorum,  
Quàm sit opus monitis res docet, ipsa vides. 40  
Invenies dulci cum conjuge forte sedentem,  
Mulcentem gremio pignora chara suo,  
Forsitan aut veterum prælarga volumina patrum  
Versantem, aut veri biblia sacra Dei.  
Cælestive animas saturantem rore tenellas,  
Grande salutiferæ religionis opus.  
Utque solet, multam, sit dicere cura salutem,  
Dicere quam decuit, si modo adesset, herum.  
Hæc quoque paulum oculos in humum defixa modestos,  
Verba verecundo sis memor ore loqui : 50  
Hæc tibi, si teneris vacat inter prælia Musis  
Mittit ab Angliaco littore fida manus.  
Accipe sinceram, quamvis sit sera, salutem ;  
Fiat & hoc ipso gratior illa tibi.  
Sera quidem, sed vera fuit, quam casta recepit  
Icaris a lento Penelopeia viro.  
Ast ego quid volui manifestum tollere crimen,  
Ipse quod ex omni parte levare nequit.  
Arguitur tardus meritò, noxamque fatetur,  
Et pudet officium deseruisse suum. 60  
Tu modò da veniam fasso, veniamque roganti,  
Crimina diminui, quæ patuere, solent.  
Non ferus in pavidos rictus diducit hiantes,  
Vulnifico pronos nec rapit ungue leo.  
Sæpe sarissiferi crudelia pectora Thracis  
Supplicis ad moestas deliquere preces.  
Extensæque manus avertunt fulminis ictus,  
Placat & iratos hostia parva Deos.  
Jamque diu scripsisse tibi fuit impetus illi,  
Neve moras ultra ducere passus Amor. 70  
Nam vaga Fama refert, heu nuntia vera malorum !  
In tibi finitimis bella tumere locis.  
Teque tuàmque urbem truculento milite cingi,  
Et jam Saxonicos arma parasse duces.

## *Elegiarum Quarta.*

Te circum latè campos populatur Enyo,  
Et sata carne virûm jam cruor arva rigat.  
Germanisque suum concessit Thracia Martem,  
Illuc Odrysios Mars pater egit equos.  
Perpetuóque comans jam deflorescit oliva,  
Fugit & ærisonam Diva perosa tubam, 80  
Fugit io terris, & jam non ultima virgo  
Creditur ad superas justa volasse domos.  
Te tamen intereà belli circumsonat horror,  
Vivis & ignoto solus inópsque solo;  
Et, tibi quam patrii non exhibuere penates  
Sede peregrinâ quæris egenus opem.  
Patria dura parens, & saxis sævior albis  
Spumea quæ pulsat littoris unda tui,  
Siccine te decet innocuos exponere fætus;  
Siccine in externam ferrea cogis humum, 90  
Et sinis ut terris quærant alimenta remotis  
Quos tibi prospiciens miserat ipse Deus,  
Et qui læta ferunt de cælo nuntia, quique  
Quæ via post cineres ducat ad astra, docent?  
Digna quidem Stygiis quæ vivas clausa tenebris,  
Æternâque animæ digna perire fame!  
Haud aliter vates terræ Thesbitidis olim  
Pressit inassueto devia tesqua pede,  
Desertasque Arabum salebras, dum regis Achabi  
Effugit atque tuas, Sidoni dira, manus. 100  
Talis & horrisono laceratus membra flagello,  
Paulus ab Æmathiâ pellitur urbe Cilix.  
Piscosæque ipsum Gergessæ civis Jesum  
Finibus ingratus jussit abire suis.  
At tu sume animos, nec spes cadat anxia curis  
Nec tua concutiat decolor ossa metus.  
Sis etenim quamvis fulgentibus obsitus armis,  
Intententque tibi millia tela necem,  
At nullis vel inerme latus violabitur armis,  
Deque tuo cuspis nulla cruore bibet. 110  
Namque eris ipse Dei radiante sub ægide tutus,  
Ille tibi custos, & pugil ille tibi;  
Ille Sionææ qui tot sub mœnibus arcis  
Assyrios fudit nocte silente viros;  
Inque fugam vertit quos in Samaritidas oras  
Misit ab antiquis prisca Damascus agris,

## Miscellaneous Poems.

Terruit & densas pavido rege cohortes,  
Ære dum vacuo buccina clara sonat,  
Cornea pulvereum dum verberat ungula campum,  
Currus arenosam dum quatit actus humum,  
Auditurque hinnitus equorum ad bella ruentum,  
Et strepitus ferri, murmuraque alta virum.  
Et tu (quod superest miseris) sperare memento,  
Et tua magnanimo pectore vince mala.  
Nec dubites quandoque frui melioribus annis,  
Atque iterum patrios posse videre lares.

120

### Elegia quinta, Anno ætatis 20.

#### *In adventum veris.*

IN se perpetuo Tempus revolubile gyro  
Jam revocat Zephyros vere tepente novos.  
Induiturque brevem Tellus reparata juventam,  
Jamque soluta gelu dulce virescit humus.  
Fallor? an & nobis redeunt in carmina vires,  
Ingeniumque mihi munere veris adest?  
Munere veris adest, iterumque vigescit ab illo  
(Quis putet) atque aliquod jam sibi poscit opus.  
Castalis ante oculos, bifidumque cacumen oberrat,  
Et mihi Pyrenen somnia nocte ferunt.  
Concitaque arcano fervent mihi pectora motu,  
Et furor, & sonitus me sacer intus agit.  
Delius ipse venit, video Penæide lauro  
Implicitos crines, Delius ipse venit.  
Jam mihi mens liquidi raptatur in ardua cœli,  
Perque vagas nubes corpore liber eo.  
Perque umbras, perque antra feror penetralia vatum,  
Et mihi fana patent interiora Deum.  
Intuiturque animus toto quid agatur Olympo,  
Nec fugiunt oculos Tartara cæca meos.  
Quid tam grande sonat distento spiritus ore?  
Quid parit hæc rabies, quid sacer iste furor?  
Ver mihi, quod dedit ingenium, cantabitur illo;  
Profuerint isto reddita dona modo.

10

20

## *Elegia Quinta.*

Jam Philomela tuos foliis adoperta novellis  
Instituis modulos, dum silet omne nemus.  
Urbe ego, tu sylvâ simul incipiamus utrique,  
Et simul adventum veris uterque canat.  
Veris io rediere vices, celebremus honores  
Veris, & hoc subeat Musa quotannis opus. 30  
Jam sol Æthiopus fugiens Tithoniaque arva,  
Flectit ad Arctôas aurea lora plagas.  
Est breve noctis iter, brevis est mora noctis opacæ  
Horrida cum tenebris exulat illa suis.  
Jamque Lycaonius plaustrum cæleste Boötes  
Non longâ sequitur fessus ut ante viâ,  
Nunc etiam solitas circum Jovis atria toto  
Excubias agitant sydera rara polo.  
Nam dolus & cædes, & vis cum nocte recessit,  
Neve Giganteum Dii timuere scelus. 40  
Forte aliquis scopuli recubans in vertice pastor,  
Roscida cum primo sole rebescit humus,  
Hac, ait, hac certè caruisti nocte puellâ  
Phœbe tuâ, celeres quæ retineret equos.  
Læta suas repetit sylvas, pharetramque resumit  
Cynthia, Luciferas ut videt alta rotas,  
Et tenues ponens radios gaudere videtur  
Officium fieri tam breve fratris ope.  
Desere, Phœbus ait, thalamos Aurora seniles,  
Quid juvat effæto procubuisse toro? 50  
Te manet Æolides viridi venator in herba,  
Surge, tuos ignes altus Hymettus habet.  
Flava verecundo dea crimen in ore fatetur,  
Et matutinos ocyus urget equos.  
Exuit invisam Tellus rediviva senectam,  
Et cupit amplexus Phœbe subire tuos ;  
Et cupit, & digna est, quid enim formosius illâ,  
Pandit ut omniferos luxuriosa sinus,  
Atque Arabum spirat messes, & ab ore venusto  
Mitia cum Paphiis fundit amoma rosis. 60  
Ecce coronatur sacro frons ardua luco,  
Cingit ut Idæam pinea turris Opim ;  
Et vario madidos intexit flore capillos,  
Floribus & visa est posse placere suis.

## Miscellaneous Poems.

Floribus effusos ut erat redimita capillos  
Tænario placuit diva Sicana Deo.  
Aspice Phœbe tibi faciles hortantur amores,  
Mellitasque movent flamina verna preces.  
Cinnamêa Zephyrus leve plaudit odorifer alâ,  
Blanditiasque tibi ferre videntur aves. 70  
Nec sine dote tuos temeraria quærit amores  
Terra, nec optatos poscit egena toros,  
Alma salutiferum medicos tibi gramen in usus  
Præbet, & hinc titulos adjuvat ipsa tuos.  
Quodd si te pretium, si te fulgentia tangunt  
Munera, (muneribus sæpe coemptus Amor)  
Illa tibi ostentat quascunque sub æquore vasto,  
Et superinjectis montibus abdit opes.  
Ah quoties cum tu clivoso fessus Olympo  
In vespertinas præcipitaris aquas, 80  
Cur te, inquit, cursu languentem Phœbe diurno  
Hesperiiis recipit Cærula mater aquis?  
Quid tibi cum Tethy? Quid cum Tartesside lymphâ,  
Dia quid immundo perluis ora salo?  
Frigora Phœbe meâ melius captabis in umbrâ,  
Huc ades, ardentes imbue rore comas.  
Mollior egelidâ veniet tibi somnus in herbâ,  
Huc ades, & gremio lumina pone meo.  
Quâque jaces circum mulcebit lene susurrans  
Aura per humentes corpora fusa rosas. 90  
Nec me (crede mihi) terrent Semelëia fata,  
Nec Phæetonteo fumidus axis equo;  
Cum tu Phœbe tuo sapientius uteris igni,  
Huc ades & gremio lumina pone meo.  
Sic Tellus lasciva suos suspirat amores;  
Matris in exemplum cætera turba ruunt.  
Nunc etenim toto currit vagus orbe Cupido,  
Languentesque fovet solis ab igne faces.  
Insonuere novis lethalia cornua nervis,  
Triste micant ferro tela corusca novo. 100  
Jamque vel invictam tentat superasse Dianam,  
Quæque sedet sacro Vesta pudica foco.  
Ipsa senescentem reparat Venus annua formam,  
Atque iterum tepido creditur orta mari.  
Marmoreas juvenes clamant Hymenæe per urbes,  
Litus io Hymen, & cava saxa sonant.

## *Elegia Quinta.*

Cultior ille venit tunicâque decentior aptâ,  
Puniceum redolet vestis odora crocum.  
Egrediturque frequens ad amœni gaudia veris  
Virgineos auro cincta puella sinus. 110  
Votum est cuique suum, votum est tamen omnibus unum,  
Ut sibi quem cupiat, det Cytherca virum.  
Nunc quoque septenâ modulatur arundine pastor,  
Et sua quæ jungat carmina Phyllis habet.  
Navita nocturno placat sua sydera cantu,  
Delphinasque leves ad vada summa vocat.  
Jupiter ipse alto cum conjuge ludit Olympo,  
Convocat & famulos ad sua festa Deos.  
Nunc etiam Satyri cum sera crepuscula surgunt,  
Pervolitant celeri florea rura choro, 120  
Sylvanusque suâ Cyparissi fronde revinctus,  
Semicaperque Deus, semideusque caper.  
Quæque sub arboribus Dryades latuere vetustis  
Per juga, per solos expatiantur agros.  
Per sata luxuriat fruticetaque Mænalius Pan,  
Vix Cybele mater, vix sibi tuta Ceres,  
Atque aliquam cupidus prædatur Oreada Faunus,  
Consult in trepidos dum sibi Nympha pedes,  
Jamque latet, latitansque cupit male tecta videri, 130  
Et fugit, & fugiens pervelit ipsa capi.  
Dii quoque non dubitant cælo præponere sylvas,  
Et sua quisque sibi numina lucus habet.  
Et sua quisque diu sibi numina lucus habeto,  
Nec vos arboreâ dii precor ite domo.  
Te referant miseris te Jupiter aurea terris  
Sæcla, quid ad nimbos aspera tela redis?  
Tu saltem lentè rapidos age Phœbe jugales  
Quà potes, & sensim tempora veris eant.  
Brumaque productas tardè ferat hispida noctes,  
Ingruat & nostro serior umbra polo. 140



# Miscellaneous Poems.

## Elegia sexta.

### *Ad Carolum Diodatum ruri commorantem.*

*Qui cum idibus Decemb. scripsisset, & sua carmina excusari postulasset si solito minus essent bona, quòd inter lautitias quibus erat ab amicis exceptus, haud satis felicem operam Musis dare se posse affirmabat, hunc habuit responsum.*

MITTO tibi sanam non pleno ventre salutem,  
Quâ tu distento forte carere potes.  
At tua quid nostram prolectat Musa camœnam,  
Nec sinit optatas posse sequi tenebras?  
Carmine scire velis quàm te redamémque colámque,  
Crede mihi vix hoc carmine scire queas,  
Nam neque noster amor modulis includitur arctis,  
Nec venit ad claudos integer ipse pedes.  
Quàm bene solennes epulas, hilaremque Decembrim  
Festaque cœlifugam quæ coluere Deum, 10  
Deliciasque refers, hyberni gaudia ruris,  
Haustaque per lepidos Gallica musta focos.  
Quid quereris refugam vino dapibusque poesin?  
Carmen amat Bacchum, Carmina Bacchus amat.  
Nec puduit Phœbum virides gestasse corymbos,  
Atque hederam lauro præposuisse suæ.  
Sæpius Aoniis clamavit collibus Euœ  
Mista Thyonêo turba novena choro.  
Naso Corallæis mala carmina misit ab agris :  
Non illic epulæ non sata vitis erat. 20  
Quid nisi vina, rosasque racemiferumque Lyæum  
Cantavit brevibus Tëia Musa modis?  
Pindaricosque inflat numeros Teumesius Euan,  
Et redolet sumptum pagina quæque merum.  
Dum gravis everso currus crepat axe supinus,  
Et volat Eléo pulvere fuscus eques.  
Quadrismoque madens Lyricen Romanus Iaccho  
Dulce canit Glyceran, flavicomamque Chloen.  
Jam quoque lauta tibi generoso mensa paratu,  
Mentis alit vires, ingeniumque fovet. 30  
Massica fœcundam despumant pocula venam,  
Fundis & ex ipso condita metra cado.



## *Elegia Sexta.*

Addimus his artes, fusumque per intima Phœbum  
Corda, favent uni Bacchus, Apollo, Ceres.  
Scilicet haud mirum tam dulcia carmina per te  
Numine composito tres peperisse Deos.  
Nunc quoque Thressa tibi cælato barbitos auro  
Insonat argutâ molliter icta manu;  
Auditurque chelys suspensa tapetia circum,  
Virgineos tremulâ quæ regat arte pedes. 40  
Illa tuas saltem teneant spectacula Musas,  
Et revocent, quantum crapula pellit iners.  
Crede mihi dum psallit ebur, comitataque plectrum  
Implet odoratos festa chorea tholos,  
Percipies tacitum per pectora serpere Phœbum,  
Quale repentinus permeat ossa calor,  
Perque puellares oculos digitumque sonantem  
Irruet in totos lapsa Thalia sinus.  
Namque Elegia levis multorum cura deorum est,  
Et vocat ad numeros quemlibet illa suos; 50  
Liber adest elegis, Eratoque, Ceresque, Venusque,  
Et cum purpureâ matre tenellus Amor.  
Talibus inde licent convivia larga poetis,  
Sæpius & veteri commaduisse mero.  
At qui bella refert, & adulto sub Jove cælum,  
Heroasque pios, semiideosque duces,  
Et nunc sancta canit superum consulta deorum,  
Nunc latrata fero regna profunda cane,  
Ille quidem parcè Samii pro more magistri  
Vivat, & innocuos præbeat herba cibos; 60  
Stet prope fagineo pellucida lympha catillo,  
Sobriaque è puro pocula fonte bibat.  
Additur huic scelerisque vacans, & casta juvenus,  
Et rigidi mores, & sine labe manus.  
Qualis veste nitens sacrâ, & lustralibus undis  
Surgis ad infensos augur iture Deos.  
Hoc ritu vixisse ferunt post rapta sagacem  
Lumina Tiresian, Ogygiumque Linon,  
Et lare devoto profugum Calchanta, senemque  
Orpheon edomitis sola per antra feris; 70  
Sic dapis exiguus, sic rivi potor Homerus  
Dulichium vexit per freta longa virum,  
Et per monstrificam Perseïæ Phœbados aulam,  
Et vada fœmineis insidiosa sonis,

## Miscellaneous Poems.

Perque tuas rex ime domos, ubi sanguine nigro  
Dicitur umbrarum detinuisse greges.  
Diis etenim sacer est vates, divûmque sacerdos,  
Spirat & occultum pectus, & ora Jovem.  
At tu si quid agam, scitabere (si modò saltem  
Esse putas tanti noscere siquid agam) 80  
Paciferum canimus cælesti semine regem,  
Faustaque sacratis sæcula pacta libris,  
Vagitumque Dei, & stabulantem paupere tecto  
Qui suprema suo cum patre regna colit.  
Stelliparumque polum, modulantesque æthere turmas,  
Et subito elisos ad sua fana Deos.  
Dona quidem dedimus Christi natalibus illa  
Illa sub auroram lux mihi prima tulit.  
Te quoque pressa manent patriis meditata cicutis,  
Tu mihi, cui recitem, iudicis instar eris. 90

### Elegia septima, Anno ætatis undevigesimo.

NONDUM blanda tuas leges Amathusia noram,  
Et Paphio vacuum pectus ab igne fuit.  
Sæpe cupidineas, puerilia tela, sagittas,  
Atque tuum sprevi maxime, numen, Amor.  
Tu puer imbelles dixi transfige columbas,  
Conveniunt tenero mollia bella duci.  
Aut de passeribus tumidos age, parve, triumphos,  
Hæc sunt militiæ digna trophæa tuæ.  
In genus humanum quid inania dirigit arma?  
Non valet in fortes ista pharetra viros. 10  
Non tulit hoc Cyprius, (neque enim Deus ullus ad iras  
Promptior) & duplici jam ferus igne calet.  
Ver erat, & summæ radians per culmina villæ  
Attulerat primam lux tibi Maie diem:  
At mihi adhuc refugam quærebant lumina noctem  
Nec matutinum sustinere jubar.  
Astat Amor lecto, pictis Amor impiger alis,  
Prodidit astantem mota pharetra Deum:  
Prodidit & facies, & dulce minantis ocelli,  
Et quicquid puero, dignum & Amore fuit. 20

## *Elegia Septima.*

Talis in æterno juvenis Sigeius Olympo  
Miscet amatori pocula plena Jovi ;  
Aut qui formosas pellexit ad oscula nymphas  
Thiodamantæus Naiade raptus Hylas ;  
Addideratque iras, sed & has decuisse putares,  
Addideratque truces, nec sine felle minas.  
Et miser exemplo sapuisses tutiùs, inquit,  
Nunc mea quid possit dextera testis eris.  
Inter & expertos vires numerabere nostras,  
Et faciam vero per tua damna fidem. 30  
Ipse ego si nescis strato Pythone superbum  
Edomui Phœbum, cessit & ille mihi ;  
Et quoties meminit Peneidos, ipse fatetur  
Certiùs & graviùs tela nocere mea.  
Me nequit adductum curvare peritiùs arcum,  
Qui post terga solet vincere Parthus eques.  
Cydoniusque mihi cedit venator, & ille  
Inscius uxori qui necis author erat.  
Est etiam nobis ingens quoque victus Orion,  
Herculeæque manus, Herculeusque comes. 40  
Jupiter ipse licet sua fulmina torqueat in me,  
Hærebunt lateri spicula nostra Jovis.  
Cætera quæ dubitas meliùs mea tela docebunt,  
Et tua non leviter corda petenda mihi.  
Nec te stulte tuæ poterunt defendere Musæ,  
Nec tibi Phœbæus porriget anguis opem.  
Dixit, & aurato quatiens mucrone sagittam,  
Evolat in tepidos Cypridos ille sinus.  
At mihi risuro tonuit ferox ore minaci,  
Et mihi de puero non metus ullus erat. 50  
Et modò quàm nostri spatiantur in urbe Quirites  
Et modò villarum proxima rura placent.  
Turba frequens, facièque simillima turba dearum  
Splendida per medias itque reditque vias.  
Auctaque luce dies gemino fulgore coruscat,  
Fallor? an & radios hinc quoque Phœbus habet.  
Hæc ego non fugi spectacula grata severus,  
Impetus & quò me fert juvenilis, agor.  
Lumina luminibus malè providus obvia misi,  
Neve oculos potui continuisse meos. 60  
Unam forte aliis supereminuisse notabam,  
Principium nostri lux erat illa mali.

## Miscellaneous Poems.

Sic Venus optaret mortalibus ipsa videri,  
Sic regina Deum conspicienda fuit.  
Hanc memor objecit nobis malus ille Cupido,  
Solut & hos nobis texuit ante dolos.  
Nec procul ipse vafer latuit, multæque sagittæ,  
Et facis a tergo grande pependit onus.  
Nec mora, nunc ciliis hæsit, nunc virginis ori,  
Insilit hinc labiis, insidet inde genis : 70  
Et quascunque agilis partes jaculator oberrat,  
Hei mihi, mille locis pectus inerme ferit.  
Protinus insoliti subierunt corda furores,  
Uror amans intus, flammaque totus eram.  
Interea misero quæ jam mihi sola placebat,  
Ablata est oculis non reditura meis.  
Ast ego progredior tacite querebundus, & excors,  
Et dubius volui sæpe referre pedem.  
Findor, & hæc remanet, sequitur pars altera votum,  
Raptaque tam subito gaudia flere juvat. 80  
Sic dolet amissum proles Junonia cælum,  
Inter Lemniacos præcipitata focos.  
Talis & abreptum solem respexit, ad Orcum  
Vectus ab attonitis Amphiarus equis.  
Quid faciam infelix, & luctu victus, amores  
Nec licet inceptos ponere, neve sequi.  
O utinam spectare semel mihi detur amatos  
Vultus, & coram tristia verba loqui ;  
Forsitan & duro non est adamante creata,  
Forte nec ad nostras surdeat illa preces. 90  
Crede mihi nullus sic infelicitè arsit,  
Ponar in exemplo primus & unus ego.  
Parce precor teneri cum sis Deus ales amoris,  
Pugnent officio nec tua facta tuo.  
Jam tuus O certe est mihi formidabilis arcus,  
Nate deâ, jaculis nec minus igne potens :  
Et tua fumabunt nostris altaria donis,  
Solut & in superis tu mihi summus eris.  
Deme meos tandem, verum nec deme furores,  
Nescio cur, miser est suaviter omnis amans : 100  
Tu modo da facilis, posthæc mea siqua futura est,  
Cuspis amatuos figat ut una duos.

## *In Proditionem Bombardicam.*

HÆC ego mente olim lævâ, studioque supino  
Nequitiae posui vana trophæa meæ.  
Scilicet abreptum sic me malus impulit error,  
Indocilisque ætas prava magistra fuit.  
Donec Socraticos umbrosa Academia rivos  
Præbuit, admissum dedocuitque jugum.  
Protinus extinctis ex illo tempore flammis,  
Cincta rigent multo pectora nostra gelu.  
Unde suis frigus metuit puer ipse Sagittis,  
Et Diomedéam vim timet ipse Venus.

10

## *In Proditionem Bombardicam.*

CUM simul in regem nuper satrapasque Britannos  
Ausus es infandum perfide Fauxe nefas,  
Fallor? an & mitis voluisti ex parte videri,  
Et pensare malâ cum pietate scelus;  
Scilicet hos alti missurus ad atria cæli,  
Sulphureo curru flammivolisque rotis.  
Qualiter ille feris caput inviolabile Parcis  
Liquit Jördanios turbine raptus agros.

## *In eandem.*

SICCINE tentasti cælo donâsse Jäcobum  
Quae septemgemino Bellua monte lates?  
Ni meliora tuum poterit dare munera numen,  
Parce precor donis insidiosa tuis.  
Ille quidem sine te consortia serus adivit  
Astra, nec inferni pulveris usus ope.  
Sic potiùs fœdos in cælum pelle cucullos,  
Et quot habet brutos Roma profana Deos.  
Namque hac aut aliâ nisi quemque adjuveris arte,  
Crede mihi cæli vix bene scandet iter.

10

# Miscellaneous Poems.

## *In eandem.*

PURGATOREM animæ derisit Jäcobus ignem,  
Et sine quo superûm non adeunda domus.  
Frenduit hoc trinâ monstrum Latiale coronâ  
Movit & horrificum cornua dena minax.  
Et nec inultus ait temnes mea sacra Britanne,  
Supplicium spretâ religione dabis.  
Et si stelligeras unquam penetraveris arces,  
Non nisi per flammâ triste patebit iter.  
O quàm funesto cecinisti proxima vero,  
Verbaque ponderibus vix caritura suis!  
Nam prope Tartareo sublime rotatus ab igni  
Ibat ad æthereas umbra perusta plagas.

10

## *In eandem.*

QUEM modò Roma suis devoverat impia diris,  
Et Styge damnarât Tænarioque sinu,  
Hunc vice mutatâ jam tollere gestit ad astra,  
Et cupit ad superos evehere usque Deos.

## *In inventorem Bombardæ.*

JAPETIONIDEM laudavit cæca vetustas,  
Qui tulit ætheream solis ab axe facem;  
At mihi major erit, qui lurida creditur arma,  
Et trifidum fulmen surripuisse Jovi.

## *Ad Leonoram Romæ canentem.*

ANGELUS unicuique suus (sic credite gentes)  
Obtigit æthereis ales ab ordinibus.  
Quid mirum? Leonora tibi si gloria major,  
Nam tua præsentem vox sonat ipsa Deum.  
(140)

## *Ad Leonoram.*

Aut Deus, aut vacui certè mens tertia cœli  
Per tua secretò guttura serpit agens;  
Serpit agens, facilisque docet mortalia corda  
Sensim immortalì assuescere posse sono.  
Quòd si cuncta quidem Deus est, per cunctaque fusus,  
In te unâ loquitur, cætera mutus habet. 10

## *Ad eandem.*

ALTERA Torquatum cepit Leonora Poëtam,  
Cujus ab insano cessit amore furens.  
Ah miser ille tuo quantò feliciùs ævo  
Perditus, & propter te Leonora foret!  
Et te Pieriâ sensisset voce canentem  
Aurea maternæ fila movere lyræ,  
Quamvis Dirçæo torsisset lumina Pentheo  
Sævior, aut totus desipuisset iners,  
Tu tamen errantes cæcâ vertigine sensus  
Voce eadem poteras composuisse tuâ;  
Et poteras ægro spirans sub corde quietem  
Flexanimo cantu restituisset sibi. 10

## *Ad eandem.*

CREDULA quid liquidam Sirena Neapoli jactas,  
Claraque Parthenopes fana Achelöiados,  
Littoreamque tuâ defunctam Naiada ripâ  
Corpora Chalcidico sacra dedisse rogo?  
Illa quidem vivitque, & amœnâ Tibridis undâ  
Mutavit rauci murmura Pausilipi.  
Illic Romulidûm studiis ornata secundis,  
Atque homines cantu detinet atque Deos.

## *Elegiarum Finis.*

## Miscellaneous Poems.

[Added in Second Edition, 1673.]

### *Apologus de Rustico & Hero.*

RUSTICUS ex Maloapidissima poma quotannis  
Legit, & urbano lecta dedit Domino :  
Hic incredibili fructûs dulcedine Captus  
Malum ipsam in proprias transtulit areolas.  
Hactenus illa ferax, sed longo debilis ævo,  
Mota solo assueto, protinus aret iners.  
Quod tandem ut patuit Domino, spe lusus inani,  
Damnavit celeres in sua damna manus.  
Atque ait, Heu quantò satius fuit illa Coloni  
(Parva licet) grato dona tulisse animo ! 10  
Possem Ego avaritiam frænare, gulamque voracem :  
Nunc periére mihi & fœtus & ipsa parens.

[From *Defensio pro populo anglicano*, 1651.]

### *In Salmasii Hundredam.*

QUIS expedit Salmasio suam Hundredam,  
Picamque docuit verba nostra conari ?  
Magister artis venter, et Jacobei  
Centum exulantis viscera marsupii regis.  
Quod si dolosi spes refulserit nummi,  
Ipse, Antichristi modo qui primatum Papæ  
Minatus uno est dissipare sufflatu,  
Cantabit ultro Cardinalitium melos.

[From *Defensio secunda*, 1654.]

### *In Salmasium.*

GAUDETE scombri, et quicquid est piscium salo,  
Qui frigida hyeme incolitis algentes freta !  
Vestrum misertus ille Salmasius Eques  
Bonus, amicire nuditatem cogitat ;  
Chartæque largus, apparat papyrinos  
Vobis cucullos, præferentes Claudii  
Insignia, nomenque et decus, Salmasii :  
Gestetis ut per omne cetarium forum  
Equitis clientes, scriniis mungentium  
Cubito virorum, et capsulis, gratissimos.

10



# *In obitum Procancellarii medici.*

## SYLVARUM LIBER.

Anno ætatis 16. In obitum Procancellarii  
medici.

PARERE fati discite legibus,  
Manusque Parcæ jam date supplices,  
Qui pendulum telluris orbem  
Jäpeti colitis nepotes.  
Vos si relicto mors vaga Tænaro  
Semel vocârit flebilis, heu moræ  
Tentantur incassum dolique ;  
Per tenebras Stygis ire certum est.

Si destinatam pellere dextera  
Mortem valeret, non ferus Hercules  
Nessi venenatus cruore

10

Æmathiâ jacuisset Cætâ.  
Nec fraude turpi Palladis invidæ  
Vidisset occisum Ilion Hectora, aut  
Quem larva Pelidis peremit  
Ense Locro, Jove lacrymante.

Si triste fatum verba Hecatæia  
Fugare possint, Telegoni parens  
Vixisset infamis, potentique  
Ægiali soror usa virgâ.

20

Numenque trinum fallere si queant  
Artes medentum, ignotaque gramina,  
Non gnarus herbarum Machaon  
Eurypyli cecidisset hastâ.

Læsisset & nec te Philyreie  
Sagitta echidnæ perlita sanguine,  
Nec tela te fulmenque avitum  
Cæse puer genitricis alvo.

Tuque O alumno major Apolline,  
Gentis togatæ cui regimen datum,  
Froncosa quem nunc Cirrha luget,  
Et mediis Helicon in undis,

30

## Miscellaneous Poems.

Jam præfuisses Palladio gregi  
Lætus, superstes, nec sine gloria,  
Nec puppe lustrasses Charontis  
Horribiles barathri recessus.  
At fila rupit Persephone tua  
Irata, cum te viderit artibus  
Succoque pollenti tot atris  
Faucibus eripuisse mortis.  
Colende præses, membra precor tua  
Molli quiescant cespitem, & ex tuo  
Crescant rosæ, calthæque busto,  
Purpureoque hyacinthus ore.  
Sit mite de te judicium Æaci,  
Subrideatque Ætnæa Proserpina,  
Interque felices perennis  
Elysio spatium campo.

40

### In quintum Novembris, Anno ætatis 17.

JAM pius extremâ veniens Jäcobus ab arcto  
Teucrigenas populos, latèque patentia regna  
Albionum tenuit, jamque inviolabile fœdus  
Sceptra Caledoniis conjunxerat Anglica Scotis:  
Pacificusque novo felix divesque sedebat  
In solio, occultique doli securus & hostis:  
Cum ferus ignifluo regnans Acheronte tyrannus,  
Eumenidum pater, æthereo vagus exul Olympo,  
Forte per immensum terrarum erraverat orbem,  
Dinumerans sceleris socios, vernasque fideles,  
Participes regni post funera mœsta futuros;  
Hic tempestates medio ciet aëre diras,  
Illic unanimes odium struit inter amicos,  
Armat & invictas in mutua viscera gentes;  
Regnaque olivifera vertit florentia pace,  
Et quoscunque videt puræ virtutis amantes,  
Hos cupit adjicere imperio, fraudumque magister  
Tentat inaccessum sceleri corrumpere pectus,  
Insidiasque locat tacitas, cassesque latentes  
Tendit, ut incautos rapiat, seu Caspia Tigris  
Insequitur trepidam deserta per avia prædam  
Nocte sub illuni, & somno nictantibus astris.

10

20

## *In quintum Novembris.*

Talibus infestat populos Summanus & urbes  
Cinctus cæruleæ fumanti turbine flammæ.  
Jamque fluentisonis albentia rupibus arva  
Apparent, & terra Deo dilecta marino,  
Cui nomen dederat quondam Neptunia proles  
Amphitryoniaden qui non dubitavit atrocem  
Æquore tranato furiali poscere bello,  
Ante expugnatae crudelia sæcula Troiæ.

30

At simul hanc opibusque & festâ pace beatam  
Aspicit, & pingues donis Cerealibus agros,  
Quodque magis doluit, venerantem numina veri  
Sancta Dei populum, tandem suspiria rupit  
Tartareos ignes & luridum olentia sulphur.  
Qualia Trinacriâ trux ab Jove clausus in Ætna  
Efflat tabifico monstrosus ab ore Tiphœus.  
Ignescunt oculi, stridetque adamantinus ordo  
Dentis, ut armorum fragor, ictaque cuspidē cuspis.  
Atque pererrato solum hoc lacrymabile mundo  
Inveni, dixit, gens hæc mihi sola rebellis,  
Contemtrixque jugi, nostrâque potentior arte.  
Illa tamen, mea si quicquam tentamina possunt,  
Non feret hoc impune diu, non ibit inulta,  
Hactenus; & piceis liquido natat aëre pennis;  
Quâ volat, adversi præcursant agmine venti,  
Densantur nubes, & crebra tonitrua fulgent.

40

Jamque pruinosas velox superaverat alpes,  
Et tenet Ausoniæ fines, à parte sinistrâ  
Nimbifer Appenninus erat, priscique Sabini,  
Dextra beneficiis infamis Hetruria, nec non  
Te furtiva Tiberis Thetidi videt oscula dantem;  
Hinc Mavortigenæ consistit in arce Quirini.  
Reddiderant dubiam jam sera crepuscula lucem,  
Cum circumgreditur totam Tricoronifer urbem,  
Panificosque Deos portat, scapulisque virorum  
Evehitur, præeunt summisso poplite reges,  
Et mendicantium series longissima fratrum;  
Cereaque in manibus gestant funalia cæci,  
Cimmeriis nati in tenebris, vitamque trahentes.  
Templa dein multis subeunt lucentia tædis  
(Vesper erat sacer iste Petro) fremitúsque canentum

50

60

## Miscellaneous Poems.

Sæpe tholos implet vacuos, & inane locorum.  
Qualiter exululat Bromius, Bromiique caterva,  
Orgia cantantes in Echionio Aracyntho,  
Dum tremit attonitus vitreis Asopus in undis,  
Et procul ipse cavâ responsat rupe Cithæron.

His igitur tandem solenni more peractis,  
Nox senis amplexus Erebi taciturna reliquit,  
Præcipitesque impellit equos stimulante flagello, 70  
Captum oculis Typhlonta, Melanchætēque ferocem,  
Atque Acherontæo prognatam patre Siopen  
Torpidam, & hirsutis horrentem Phrica capillis.  
Interea regum domitor, Phlegetontius hæres,  
Ingreditur thalamos (neque enim secretus adulter  
Producit steriles molli sine pellice noctes)  
At vix compositos somnus claudebat ocellos,  
Cum niger umbrarum dominus, rectorque silentum,  
Prædatorque hominum falsâ sub imagine tectus  
Astitit, assumptis micuerunt tempora canis, 80  
Barba sinus promissa tegit, cineracea longo  
Syrmate verrit humum vestis, pendetque cucullus  
Vertice de raso, & ne quicquam desit ad artes,  
Cannabeo lumbos constrinxit fune salaces.  
Tarda fenestratis figens vestigia calceis.  
Talis uti fama est, vastâ Franciscus eremo  
Tetra vagabatur solus per lustra ferarum,  
Sylvestrique tulit genti pia verba salutis  
Impius, atque lupos domuit, Lybicosque leones.

Subdolus at tali Serpens velatus amictu 90  
Solvit in has fallax ora execrantia voces;  
Dormis nate? Etiamne tuos sopor opprimit artus  
Immemor O fidei, pecorumque oblite tuorum,  
Dum cathedram venerande tuam, diademaque triplex  
Ridet Hyperboreo gens barbara nata sub axe,  
Dumque pharetrati spernunt tua jura Britanni;  
Surge, age, surge piger, Latius quem Cæsar adorat,  
Cui reserata patet convexi janua cæli,  
Turgentes animos, & fastus frange procaces,  
Sacrilegique sciant, tua quid maledictio possit, 100  
Et quid Apostolicæ possit custodia clavis;  
Et memor Hesperia disiectam ulciscere classem,  
Mersaque Iberorum lato vexilla profundo,  
Sanctorumque cruci tot corpora fixa probrosæ,

## *In quintum Novembris.*

Thermodoontéa nuper regnante puella.  
At tu si tenero mavis torpescere lecto  
Crescentesque negas hosti contundere vires,  
Tyrrhenum implebit numeroso milite Pontum,  
Signaque Aventino ponet fulgentia colle :  
Reliquias veterum franget, flammisque cremabit, 110  
Sacraque calcabit pedibus tua colla profanis,  
Cujus gaudebant soleis dare basia reges.  
Nec tamen hunc bellis & aperto Marte lacesces,  
Irritus ille labor, tu callidus utere fraude,  
Quælibet hæreticis disponere retia fas est ;  
Jamque ad consilium extremis rex magnus ab oris  
Patricios vocat, & procerum de stirpe creatos,  
Grandævosque patres trabeâ, canisque verendos ;  
Hos tu membratim poteris conspergere in auras,  
Atque dare in cineres, nitrati pulveris igne 120  
Ædibus injecto, quâ convenere, sub imis.  
Protinus ipse igitur quoscumque habet Anglia fidos  
Propositi, factique mone, quisquâmnè tuorum  
Audebit summi non jussa facessere Papæ.  
Perculsosque metu subito, casûque stupentes  
Invadat vel Gallus atrox, vel sævus Iberus.  
Sæcula sic illic tandem Mariana redibunt,  
Tuque in belligeros iterum dominaberis Anglos.  
Et nequid timeas, divos divasque secundas  
Accipe, quotque tuis celebrantur numina fastis. 130  
Dixit & adscitos ponens malefidus amictus  
Fugit ad infandam, regnum illætabile, Lethen.  
Jam rosea Eoas pandens Tithonia portas  
Vestit inauratas redeunti lumine terras ;  
Mæstaque adhuc nigri deplorans funera nati  
Irrigat ambrosiis montana cacumina guttis ;  
Cum somnos pepulit stellatæ janitor aulæ  
Nocturnos visus, & somnia grata revolvens.  
Est locus æternâ septus caligine noctis  
Vasta ruinosi quondam fundamina tecti, 140  
Nunc torvi spelunca Phoni, Prodotaque bilinguis  
Effera quos uno peperit Discordia partu.  
Hic inter cæmenta jacent semifractaque saxa,  
Ossa inhumata virûm, & trajecta cadavera ferro ;

## Miscellaneous Poems.

Hic Dolus intortis semper sedet ater ocellis,  
Jurgiaque, & stimulis armata Calumnia fauces,  
Et Furor, atque viæ moriendi mille videntur,  
Et Timor, exanguisque locum circumvolat Horror,  
Perpetuoque leves per muta silentia Manes  
Exululant, tellus & sanguine conscia stagnat. 150  
Ipsi etiam pavidì latitant penetralibus antri  
Et Phonos, & Prodotes, nulloque sequente per antrum  
Antrum horrens, scopulosum, atrum feralibus umbris  
Diffugiunt sontes, & retrò lumina vortunt,  
Hos pugiles Romæ per sæcula longa fideles  
Evocat antistes Babylonius, atque ita fatur.  
Finibus occiduis circumfusum incolit æquor  
Gens exosa mihi, prudens natura negavit  
Indignam penitus nostro conjungere mundo :  
Illuc, sic jubeo, celeri contendite gressu, 160  
Tartareoque leves diffilentur pulvere in auras  
Et rex & pariter satrapæ, scelerata propago  
Et quotquot fidei caluere cupidine veræ  
Consilii socios adhibete, operisque ministros.  
Finierat, rigidi cupidè paruere gemelli.

Interea longo flectens curvamine cælos  
Despicit æthereâ dominus qui fulgurat arce,  
Vanaque perversæ ridet conamina turbæ,  
Atque sui causam populi volet ipse tueri.

Esse ferunt spatium, quâ distat ab Aside terra 170  
Fertilis Europe, & spectat Mareotidas undas ;  
Hic turris posita est Titanidos ardua Famæ  
Ærea, lata, sonans, rutilis vicinior astris  
Quàm superimpositum vel Athos vel Pelion Ossæ  
Mille fores aditusque patent, totidemque fenestræ,  
Amplaque per tenues translucent atria muros ;  
Excitat hic varios plebs agglomerata susurros ;  
Qualiter instrepitant circum mulctralia bombis  
Agmina muscarum, aut texto per ovilia junco,  
Dum Canis æstivum cœli petit ardua culmen 180  
Ipsa quidem summâ sedet ultrix matris in arce,  
Auribus innumeris cinctum caput eminet olli,  
Queis sonitum exiguum trahit, atque levissima captat  
Murmura, ab extremis patuli confinibus orbis.  
Nec tot Aristoride servator inique juvencæ

149, 150 Manes Exululant,] Manes, Exululat 1673 *Errata*.

## *In quintum Novembris.*

Isidos, immiti volvebas lumina vultu,  
Lumina non unquam tacito nutantia somno,  
Lumina subjectas late spectantia terras.  
Istis illa solet loca luce carentia sæpe  
Perlustrare, etiam radianti impervia soli. 190  
Millenisque loquax auditaque visaque linguis  
Cuilibet effundit temeraria, veraque mendax  
Nunc minuit, modò confictis sermonibus auget.  
Sed tamen a nostro meruisti carmine laudes  
Fama, bonum quo non aliud veracius ullum,  
Nobis digna cani, nec te memorasse pigebit  
Carmine tam longo, servati scilicet Angli  
Officiis vaga diva tuis, tibi reddimus æqua.  
Te Deus æternos motu qui temperat ignes,  
Fulmine præmisso alloquitur, terraque tremante : 200  
Fama siles? an te latet impia Papistarum  
Conjurata cohors in meque meosque Britannos,  
Et nova sceptrigerò cædes meditata Jäcobo :  
Nec plura, illa statim sensit mandata Tonantis,  
Et satis antè fugax stridentes induit alas,  
Induit & variis exilia corpora plumis ;  
Dextra tubam gestat Temesæo ex ære sonoram.  
Nec mora jam pennis cedentes remigat auras,  
Atque parum est cursu celeres prævertere nubes,  
Jam ventos, jam solis equos post terga reliquit : 210  
Et primò Angliacas solito de more per urbes  
Ambiguas voces, incertaque murmura spargit,  
Mox arguta dolos, & detestabile vulgat  
Proditionis opus, nec non facta horrida dictu,  
Authoresque addit sceleris, nec garrula cæcis  
Insidiis loca structa silet ; stupuere relatis,  
Et pariter juvenes, pariter tremuere puellæ,  
Effætique senes pariter, tantæque ruïnæ  
Sensus ad ætatem subitò penetraverat omnem  
Attamen interea populi miserescit ab alto 220  
Æthereus pater, & crudelibus obstitit ausis  
Papicolûm ; capti pœnas raptantur ad acres ;  
At pia thura Deo, & grati solvuntur honores ;  
Compita læta focis genialibus omnia fumant ;  
Turba choros juvenilis agit : Quintoque Novembris  
Nulla Dies toto occurrit celebratior anno.



## Miscellaneous Poems.

Anno ætatis 17. In obitum Præsulis  
Eliensis.

ADHUC madentes rore squalabant genæ,  
Et sicca nondum lumina  
Adhuc liquentis imbre turgebant salis,  
Quem nuper effudi pius,  
Dum mœsta charo justa persolvi rogo  
Wintoniensis præsulis.  
Cum centilinguis Fama (proh semper mali  
Cladisque vera nuntia)  
Spargit per urbes divitis Britanniæ,  
Populosque Neptuno satos,  
Cessisse morti, & ferreis sororibus  
Te generis humani decus,  
Qui rex sacrorum illâ fuisti in insulâ  
Quæ nomen Anguillæ tenet.  
Tunc inquietum pectus irâ protinus  
Ebulliebat fervidâ,  
Tumulis potentem sæpe devovens deam :  
Nec vota Naso in Ibida  
Concepit alto diriora pectore,  
Graiusque vates parciùs  
Turpem Lycambis execratus est dolum,  
Sponsamque Neobolen suam.  
At ecce diras ipse dum fundo graves,  
Et imprecor neci necem,  
Audisse tales videor attonitus sonos  
Leni, sub aurâ, flamine :  
Cæcos furores pone, pone vitream  
Bilemque & irritas minas,  
Quid temerè violas non nocenda numina,  
Subitoque ad iras percita.  
Non est, ut arbitraris elusus miser,  
Mors atra Noctis filia,  
Erebóve patre creta, sive Erinnye,  
Vastóve nata sub Chao :  
Ast illa cælo missa stellato, Dei  
Messés ubique colligit ;

10

20

30



## *Naturam non pati senium.*

Animasque mole carneâ reconditas  
In lucem & auras evocat :  
Ut cum fugaces excitant Horæ diem  
Themidos Jovisque filiæ ; 40  
Et sempiterni ducit ad vultus patris ;  
At justa raptat impios  
Sub regna furvi luctuosa Tartari,  
Sedesque subterraneas  
Hanc ut vocantem lætus audivi, citò  
Fœdum reliqui carcerem,  
Volatilesque faustus inter milites  
Ad astra sublimis feror :  
Vates ut olim raptus ad cœlum senex  
Auriga currus ignei, 50  
Non me Boëtis terruere lucidi  
Sarraca tarda frigore, aut  
Formidolosi Scorpionis brachia,  
Non ensis Orion tuus.  
Prætervolavi fulgidi solis globum,  
Longéque sub pedibus deam  
Vidi triformem, dum coercebat suos  
Frænis dracones aureis.  
Erraticorum syderum per ordines, 60  
Per lacteas vehor plagas,  
Velocitatem sæpe miratus novam,  
Donec nitentes ad fores  
Ventum est Olympi, & regiam Crystallinam, &  
Stratum smaragdis Atrium.  
Sed hic tacebo, nam quis effari queat  
Oriundus humano patre  
Amœnitates illius loci, mihi  
Sat est in æternum frui.

## *Naturam non pati senium.*

HEU quàm perpetuis erroribus acta fatiscit  
Avia mens hominum, tenebrisque immersa profundis  
Ædipodioniam volvit sub pectore noctem !  
Quæ vesana suis metiri facta deorum  
Audet, & incisas leges adamante perenni

## Miscellaneous Poems.

Assimilare suis, nulloque solubile sæclo  
Consilium fati perituris alligat horis.

Ergóne marcescet sulcantibus obsita rugis  
Naturæ facies, & rerum publica mater  
Omniparum contracta uterum sterilescet ab ævo? 10  
Et se fassa senem malè certis passibus ibit  
Sidereum tremebunda caput? num tetra vetustas  
Annorumque æterna fames, squalorque situsque  
Sidera vexabunt? an & insatiabile Tempus  
Esuriet Cælum, rapietque in viscera patrem?  
Heu, potuitne suas imprudens Jupiter arces  
Hoc contra munisse nefas, & Temporis isto  
Exemisse malo, gyrosque dedisse perennes?  
Ergo erit ut quandoque sono dilapsa tremendo  
Convexi tabulata ruant, atque obvius ictu 20  
Stridat uterque polus, superâque ut Olympius aulâ  
Decidat, horribilisque relectâ Gorgone Pallas.  
Qualis in Ægæam proles Junonia Lemnon  
Deturbata sacro cecidit de limine cæli.

Tu quoque Phœbe tui casus imitabere nati  
Præcipiti curru, subitâque ferere ruinâ  
Pronus, & extinctâ fumabit lampade Nereus,  
Et dabit attonito feralia sibila ponto.  
Tunc etiam aërei divulsis sedibus Hæmi  
Dissultabit apex, imoque allisa barathro 30  
Terrebunt Stygium dejecta Ceraunia Ditem  
In superos quibus usus erat, fraternaue bella.

At Pater omnipotens fundatis fortius astris  
Consuluit rerum summæ, certoque peregit  
Pondere fatorum lances, atque ordine summo  
Singula perpetuum jussit servare tenorem.  
Volvitur hinc lapsu mundi rota prima diurno;  
Raptat & ambitos sociâ vertigine cælos.  
Tardior haud solito Saturnus, & acer ut olim  
Fulmineum rutilat cristatâ casside Mavors. 40  
Floridus æternùm Phœbus juvenile coruscat,  
Nec fovet effœtas loca per declivia terras  
Devexo temone Deus; sed semper amicâ  
Luce potens eadem currit per signa rotarum,  
Surgit odoratis pariter formosus ab Indis  
Æthereum pecus albenti qui cogit Olympo  
Mane vocans, & serus agens in pascua cæli,

## *De Idea Platonica.*

Temporis & gemino dispertit regna colore.  
Fulget, obitque vices alterno Delia cornu,  
Cæruleumque ignem paribus complectitur ulnis. 50  
Nec variant elementa fidem, solitòque fragore  
Lurida perculsas jaculantur fulmina rupes.  
Nec per inane furit leviori murmure Corus,  
Stringit & armiferos æquali horrore Gelonos  
Trux Aquilo, spiratque hyemem, nimbosque volutat.  
Utque solet, Siculi diverberat ima Pelori  
Rex maris, & raucâ circumstrepit æquora conchâ  
Oceani Tubicen, nec vastâ mole minorem  
Ægæona ferunt dorso Balearica cete.  
Sed neque Terra tibi sæcli vigor ille vetusti 60  
Priscus abest, servatque suum Narcissus odorem,  
Et puer ille suum tenet & puer ille decorem  
Phœbe tuusque & Cypri tuus, nec ditior olim  
Terra datum sceleri celavit montibus aurum  
Conscia, vel sub aquis gemmas. Sic denique in ævum  
Ibit cunctarum series justissima rerum,  
Donec flamma orbem populabitur ultima, latè  
Circumplexa polos, & vasti culmina cæli;  
Ingentique rogo flagrabit machina mundi.

### *De Idea Platonica quemadmodum Aristoteles intellexit.*

DICITE sacrorum præsides nemorum deæ,  
Tuque O noveni perbeata numinis  
Memoria mater, quæque in immenso procul  
Antro recumbis otiosa Æternitas,  
Monumenta servans, & ratas leges Jovis,  
Cælique fastos atque ephemeridas Deûm,  
Quis ille primus cujus ex imagine  
Natura sollers finxit humanum genus,  
Æternus, incorruptus, æquævus polo,  
Unusque & universus, exemplar Dei? 10  
Haud ille Palladis gemellus innubæ  
Interna proles insidet menti Jovis;  
Sed quamlibet natura sit communior,

## Miscellaneous Poems.

Tamen seorsùs extat ad morem unius,  
Et, mira, certo stringitur spatio loci;  
Seu sempiternus ille syderum comes  
Cæli pererrat ordines decemplicis,  
Citimúmve terris incolit Lunæ globum:  
Sive inter animas corpus adituras sedens  
Obliviosas torpet ad Lethes aquas: 20  
Sive in remotâ forte terrarum plagâ  
Incedit ingens hominis archetypus gigas,  
Et diis tremendus erigit celsum caput  
Atlante major portitore syderum.  
Non cui profundum cæcitas lumen dedit  
Dircæus augur vidit hunc alto sinu;  
Non hunc silenti nocte Plëiones nepos  
Vatum sagaci præpes ostendit choro;  
Non hunc sacerdos novit Assyrius, licet  
Longos vetusti commemoret atavos Nini, 30  
Priscumque Belon, inclytumque Osiridem.  
Non ille trino gloriosus nomine  
Ter magnus Hermes (ut sit arcani sciens)  
Talem reliquit Isidis cultoribus.  
At tu perenne ruris Academi decus  
(Hæc monstra si tu primus inducti scholis)  
Jam jam pöetas urbis exules tuæ  
Revocabis, ipse fabulator maximus,  
Aut institutor ipse migrabis foras.

### Ad Patrem.

NUNC mea Pierios cupiam per pectora fontes  
Irriguas torquere vias, totumque per ora  
Volvere laxatum gemino de vertice rivum;  
Ut tenues oblita sonos audacibus alis  
Surgat in officium venerandi Musa parentis.  
Hoc utcunque tibi gratum pater optime carmen  
Exiguum meditatur opus, nec novimus ipsi  
Aptiùs à nobis quæ possint munera donis  
Respondere tuis, quamvis nec maxima possint  
Respondere tuis, nedum ut par gratia donis 10  
Esse queat, vacuis quæ redditur arida verbis.

## *Ad Patrem.*

Sed tamen hæc nostros ostendit pagina census,  
Et quod habemus opum chartâ numeravimus istâ,  
Quæ mihi sunt nullæ, nisi quas dedit aurea Clio  
Quas mihi semoto somni peperere sub antro,  
Et nemoris laureta sacri Parnassides umbræ.

Nec tu vatis opus divinum despice carmen,  
Quo nihil æthereos ortus, & semina cæli,  
Nil magis humanam commendat origine mentem,  
Sancta Promethææ retinens vestigia flammæ. 20  
Carmen amant superi, tremebundaque Tartara carmen  
Ima ciere valet, divosque ligare profundos,  
Et triplici duos Manes adamante coercet.  
Carmine sepositi retegunt arcana futuri  
Phœbades, & tremulæ pallentes ora Sibyllæ;  
Carmina sacrificus solennes pangit ad aras  
Aurea seu sternit motantem cornua taurum;  
Seu cùm fata sagax fumantibus abdita fibris  
Consulit, & tepidis Parcam scrutatur in extis. 30  
Nos etiam patrium tunc cum repetemus Olympum,  
Æternæque moræ stabunt immobilis ævi,  
Ibimus auratis per cæli templa coronis,  
Dulcia suaviloquo sociantes carmina plectro,  
Astra quibus, geminique poli convexa sonabunt.  
Spiritus & rapidos qui circumat igneus orbes.  
Nunc quoque sydereis intercinit ipse choreis  
Immortale melos, & inenarrabile carmen;  
Torrida dum rutilus compescit sibila serpens,  
Demissoque ferox gladio mansuescit Orion;  
Stellarum nec sentit onus Maurusius Atlas. 40  
Carmina regales epulas ornare solebant,  
Cum nondum luxus, vastæque immensa vorago  
Nota gulæ, & modico spumabat cœna Lyæo.  
Tum de more sedens festa ad convivia vates  
Æsculeâ intonsos redimitus ab arbore crines,  
Heroumque actus, imitandaque gesta canebat,  
Et chaos, & positi latè fundamina mundi,  
Reptantesque Deos, & alentes numina glandes,  
Et nondum Ætneo quæsitum fulmen ab antro.  
Denique quid vocis modulamen inane juvabit,  
Verborum sensusque vacans, numerique loquacis? 50  
Silvestres decet iste chorus, non Orpheæ cantus,  
Qui tenuit fluvios & quercubus addidit aures

## Miscellaneous Poems.

Carmine, non citharâ, simulachraque functa canendo  
Compulit in lacrymas; habet has à carmine laudes.

Nec tu perge precor sacras contemnere Musas,  
Nec vanas inopesque puta, quarum ipse peritus  
Munere, mille sonos numeros componis ad aptos,  
Millibus & vocem modulis variare canoram  
Doctus, Arionii meritò sis nominis hæres. 60  
Nunc tibi quid mirum, si me genuisse poëtam  
Contigerit, charo si tam propè sanguine juncti  
Cognatas artes, studiumque affine sequamur:  
Ipse volens Phœbus se dispertire duobus,  
Altera dona mihi, dedit altera dona parenti,  
Dividuumque Deum genitorque puerque tenemus.

Tu tamen ut similes teneras odisse camœnas,  
Non odisse reor, neque enim, pater, ire jubebas  
Quà via lata patet, quà pronior area lucri,  
Certaque condendi fulget spes aurea nummi: 70  
Nec rapis ad leges, malè custoditaque gentis  
Jura, nec insulsis damnas clamoribus aures.  
Sed magis excultam cupiens ditescere mentem,  
Me procul urbano strepitu, secessibus altis  
Abductum Aoniæ jucunda per otia ripæ  
Phœbæo lateri comitem sinis ire beatum.

Officium chari taceo commune parentis,  
Me poscunt majora, tuo pater optime sumptu  
Cum mihi Romuleæ patuit facundia linguæ,  
Et Latii veneres, & quæ Jovis ora decebant 80  
Grandia magniloquis elata vocabula Graiis,  
Addere suasisti quos jactat Gallia flores,  
Et quam degèneri novus Italus ore loquelam  
Fundit, Barbaricos testatus voce tumultus,  
Quæque Palæstinus loquitur mysteria vates.  
Denique quicquid habet cælum, subjectaque cœlo  
Terra parens, terræque & cœlo interfluit aer,  
Quicquid & unda tegit, pontique agitabile marmor,  
Per te nosse licet, per te, si nosse libebit.  
Dimotâque venit spectanda scientia nube, 90  
Nudaque conspicuos inclinât ad oscula vultus,  
Ni fuisse velim, ni sit libâsse molestum.

I nunc, confer opes quisquis malesanus avitas  
Austriaci gazas, Perüanaque regna præoptas.  
Quæ potuit majora pater tribuisse, vel ipse

## Psalm 114.

Jupiter, excepto, donâsset ut omnia, cœlo?  
Non potiora dedit, quamvis & tuta fuissent,  
Publica qui juveni commisit lumina nato  
Atque Hyperionios currus, & fræna diei,  
Et circùm undantem radiatâ luce tiamam. 100  
Ergo ego jam doctæ pars quamlibet ima catervæ  
Victrices hederas inter, laurosque sedebo,  
Jamque nec obscurus populo miscebor inertī,  
Vitabuntque oculos vestigia nostra profanos.  
Este procul vigiles curæ, procul este querelæ,  
Invidiæque acies transverso tortilis hirquo,  
Sæva nec anguiferos extende Calumniæ rictus;  
In me triste nihil fædissima turba potestis,  
Nec vestri sum juris ego; securaque tutus  
Pectora, vipereo gradiar sublimis ab ictu. 110

At tibi, chare pater, postquam non æqua merenti  
Posse referre datur, nec dona rependere factis,  
Sit memorâsse satis, repetitaque munera grato  
Percensere animo, fidæque reponere menti.

Et vos, O nostri, juvenilia carmina, lusus,  
Si modo perpetuos sperare audebitis annos,  
Et domini superesse rogo, lucemque tueri,  
Nec spisso rapiunt obliviam nigra sub Orco,  
Forsitan has laudes, decantatumque parentis  
Nomen, ad exemplum, sero servabitis ævo. 120

## Psalm 114.

Ἰσραὴλ ὅτε παῖδες, ὅτ' ἀγλαὰ φύλ' Ἰακωβου  
Αἰγύπτιον λίπε δῆμον, ἀπεχθέα, βαρβαρόφωνον,  
Δὴ τότε μῦνον ἦν ὅσιον γένος υἱὲς Ἰουδα  
Ἐν δὲ θεὸς λαοῖσι μέγα κρείων βασιλευεν.  
Εἶδε, καὶ ἐντροπιάδην φύγαδ' ἐρρώησε θάλασσα  
Κύματι εἰλυμένη ῥοθίῳ, ὃδ' αἶρ' ἐστυφελίχθη  
Ἱρὸς Ἱορδάνης ποτὶ ἀργυροειδέα πηγὴν.  
Ἐκ δ' ὄρεα σκαρθμοῖσιν ἀπειρέσια κλονέοντο,  
Ὡς κριοὶ σφριγόντες ἐντραφερῶ ἐν ἀλωῇ.  
Βαιότεραι δ' αἶμα πίσαι ἀνασκίρτησαν ἐρίπναι,  
Οἷα παρὰ σύριγγι φίλῃ ὑπὸ μητέρει ἄρνες.  
Τίπτε σύγ' αἰνὰ θάλασσα πέλωρ φύγαδ' ἐρρώησας;



## Miscellaneous Poems.

Κύματι εἰλυμένη ροθίῳ; τί δ' ἄρ' ἐστυφελίχθης  
Ἴρὸς Ἰορδάνη ποτὶ ἀργυροειδέα πηγὴν;  
Τίπτ' ὄρεα σκαρθμοῖσιν ἀπειρέσια κλονέεσθε  
Ὡς κριοὶ σφριγόωντες ἐϋτραφερῶ ἐν ἁλῶῃ;  
Βαιοτέραι τί δ' ἀρ' ὑμῖς ἀνασκιρτησατ' ἐρίπναι,  
Οἷα παρὰ σύριγγι φίλῃ ὑπὸ μητέρι ἄρνες,  
Σείεο γαῖῃ τρέουσα θεὸν μεγάλ' ἐκτυπέοντα  
Γαῖα, θεὸν τρέιουσ' ὕπατον σέβας Ἰσθακίδαο  
Ὅς τε καὶ ἐκ σπιλαῖδων ποταμοὺς χέε μορμύροντας  
Κρήνην γ' ἀέναον πέτρης ἀπὸ δακρυόεσσης.

20

*Philosophus ad regem quendam qui eum ignotum  
& insontem inter reos forte captum inscius  
damnaverat τὴν ἐπὶ θανάτῳ πορευόμενος,  
hæc subito misit.*

Ὡ ἄνα εἰ ὀλέσης με τὸν ἔννομον, οὐδέ τιν' ἀνδρῶν  
Δεινὸν ὅλως δράσαντα, σοφώτατον ἴσθι κάρηνον  
Ρηϊδίως ἀφέλοιο, τὸδ' ὕστερον αὖθι νοήσεις,  
Μαψ αὐτως δ' ἀρ' ἔπειτα χρόνῳ μαλα πολλὸν ὀδύρῃ,  
Τοιόνδ' ἐκ πόλεως περιώνυμον ἄλκαρ ὀλέσσας.

### In Effigiei ejus Sculptorem.

Ἀμαθεῖ γεγράφθαι χειρὶ τήνδε μὲν εἰκόνα  
Φαίης τάχ' ἄν, πρὸς εἶδος αὐτοφνὲς βλέπων  
Τὸν δ' ἐκτυπῶτὸν οὐκ ἐπιγόνυτες, φίλοι,  
Γελᾶτε φαύλου δυσμίμημα ζωγράφου.

### *Ad Salsillum poetam Romanum ægrotantem.*

#### SCAZONTES.

O MUSA gressum quæ volens trahis claudum,  
Vulcanioque tarda gaudes incessu,  
Nec sentis illud in loco minus gratum,

4 Μαψιδίως δ' ἀρ' ἔπειτα τεδὺν πρὸς θυμὸν ὀδυρῇ 1673  
(158)



## *Ad Salsillum poetam Romanum.*

Quàm cum decentes flava Dëiope suras  
Alternat aureum ante Junonis lectum,  
Adesdum & hæc s'is verba pauca Salsillo  
Refer, camœna nostra cui tantum est cordi,  
Quamque ille magnis prætulit immeritò divis.  
Hæc ergo alumnus ille Londini Milto,  
Diebus hisce qui suum linquens nidum 10  
Polique tractum, (pessimus ubi ventorum,  
Insanientis impotensque pulmonis  
Pernix anhela sub Jove exercet flabra)  
Venit feraces Itali soli ad glebas,  
Visum superbâ cognitas urbes famâ  
Virosque doctæque indolem juventutis,  
Tibi optat idem hic fausta multa Salsille,  
Habitumque fesso corpori penitùs sanum;  
Cui nunc profunda bilis infestat renes,  
Præcordiisque fixa damnosum spirat. 20  
Nec id pepercit impia quòd tu Romano  
Tam cultus ore Lesbium condis melos.  
O dulce divùm munus, O salus Hebes  
Germana! Tuque Phœbe morborum terror  
Pythone cæso, sive tu magis Pæan  
Libenter audis, hic tuus sacerdos est.  
Querceta Fauni, vosque rore vinoso  
Colles benigni, mitis Euandri sedes,  
Siquid salubre vallibus frondet vestris,  
Levamen ægro ferte certatim vati. 30  
Sic ille charis redditus rursùm Musis  
Vicina dulci prata mulcebit cantu.  
Ipse inter atros emirabitur lucos  
Numa, ubi beatum degit otium æternum,  
Suam reclivis semper Ægeriam spectans.  
Tumidusque & ipse Tiberis hinc delinitus  
Spei favebit annuæ colonorum:  
Nec in sepulchris ibit obsessum reges  
Nimiùm sinistro laxis irruens loro:  
Sed fræna melius temperabit undarum, 40  
Adusque curvi salsa regna Portumni.

# Miscellaneous Poems.

## Mansus.

*Joannes Baptista Mansus Marchio Villensis vir ingenii laude, tum literarum studio, nec non & bellicâ virtute apud Italos clarus in primis est. Ad quem Torquati Tassi dialogus extat de Amicitia scriptus; erat enim Tassi amicissimus; ab quo etiam inter Campaniæ principes celebratur, in illo poemate cui titulus Gerusalemme conquistata, lib. 20.*

Fra cavalier magnanimi, è cortesi  
Risplende il Manso———

*Is authorem Neapoli commorantem summâ benevolentia prosecutus est, multaque ei detulit humanitatis officia. Ad hunc itaque hospes ille antequam ab eâ urbe discederet, ut ne ingratum se ostenderet, hoc carmen misit.*

HÆC quoque Manse tuæ meditantur carmina laudi  
Pierides, tibi Manse choro notissime Phœbi,  
Quandoquidem ille alium haud æquo est dignatus honore,  
Post Galli cineres, & Mecænatis Hetrusci.  
Tu quoque si nostræ tantum valet aura Camcenæ,  
Victrices hederas inter, laurosque sedebis.  
Te pridem magno felix concordia Tasso  
Junxit, & æternis inscripsit nomina chartis,  
Mox tibi dulciloquum non inscia Musa Marinum  
Tradidit, ille tuum dici se gaudet alumnum,  
Dum canit Assyrios divum prolixus amores;  
Mollis & Ausonias stupefecit carmine nymphas.  
Ille itidem moriens tibi soli debita vates  
Ossa tibi soli, supremæque vota reliquit.  
Nec manes pietas tua chara fefellit amici,  
Vidimus arridentem operoso ex ære poetam.  
Nec satis hoc visum est in utrumque, & nec pia cessant  
Officia in tumulo, cupis integros rapere Orco,  
Quà potes, atque avidas Parcarum eludere leges:  
Amborum genus, & variâ sub sorte peractam  
Describis vitam, moresque, & dona Minervæ;  
Æmulus illius Mycalen qui natus ad altam  
Rettulit Æolii vitam facundus Homeri.  
Ergo ego te Clius & magni nomine Phœbi  
Manse pater, jubeo longum salvere per ævum  
Missus Hyperboreo juvenis peregrinus ab axe.  
Nec tu longinquam bonus aspernabere Musam,  
Quæ nuper gelidâ vix enutrita sub Arcto

10

20

## Mansus.

Imprudens Italas ausa est volitare per urbes.  
Nos etiam in nostro modulantes flumine cygnos 30  
Credimus obscuras noctis sensisse per umbras,  
Quà Thamesis latè puris argenteus urnis  
Oceani glaucos perfundit gurgite crines.  
Quin & in has quondam pervenit Tityrus oras.  
Sed neque nos genus incultum, nec inutile Phœbo,  
Quà plaga septeno mundi sulcata Trione  
Brumalem patitur longâ sub nocte Boöten.  
Nos etiam colimus Phœbum, nos munera Phœbo  
Flaventes spicas, & lutea mala canistris,  
Halantemque crocum (perhibet nisi vana vetustas) 40  
Misimus, & lectas Druidum de gente choreas.  
(Gens Druides antiqua sacris operata deorum  
Heroum laudes imitandaque gesta canebant)  
Hinc quoties festo cingunt altaria cantu  
Delo in herbosâ Graiæ de more puellæ  
Carminibus lætis memorant Corineïda Loxo,  
Fatidicamque Upin, cum flavicomâ Hecaërge  
Nuda Caledonio variatas pectora fuco.  
Fortunate senex, ergo quacunque per orbem  
Torquati decus, & nomen celebrabitur ingens, 50  
Claraque perpetui succrescet fama Marini,  
Tu quoque in ora frequens venies plausumque virorum,  
Et parili carpes iter immortale volatu.  
Dicetur tum sponte tuos habitasse penates  
Cynthius, & famulas venisse ad limina Musas :  
At non sponte domum tamen idem, & regis adivit  
Rura Pheretiadæ cælo fugitivus Apollo ;  
Ille licet magnum Alciden susceperat hospes ;  
Tantùm ubi clamosos placuit vitare bubulcos,  
Nobile mansueti cessit Chironis in antrum, 60  
Irriguos inter saltus frondosaque tecta  
Peneium prope rivum : ibi sæpe sub ilice nigrâ  
Ad citharæ strepitum blandâ prece victus amici  
Exilii duros lenibat voce labores.  
Tum neque ripa suo, barathro nec fixa sub imo,  
Saxa stetero loco, nutat Trachinia rupes,  
Nec sentit solitas, immania pondera, silvas,  
Emotæque suis properant de collibus orni,  
Mulcenturque novo maculosi carmine lynces.  
Diis dilecte senex, te Jupiter æquus oportet 70

## Miscellaneous Poems.

Nascentem, & miti lustrarit lumine Phoebus,  
Atlantisque nepos; neque enim nisi charus ab ortu  
Diis superis poterit magno favisse poetæ.  
Hinc longæva tibi lento sub flore senectus  
Vernat, & Æsonios lucratur vivida fusos,  
Nondum deciduos servans tibi frontis honores,  
Ingeniumque vigens, & adultum mentis acumen.  
O mihi si mea sors talem concedat amicum  
Phœbæos decorâsse viros qui tam bene norit,  
Si quando indigenas revocabo in carmina reges, 80  
Arturumque etiam sub terris bella moventem;  
Aut dicam invictæ sociali fœdere mensæ,  
Magnanimos Heroas, & (O modo spiritus ad sit)  
Frangam Saxonicas Britonum sub Marte phalanges.  
Tandem ubi non tacitæ permensus tempora vitæ,  
Annorumque satur cinerî sua jura relinquam,  
Ille mihi lecto madidis astaret ocellis,  
Astanti sat erit si dicam sim tibi curæ;  
Ille meos artus liventi morte solutos 90  
Curaret parvâ componi molliter urnâ.  
Forsitan & nostros ducat de marmore vultus,  
Nectens aut Paphiâ myrti aut Parnasside lauri  
Fronde comas, at ego securâ pace quiescam.  
Tum quoque, si qua fides, si præmia certa honorum,  
Ipse ego cælicolûm semotus in æthera divûm,  
Quò labor & mens pura vehunt, atque ignea virtus  
Secreti hæc aliquâ mundi de parte videbo  
(Quantum fata sinunt) & totâ mente serenûm  
Ridens purpureo suffundar lumine vultus  
Et simul æthereo plaudam mihi lætus Olympo. 100

# *Epitaphium Damonis.*

## EPITAPHIUM DAMONIS.

### Argumentum.

Thyrsis & Damon ejusdem viciniae Pastores, eadem studia sequuti a pueritiâ amici erant, ut qui plurimum. Thyrsis animi causâ profectus peregrè de obitu Damonis nuncium accepit. Domum postea reversus, & rem ita esse comperto, se, suamque solitudinem hoc carmine deplorat. Damonis autem sub personâ hîc intelligitur Carolus Deodatus ex urbe Hetruriæ Luca paterno genere oriundus, cætera Anglus; ingenio, doctrina, clarissimisque cæteris virtutibus, dum viveret, juvenis egregius.

HIMERIDES nymphæ (nam vos & Daphnin & Hylan,  
Et plorata diu meministis fata Bionis)  
Dicite Sicelicum Thamesina per oppida carmen :  
Quas miser effudit voces, quæ murmura Thyrsis,  
Et quibus assiduis exercuit antra querelis,  
Fluminaque, fontesque vagos, nemorumque recessus,  
Dum sibi præreptum queritur Damona, neque altam  
Luctibus exemit noctem loca sola pererrans.  
Et jam bis viridi surgebat culmus arista,  
Et totidem flavas numerabant horrea messes,  
Ex quo summa dies tulerat Damona sub umbras,  
Nec dum aderat Thyrsis; pastorem scilicet illum  
Dulcis amor Musæ Thusca retinebat in urbe.  
Ast ubi mens expleta domum, pecorisque relictæ  
Cura vocat, simul assuetâ seditque sub ulmo,  
Tum vero amissum tum denique sentit amicum,  
Coepit & immensum sic exonerare dolorem.

10

Ite domum impasti, domino jam non vacat, agni.  
Hei mihi! quæ terris, quæ dicam numina cœlo,  
Postquam te immiti rapuerunt funere Damon;  
Siccine nos linquis, tua sic sine nomine virtus  
Ibit, & obscuris numero sociabitur umbris?  
At non ille, animas virgâ qui dividit aureâ,  
Ista velit, dignumque tui te ducat in agmen,  
Ignavumque procul pecus arceat omne silentium.

20

## Miscellaneous Poems.

Ite domum impasti, domino jam non vacat, agni.  
Quicquid erit, certè nisi me lupus antè videbit,  
Indeplorato non comminuere sepulchro,  
Constabitque tuus tibi honos, longúmque vigebit  
Inter pastores: Illi tibi vota secundo

30

Solvere post Daphnin, post Daphnin dicere laudes  
Gaudebunt, dum rura Pales, dum Faunus amabit:  
Si quid id est, priscamque fidem coluisse, piúmque,  
Palladiásque artes, sociúmque habuisse canorum.

Ite domum impasti, domino jam non vacat, agni.  
Hæc tibi certa manent, tibi erunt hæc præmia Damon:  
At mihi quid tandem fiet modò? quis mihi fidus  
Hærebit lateri comes, ut tu sæpe solebas  
Frigoribus duris, & per loca foeta pruinis,  
Aut rapido sub sole, siti morientibus herbis?  
Sive opus in magnos fuit eminùs ire leones  
Aut avidos terrere lupos præsepibus altis;  
Quis fando sopire diem, cantuque solebit?

40

Ite domum impasti, domino jam non vacat, agni.  
Pectora cui credam? quis me lenire docebit  
Mordaces curas, quis longam fallere noctem  
Dulcibus alloquiis, grato cùm sibilat igni  
Molle pyrum, & nucibus strepitat focus, at malus auster  
Miscet cuncta foris, & desuper intonat ulmo.

Ite domum impasti, domino jam non vacat, agni.  
Aut æstate, dies medio dum vertitur axe,  
Cum Pan æsculeâ somnum capit abditus umbrâ,  
Et repetunt sub aquis sibi nota sedilia nymphæ.  
Pastoresque latent, stertit sub sepe colonus,  
Quis mihi blanditiásque tuas, quis tum mihi risus,  
Cecropiosque sales referet, cultosque lepores?

50

Ite domum impasti, domino jam non vacat, agni.  
At jam solus agros, jam pascua solus oberro,  
Sicubi ramosæ densantur vallibus umbræ,  
Hic serum expecto, supra caput imber & Eurus  
Triste sonant, fractæque agitata crepuscula silvæ.

60

Ite domum impasti, domino jam non vacat, agni.  
Heu quàm culta mihi priùs arva procacibus herbis  
Involvuntur, & ipsa situ seges alta fatiscit!  
Innuba neglecto marcescit & uva racemo,  
Nec myrteta juvant; ovium quoque tædet, at illæ  
Moerent, inque suum convertunt ora magistrum.

## *Epitaphium Damonis.*

Ite domum impasti, domino jam non vacat, agni.  
Tityrus ad corylos vocat, Alphisibœus ad ornos,  
Ad salices Ægon, ad flumina pulcher Amyntas,  
Hic gelidi fontes, hîc illita gramina musco,  
Hic Zephyri, hîc placidas interstrepit arbutus undas;  
Ista canunt surdo, frutices ego nactus abibam.

70

Ite domum impasti, domino jam non vacat, agni.  
Mopsus ad hæc, nam me redeuntem forte notârat  
(Et callebat avium linguas, & sydera Mopsus)  
Thyrsi quid hoc? dixit, quæ te coquit improba bilis?  
Aut te perdit amor, aut te malè fascinat astrum,  
Saturni grave sæpe fuit pastoribus astrum,  
Intimaque obliquo figit præcordia plumbo.

80

Ite domum impasti, domino jam non vacat, agni.  
Mirantur nymphæ, & quid te Thyrsi futurum est?  
Quid tibi vis? ajunt, non hæc solet esse juventæ  
Nubila frons, oculique truces, vultusque severi,  
Illa choros, lususque leves, & semper amorem  
Jure petit, bis ille miser qui serus amavit.

Ite domum impasti, domino jam non vacat, agni.  
Venit Hyas, Dryopéque, & filia Baucidis Ægle  
Docta modos, citharæque sciens, sed perdita fastu,  
Venit Idumanii Chloris vicina fluenti;  
Nil me blanditiæ, nil me sôlantia verba,  
Nil me, si quid adest, movet, aut spes ulla futuri.

90

Ite domum impasti, domino jam non vacat, agni.  
Hei mihi quam similes ludunt per prata juvenci,  
Omnes unanimi secum sibi lege sodales,  
Nec magis hunc alio quisquam secernit amicum  
De grege, sic densi veniunt ad pabula thoes,  
Inque vicem hirsuti paribus junguntur onagri;  
Lex eadem pelagi, deserto in littore Proteus  
Agmina Phocarum numerat, vilisque volucrum  
Passer habet semper quicum sit, & omnia circum  
Farra libens volitet, serò sua tecta revisens,  
Quem si fors letho objecit, seu milvus adunco  
Fata tulit rostro, seu stravit arundine fossor,  
Protinus ille alium socio petit inde volatu.

100

Nos durum genus, & diris exercita fati  
Gens homines aliena animis, & pectore discors,  
Vix sibi quisque parem de millibus invenit unum,  
Aut si sors dederit tandem non aspera votis,



## Miscellaneous Poems.

Illum inopina dies quâ non speraveris horâ  
Surripit, æternum linquens in sæcula damnum. 110

Ite domum impasti, domino jam non vacat, agni.  
Heu quis me ignotas traxit vagus error in oras  
Ite per aëreas rupes, Alpemque nivosam!  
Ecquid erat tanti Romam vidisse sepultam?  
Quamvis illa foret, qualem dum viseret olim,  
Tityrus ipse suas & oves & rura reliquit;  
Ut te tam dulci possem caruisse sodale,  
Possem tot maria alta, tot interponere montes,  
Tot sylvas, tot saxa tibi, fluviosque sonantes. 120  
Ah certè extremum licuisset tangere dextram,  
Et bene compositos placidè morientis ocellos,  
Et dixisse vale, nostri memor ibis ad astra.

Ite domum impasti, domino jam non vacat, agni.  
Quamquam etiam vestri nunquam meminisse pigebit  
Pastores Thusci, Musis operata juvenus,  
Hic Charis, atque Lepos; & Thuscus tu quoque Damon,  
Antiquâ genus unde petis Lucumonis ab urbe.  
O ego quantus eram, gelidi cum stratus ad Arni  
Murmura, populeumque nemus, quâ mollior herba, 130  
Carpere nunc violas, nunc summas carpere myrtos,  
Et potui Lycidæ certantem audire Menalcam.  
Ipse etiam tentare ausus sum, nec puto multum  
Displicui, nam sunt & apud me munera vestra  
Fiscellæ, calathique & cerea vincla cicutæ,  
Quin & nostra suas docuerunt nomina fagos  
Et Datis, & Francinus, erant & vocibus ambo  
Et studiis noti, Lydorum sanguinis ambo.

Ite domum impasti, domino jam non vacat, agni.  
Hæc mihi tum læto dictabat roscida luna, 140  
Dum solus teneros claudebam cratibus hœdos.  
Ah quoties dixi, cum te cinis ater habebat,  
Nunc canit, aut lepori nunc tendit retia Damon,  
Vimina nunc texit, varios sibi quod sit in usus;  
Et quæ tum facili sperabam mente futura  
Arripui voto levis, & præsentia finxi,  
Heus bone numquid agis? nisi te quid forte retardat  
Imus? & argutâ paulum recubamus in umbra,  
Aut ad aquas Colni, aut ubi jugera Cassibelauni?  
Tu mihi percurres medicos, tua gramina, succos, 150  
Helleborumque, humilésque crocos, foliumque hyacinthi,



## *Epitaphium Damonis.*

Quasque habet ista palus herbas, artesque medentûm,  
Ah pereant herbæ, pereant artesque medentûm  
Gramina, postquam ipsi nil profecere magistro.  
Ipse etiam, nam nescio quid mihi grande sonabat  
Fistula, ab undecimâ jam lux est altera nocte,  
Et tum forte novis admôram labra cicutis,  
Dissiluere tamen rupta compage, nec ultra  
Ferre graves potuere sonos, dubito quoque ne sim  
Turgidulus, tamen & referam, vos cedite silvæ.

160

Ite domum impasti, domino jam non vacat, agni.  
Ipse ego Dardanias Rutupina per æquora puppes  
Dicam, & Pandrasidos regnum vetus Inogeniæ,  
Brennûmque Arviragûmque duces, priscûmque Belinum,  
Et tandem Armoricos Britonum sub lege colonos;  
Tum gravidam Arturo fatali fraude Jögernen  
Mendaces vultus, assumptaque Gorlôis arma,  
Merlini dolus. O mihi tum si vita supersit,  
Tu procul annosa pendebis fistula pinu  
Multûm oblita mihi, aut patriis mutata camœnis  
Brittonicum strides, quid enim? omnia non licet uni  
Non sperâsse uni licet omnia, mi satis ampla  
Merces, & mihi grande decus (sim ignotus in ævum  
Tum licet, externo penitûsque inglorius orbi)  
Si me flava comas legat Usa, & potor Alauni,  
Vorticibûsque frequens Abra, & nemus omne Treantæ,  
Et Thamesis meus ante omnes, & fusca metallis  
Tamara, & extremis me discant Orcades undis.

170

Ite domum impasti, domino jam non vacat, agni.  
Hæc tibi servabam lentâ sub cortice lauri,  
Hæc, & plura simul, tum quæ mihi pocula Mansus,  
Mansus Chalcidicæ non ultima gloria ripæ  
Bina dedit, mirum artis opus, mirandus & ipse,  
Et circûm gemino cælaverat argumento:  
In medio rubri maris unda, & odoriferum ver  
Littora longa Arabum, & sudantes balsama silvæ,  
Has inter Phœnix divina avis, unica terris  
Cæruleûm fulgens diversicoloribus alis  
Auroram vitreis surgentem respicit undis.

180

Parte alia polus omnipatens, & magnus Olympus;  
Quis putet? hic quoque Amor, pictæque in nube pharetræ,  
Arma corusca faces, & spicula tincta pyropo;  
Nec tenues animas, pectûsque ignobile vulgi

190

## Miscellaneous Poems.

Hinc ferit, at circùm flammantia lumina torquens  
Semper in erectum spargit sua tela per orbes  
Impiger, & pronos nunquam collimat ad ictus,  
Hinc mentes ardere sacræ, formæque deorum.

Tu quoque in his, nec me fallit spes lubrica Damon,  
Tu quoque in his certè es, nam quò tua dulcis abiret  
Sanctâque simplicitas, nam quò tua candida virtus?

200

Nec te Lethæo fas quæsisisse sub orco,  
Nec tibi conveniunt lacrymæ, nec flebimus ultrà,  
Ite procul lacrymæ, purum colit æthera Damon,  
Æthera purus habet, pluvium pede reppulit arcum;  
Heroûmque animas inter, divósque perennes,  
Æthereos haurit latices & gaudia potat  
Ore Sacro. Quin tu cœli post jura recepta  
Dexter ades, placidúsque fave quicúnque vocaris,  
Seu tu noster eris Damon, sive æquior audis  
Diodotus, quo te divino nomine cuncti  
Cœlicolæ nôrint, sylvísque vocabere Damon.  
Quòd tibi purpureus pudor, & sine labe juvenus  
Grata fuit, quòd nulla tori libata voluptas,  
En etiam tibi virginei servantur honores;  
Ipse caput nitidum cinctus rutilante corona,  
Letâque frondentis gestans umbracula palmæ  
Æternùm perages immortales hymenæos;  
Cantus ubi, choreisque furit lyra mista beatis,  
Festa Sionæo bacchantur & Orgia Thyrsos.

210

### *Finis.*

# *Ad Joannem Rousium.*

[Added in Second Edition, 1673.]

Jan. 23. 1646.

## *Ad Joannem Rousium Oxoniensis Academiae Bibliothecarium.*

*De libro Poematum amisso, quem ille sibi denuo mitti postulabat, ut cum aliis nostris in Bibliotheca publica reponeret, Ode.*

### *Strophe 1.*

GEMELLE cultu simplici gaudens liber,  
Fronde licet geminâ,  
Munditiéque nitens non operosâ,  
Quam manus attulit  
Juvenilis olim,  
Sedula tamen haud nimii Poetæ;  
Dum vagus Ausonias nunc per umbras  
Nunc Britannica per vireta lusit  
Insons populi, barbitóque devius  
Indulsit patrio, mox itidem pectine Daunio 10  
Longinquum intonuit melos  
Vicinis, & humum vix tetigit pede;

### *Antistrophe.*

Quis te, parve liber, quis te fratribus  
Subdixit reliquis dolo?  
Cum tu missus ab urbe,  
Docto jugiter obsecrante amico,  
Illustre tendebas iter  
Thamesis ad incunabula  
Cærulei patris,  
Fontes ubi limpidi 20  
Aonidum, thyasusque sacer  
Orbi notus per immensos  
Temporum lapsus redeunte cœlo,  
Celeberque futurus in ævum;

## Miscellaneous Poems.

### *Strophe 2.*

Modò quis deus, aut editus deo  
Pristinam gentis miseratus indolem  
(Si satis noxas luimus priores  
Mollique luxu degener otium)  
Tollat nefandos civium tumultus,  
Almaque revocet studia sanctus 30  
Et relegatas sine sede Musas  
Jam penè totis finibus Angligenùm ;  
Immundasque volucres  
Unguibus imminentes  
Figat Apollineâ pharetrâ,  
Phinéamque abigat pestem procul anne Pegaséo.

### *Antistrophe.*

Quin tu, libelle, nuntii licet malâ  
Fide, vel oscitantîâ  
Semel erraveris agmine fratrum,  
Seu quis te teneat specus, 40  
Seu qua te latebra, forsân unde vili  
Callo teréris institoris insulsi,  
Lætare felix, en iterum tibi  
Spes nova fulget posse profundam  
Fugere Lethen, vehique Superam  
In Jovis aulam remige pennâ ;

### *Strophe 3.*

Nam te Roüsîus sui  
Optat peculi, numeróque justo  
Sibi pollicitum queritur abesse,  
Rogatque venias ille cujus inclyta 50  
Sunt data virûm monumenta curæ :  
Téque adytis etiam sacris  
Voluit reponi quibus & ipse præsidet  
Æternorum operum custos fidelis,  
Quæstorque gazæ nobilioris,  
Quàm cui præfuit Iôn  
Clarus Erechtheides  
Opulenta dei per templa parentis  
Fulvosque tripodas, donaque Delphica  
Iôn Actæa genitus Creusâ. 60

# *Ad Joannem Rousium.*

## *Antistrophe.*

Ergo tu visere lucos  
Musarum ibis amœnos,  
Diamque Phœbi rursus ibis in domum  
Oxoniâ quam valle colit  
Delo posthabitâ,  
Bifidôque Parnassi jugo :  
Ibis honestus,  
Postquam egregiam tu quoque sortem  
Nactus abis, dextri prece sollicitatus amici.  
Illic legéris inter alta nomina  
Authorum, Graiæ simul & Latinæ  
Antiqua gentis lumina, & verum decus.

70

## *Epodos.*

Vos tandem haud vacui mei labores,  
Quicquid hoc sterile fudit ingenium,  
Jam serò placidam sperare jubeo  
Perfunctam invidiâ requiem, sedesque beatas  
Quas bonus Hermes  
Et tutela dabit solers Roüsi,  
Quò neque lingua procax vulgi penetrabit, atque longè  
Turba legentum prava facesset ;  
At ultimi nepotes,  
Et cordatior ætas  
Judicia rebus æquiora forsitan  
Adhibebit integro sinu.  
Tum livore sepulto,  
Si quid meremur sana posteritas sciet  
Roüsio favente.

80

Ode tribus constat Strophis, totidémque Antistrophis unâ demum epodo clausis, quas, tametsi omnes nec versuum numero, nec certis ubique colis exactè respondeant, ita tamen secuimus, commodè legendi potius, quam ad antiquos concinendi modos rationem spectantes. Alioquin hoc genus rectiùs fortasse dici monostrophicum debuerat. Metra partim sunt *κατὰ σχέσιν*, partim *ἀπολελυμένα*. Phaleucia quæ sunt, spondæum tertio loco bis admittunt, quod idem in secundo loco Catullus ad libitum fecit.



PARADISE LOST.

# Paradise lost.

A

## P O E M

Written in

## T E N B O O K S

By *JOHN MILTON.*

---

Licensed and Entred according  
to Order.

---

L O N D O N

Printed, and are to be sold by *Peter Parker*  
under *Creed Church* neer *Aldgate*; And by  
*Robert Boulter* at the *Turks Head* in *Bishopsgate-street*;  
And *Mathias Walker*, under *St. Dunstons Church*  
in *Fleer-street*, 1667.



Paradise Lost.  
A  
P O E M  
IN  
TWELVE BOOKS.

---

The Author  
*J O H N M I L T O N.*

---

The Second Edition  
Revised and Augmented by the  
same Author.

---

L O N D O N,  
Printed by *S. Simmons* next door to the  
*Golden Lion* in *Aldersgate-street*, 1674.



IN  
Paradisum Amissam

Summi Poetæ

JOHANNIS MILTONI.

*Qui legis Amissam Paradisum, grandia magni  
Carmina Miltoni, quid nisi cuncta legis?  
Res cunctas, & cunctarum primordia rerum,  
Et fata, & fines continet iste liber.  
Intima panduntur magni penetralia mundi,  
Scribitur & toto quicquid in Orbe latet.  
Terræque, tractusque maris, cælumque profundum  
Sulphureumque Erebi flammivomumque specus.  
Quæque colunt terras, Portumque & Tartara cæca,  
Quæque colunt summi lucida regna Poli.  
Et quodcunque ullis conclusum est finibus usquam,  
Et sine fine Chaos, & sine fine Deus;  
Et sine fine magis, si quid magis est sine fine,  
In Christo erga homines conciliatus amor.  
Hæc qui speraret quis crederet esse futurum?  
Et tamen hæc hodie terra Britannia legit.  
O quantos in bella Duces! quæ protulit arma!  
Quæ canit, et quanta prælia dira tuba.  
Cælestes acies! atque in certamine Cælum!  
Et quæ Cælestes pugna deceret agros!  
Quantus in ætheriis tollit se Lucifer armis!  
Atque ipso graditur vix Michael minor!  
Quantis, & quam funestis concurritur iris  
Dum ferus hic stellas protegit, ille rapit!  
Dum vulsos Montes ceu Tela reciproca torquent,  
Et non mortali desuper igne pluunt:  
Stat dubius cui se parti concedat Olympus,  
Et metuit pugnae non superesse suæ.*

## On Paradise Lost.

*At simul in cælis Messia insignia fulgent,  
Et currus animes, armaque digna Deo,  
Horrendumque rotæ strident, & sæva rotarum  
Erumpunt torvis fulgura luminibus,  
Et flammæ vibrant, & vera tonitrua rauco  
Admistis flammis insonuere Polo :  
Excidit attonitis mens omnis, & impetus omnis  
Et cassis dextris irrita Tela cadunt.  
Ad pænas fugiunt, & ceu foret Orcus asylum  
Infernis certant condere se tenebris.  
Cedite Romani scriptores, cedite Graii  
Et quos fama recens vel celebravit anus.  
Hæc quicumque leget tantum cecinisse putabit  
Mæonidem ranas, Virgilium culices.*

S. B., M. D.

ON

## Paradise Lost.

WHEN I beheld the Poet blind, yet bold,  
In slender Book his vast Design unfold,  
*Messiah* Crown'd, Gods Reconcil'd Decree,  
Rebelling Angels, the Forbidden Tree,  
Heav'n, Hell, Earth, Chaos, All ; the Argument  
Held me a while misdoubting his Intent,  
That he would ruine (for I saw him strong)  
The sacred Truths to Fable and old Song  
(So *Sampson* groap'd the Temples Posts in spight)  
The World o'rewelming to revenge his sight.

Yet as I read, soon growing less severe,  
I lik'd his Project, the success did fear ;  
Through that wide Field how he his way should find  
O're which lame Faith leads Understanding blind ;  
Lest he perplex'd the things he would explain,  
And what was easie he should render vain.

Or if a Work so infinite he spann'd,  
Jealous I was that some less skilful hand  
(Such as disquiet always what is well,  
And by ill imitating would excell)  
Might hence presume the whole Creations day  
To change in Scenes, and show it in a Play.

Pardon me, Mighty Poet, nor despise  
My causeless, yet not impious, surmise.

## *On Paradise Lost.*

But I am now convinc'd, and none will dare  
Within thy Labours to pretend a share.  
Thou hast not miss'd one thought that could be fit,  
And all that was improper dost omit :  
So that no room is here for Writers left,  
But to detect their Ignorance or Theft.

That Majesty which through thy Work doth Reign  
Draws the Devout, deterring the Profane.  
And things divine thou treatst of in such state  
As them preserves, and thee, inviolate.  
At once delight and horror on us seize,  
Thou singst with so much gravity and ease;  
And above humane flight dost soar aloft  
With Plume so strong, so equal, and so soft.  
The Bird nam'd from that Paradise you sing  
So never flaggs, but always keeps on Wing.

Where couldst thou words of such a compass find?  
Whence furnish such a vast expence of mind?  
Just Heav'n thee like *Tiresias* to requite  
Rewards with Prophesie thy loss of sight.

Well mightst thou scorn thy Readers to allure  
With tinkling Rhime, of thy own sense secure ;  
While the *Town-Bayes* writes all the while and spells,  
And like a Pack-horse tires without his Bells :  
Their Fancies like our Bushy-points appear,  
The Poets tag them, we for fashion wear.  
I too transported by the Mode offend,  
And while I meant to Praise thee must Commend.  
Thy Verse created like thy Theme sublime,  
In Number, Weight, and Measure, needs not Rhime.

*A. M.*

In Paradisum Amissam. On Paradise Lost] *Added in the second edition 1674.*

## *The Printer to the Reader.*

*Courteous Reader*, there was no Argument at first intended to the Book, but for the satisfaction of many that have desired it, I have procur'd it, and withall a reason of that which stumbled many others, why the Poem Rimes not.

*S. Simmons.*

*The Printer to the Reader*] Added in 1668 to the copies then remaining of the first edition, amended in 1669, and omitted in 1670. I have procur'd it, and . . . not 1669] is procured 1668.

### THE VERSE.

THE measure is *English Heroic Verse* without Rime, as that of *Homer* in *Greek*, and of *Virgil* in *Latin*; Rime being no necessary Adjunct or true Ornament of Poem or good Verse, in longer Works especially, but the Invention of a barbarous Age, to set off wretched matter and lame Meeter; grac't indeed since by the use of some famous modern Poets, carried away by Custom, but much to thir own vexation, hindrance, and constraint to express many things otherwise, and for the most part worse then else they would have exprest them. Not without cause therefore some both *Italian* and *Spanish* Poets of prime note have rejected Rime both in longer and shorter Works, as have also long since our best *English* Tragedies, as a thing of it self, to all judicious eares, triveal and of no true musical delight; which consists only in apt Numbers, fit quantity of Syllables, and the sense variously drawn out from one Verse into another, not in the jingling sound of like endings, a fault avoyded by the learned Ancients both in Poetry and all good Oratory. This neglect then of Rime so little is to be taken for a defect, though it may seem so perhaps to vulgar Readers, that it rather is to be esteem'd an example set, the first in *English*, of ancient liberty recover'd to Heroic Poem from the troublesom and modern bondage of Rimeing.

The Verse] Added in 1668 to the copies then remaining of the first edition; together with the Argument. In the second edition (1674) the Argument, with the necessary adjustment to the division made in Books vii and x, was distributed through the several books of the poem, as it is here printed.

# PARADISE LOST.

## BOOK I.

### THE ARGUMENT.

THIS first Book proposes first in brief the whole Subject, *Mans disobedience, and the loss thereupon of Paradise wherein he was plac't*: Then touches the *prime cause of his fall, the Serpent, or rather Satan in the Serpent*; who revolting from God, and drawing to his side many Legions of Angels, was by the command of God driven out of Heaven with all his Crew into the great Deep. Which action past over, the Poem hasts into the midst of things, presenting *Satan with his Angels now fallen into Hell*, describ'd here, *not in the Center* (for Heaven and Earth may be suppos'd as yet not made, certainly not yet accurst) *but in a place of utter darknesse, fittest call'd Chaos*: Here Satan with his Angels lying on the burning Lake, thunder-struck and astonisht, after a certain space recovers, as from confusion, calls up him who next in Order and Dignity lay by him; they confer of thir miserable fall. Satan awakens all his Legions, who lay till then in the same manner confounded; They rise, thir Numbers, array of Battel, thir chief Leaders nam'd, according to the Idols known afterwards in Canaan and the Countries adjoyning. To these Satan directs his Speech, comforts them with hope yet of regaining Heaven, but tells them lastly of a new World and new kind of Creature to be created, according to an ancient Prophesie or report in Heaven; for that Angels were long before this visible Creation, was the opinion of many ancient Fathers. To find out the truth of this Prophesie, and what to determin thereon he refers to a full Councell. What his Associates thence attempt. Pandemonium the Palace of Satan rises, suddenly built out of the Deep: The infernal Peers there sit in Counsel.

OF Mans First Disobedience, and the Fruit  
Of that Forbidden Tree, whose mortal tast  
Brought Death into the World, and all our woe,  
With loss of *Eden*, till one greater Man  
Restore us, and regain the blissful Seat,  
Sing Heav'nly Muse, that on the secret top  
Of *Oreb*, or of *Sinai*, didst inspire  
That Shepherd, who first taught the chosen Seed,

In the Beginning how the Heav'ns and Earth  
 Rose out of *Chaos*: or if *Sion* Hill 10  
 Delight thee more, and *Siloa's* Brook that flow'd  
 Fast by the Oracle of God; I thence  
 Invoke thy aid to my adventrous Song,  
 That with no middle flight intends to soar  
 Above th' *Aonian* Mount, while it pursues  
 Things unattempted yet in Prose or Rhime.  
 And chiefly Thou O Spirit, that dost prefer  
 Before all Temples th' upright heart and pure,  
 Instruct me, for Thou know'st; Thou from the first 20  
 Wast present, and with mighty wings outspread  
 Dove-like satst brooding on the vast Abyss  
 And mad'st it pregnant: What in me is dark  
 Illumine, what is low raise and support;  
 That to the highth of this great Argument  
 I may assert Eternal Providence,  
 And justifie the wayes of God to men.

Say first, for Heav'n hides nothing from thy view  
 Nor the deep Tract of Hell, say first what cause  
 Mov'd our Grand Parents in that happy State,  
 Favour'd of Heav'n so highly, to fall off 30  
 From their Creator, and transgress his Will  
 For one restraint, Lords of the World besides?  
 Who first seduc'd them to that fowl revolt?  
 Th' infernal Serpent; he it was, whose guile  
 Stird up with Envy and Revenge, deceiv'd  
 The Mother of Mankind, what time his Pride  
 Had cast him out from Heav'n, with all his Host  
 Of Rebel Angels, by whose aid aspiring  
 To set himself in Glory above his Peers,  
 He trusted to have equal'd the most High, 40  
 If he oppos'd; and with ambitious aim  
 Against the Throne and Monarchy of God  
 Rais'd impious War in Heav'n and Battel proud  
 With vain attempt. Him the Almighty Power  
 Hurl'd headlong flaming from th' Ethereal Skie  
 With hideous ruine and combustion down  
 To bottomless perdition, there to dwell  
 In Adamantine Chains and penal Fire,  
 Who durst defie th' Omnipotent to Arms.  
 Nine times the Space that measures Day and Night 50



To mortal men, he with his horrid crew  
 Lay vanquisht, rowling in the fiery Gulfe  
 Confounded though immortal: But his doom  
 Reserv'd him to more wrath; for now the thought  
 Both of lost happiness and lasting pain  
 Torments him; round he throws his baleful eyes  
 That witness'd huge affliction and dismay  
 Mixt with obdurate pride and stedfast hate:  
 At once as far as Angels kenn he views  
 The dismal Situation waste and wilde, 60  
 A Dungeon horrible, on all sides round  
 As one great Furnace flam'd, yet from those flames  
 No light, but rather darkness visible  
 Serv'd only to discover sights of woe,  
 Regions of sorrow, doleful shades, where peace  
 And rest can never dwell, hope never comes  
 That comes to all; but torture without end  
 Still urges, and a fiery Deluge, fed  
 With ever-burning Sulphur unconsum'd:  
 Such place Eternal Justice had prepar'd 70  
 For those rebellious, here their Prison ordain'd  
 In utter darkness, and their portion set  
 As far remov'd from God and light of Heav'n  
 As from the Center thrice to th' utmost Pole.  
 O how unlike the place from whence they fell!  
 There the companions of his fall, o'rewhelm'd  
 With Floods and Whirlwinds of tempestuous fire,  
 He soon discerns, and weltring by his side  
 One next himself in power, and next in crime,  
 Long after known in *Palestine*, and nam'd 80  
*Bēēlzebub*. To whom th' Arch-Enemy,  
 And thence in Heav'n call'd Satan, with bold words  
 Breaking the horrid silence thus began.

If thou beest he; But O how fall'n! how chang'd  
 From him, who in the happy Realms of Light  
 Cloth'd with transcendent brightness didst outshine  
 Myriads though bright: If he whom mutual league,  
 United thoughts and counsels, equal hope,  
 And hazard in the Glorious Enterprize,  
 Joynd with me once, now misery hath joynd 90  
 In equal ruin: into what Pit thou seest  
 From what highth fal'n, so much the stronger provd

He with his Thunder : and till then who knew  
The force of those dire Arms? yet not for those  
Nor what the Potent Victor in his rage  
Can else inflict do I repent or change,  
Though chang'd in outward lustre ; that fixt mind  
And high disdain, from sence of injur'd merit,  
That with the mightiest rais'd me to contend,  
And to the fierce contention brought along 100  
Innumerable force of Spirits arm'd  
That durst dislike his reign, and me preferring,  
His utmost power with adverse power oppos'd  
In dubious Battel on the Plains of Heav'n,  
And shook his throne. What though the field be lost?  
All is not lost ; the unconquerable Will,  
And study of revenge, immortal hate,  
And courage never to submit or yield :  
And what is else not to be overcome?  
That Glory never shall his wrath or might 110  
Extort from me. To bow and sue for grace  
With suppliant knee, and deifie his power  
Who from the terrour of this Arm so late  
Doubted his Empire, that were low indeed,  
That were an ignominy and shame beneath  
This downfall ; since by Fate the strength of Gods  
And this Empyrean substance cannot fail,  
Since through experience of this great event  
In Arms not worse, in foresight much advanc't,  
We may with more successful hope resolve 120  
To wage by force or guile eternal Warr  
Irreconcilable, to our grand Foe,  
Who now triumphs, and in th' excess of joy  
Sole reigning holds the Tyranny of Heav'n.  
So spake th' Apostate Angel, though in pain,  
Vaunting aloud, but rackt with deep despare :  
And him thus answer'd soon his bold Compeer.  
O Prince, O Chief of many Throned Powers,  
That led th' imbattelld Seraphim to Warr  
Under thy conduct, and in dreadful deeds 130  
Fearless, endanger'd Heav'n's perpetual King ;  
And put to proof his high Supremacy,  
Whether upheld by strength, or Chance, or Fate,  
Too well I see and rue the dire event,

*Paradise Lost.*

That with sad overthrow and foul defeat  
 Hath lost us Heav'n, and all this mighty Host  
 In horrible destruction laid thus low,  
 As far as Gods and Heav'nly Essences  
 Can perish: for the mind and spirit remains  
 Invincible, and vigour soon returns, 140  
 Though all our Glory extinct, and happy state  
 Here swallow'd up in endless misery.  
 But what if he our Conquerour, (whom I now  
 Of force believe Almighty, since no less  
 Then such could hav orepow'rd such force as ours)  
 Have left us this our spirit and strength intire  
 Strongly to suffer and support our pains,  
 That we may so suffice his vengeful ire,  
 Or do him mightier service as his thralls  
 By right of Warr, what e're his business be 150  
 Here in the heart of Hell to work in Fire,  
 Or do his Errands in the gloomy Deep;  
 What can it then avail though yet we feel  
 Strength undiminisht, or eternal being  
 To undergo eternal punishment?  
 Whereto with speedy words th' Arch-fiend reply'd.

Fall'n Cherube, to be weak is miserable  
 Doing or Suffering: but of this be sure,  
 To do ought good never will be our task,  
 But ever to do ill our sole delight, 160  
 As being the contrary to his high will  
 Whom we resist. If then his Providence  
 Out of our evil seek to bring forth good,  
 Our labour must be to pervert that end,  
 And out of good still to find means of evil;  
 Which oft times may succeed, so as perhaps  
 Shall grieve him, if I fail not, and disturb  
 His inmost counsels from their destin'd aim.  
 But see the angry Victor hath recall'd  
 His Ministers of vengeance and pursuit 170  
 Back to the Gates of Heav'n: The Sulphurous Hail  
 Shot after us in storm, oreblown hath laid  
 The fiery Surge, that from the Precipice  
 Of Heav'n receiv'd us falling, and the Thunder,  
 Wing'd with red Lightning and impetuous rage,  
 Perhaps hath spent his shafts, and ceases now

To bellow through the vast and boundless Deep.  
 Let us not slip th' occasion, whether scorn,  
 Or satiate fury yield it from our Foe.  
 Seest thou yon dreary Plain, forlorn and wilde, 180  
 The seat of desolation, voyd of light,  
 Save what the glimmering of these livid flames  
 Casts pale and dreadful? Thither let us tend  
 From off the tossing of these fiery waves,  
 There rest, if any rest can harbour there,  
 And reassembling our afflicted Powers,  
 Consult how we may henceforth most offend  
 Our Enemy, our own loss how repair,  
 How overcome this dire Calamity,  
 What reinforcement we may gain from Hope, 190  
 If not what resolution from despare.

Thus Satan talking to his nearest Mate  
 With Head up-lift above the wave, and Eyes  
 That sparkling blaz'd, his other Parts besides  
 Prone on the Flood, extended long and large  
 Lay floating many a rood, in bulk as huge  
 As whom the Fables name of monstrous size,  
*Titanian*, or *Earth-born*, that warr'd on *Jove*,  
*Briarios* or *Typhon*, whom the Den  
 By ancient *Tarsus* held, or that Sea-beast 200  
*Leviathan*, which God of all his works  
 Created hugest that swim th' Ocean stream:  
 Him haply slumbring on the *Norway* foam  
 The Pilot of some small night-founder'd Skiff,  
 Deeming some Island, oft, as Sea-men tell,  
 With fixed Anchor in his skaly rind  
 Moors by his side under the Lee, while Night  
 Invests the Sea, and wished Morn delays:  
 So stretcht out huge in length the Arch-fiend lay  
 Chain'd on the burning Lake, nor ever thence 210  
 Had ris'n or heav'd his head, but that the will  
 And high permission of all-ruling Heaven  
 Left him at large to his own dark designs,  
 That with reiterated crimes he might  
 Heap on himself damnation, while he sought  
 Evil to others, and enrag'd might see  
 How all his malice serv'd but to bring forth  
 Infinite goodness, grace and mercy shewn

On Man by him seduc't, but on himself  
 Treble confusion, wrath and vengeance pour'd. 220  
 Forthwith upright he rears from off the Pool  
 His mighty Stature; on each hand the flames  
 Drivn backward slope their pointing spires, & rowld  
 In billows, leave i' th' midst a horrid Vale.  
 Then with expanded wings he steers his flight  
 Aloft, incumbent on the dusky Air  
 That felt unusual weight, till on dry Land  
 He lights, if it were Land that ever burn'd  
 With solid, as the Lake with liquid fire;  
 And such appear'd in hue, as when the force 230  
 Of subterranean wind transports a Hill  
 Torn from *Pelorus*, or the shatter'd side  
 Of thundring *Ætna*, whose combustible  
 And fewel'd entrals thence conceiving Fire,  
 Sublim'd with Mineral fury, aid the Winds,  
 And leave a singed bottom all involv'd  
 With stench and smoak: Such resting found the sole  
 Of unblest feet. Him followed his next Mate,  
 Both glorying to have scap't the *Stygian* flood  
 As Gods, and by their own recover'd strength, 240  
 Not by the sufferance of supernal Power.

Is this the Region, this the Soil, the Clime,  
 Said then the lost Arch Angel, this the seat  
 That we must change for Heav'n, this mournful gloom  
 For that celestial light? Be it so, since hee  
 Who now is Sovran can dispose and bid  
 What shall be right: fardest from him is best  
 Whom reason hath equald, force hath made supream  
 Above his equals. Farewel happy Fields  
 Where Joy for ever dwells: Hail horrors, hail 250  
 Infernal world, and thou profoundest Hell  
 Receive thy new Possessor: One who brings  
 A mind not to be chang'd by Place or Time.  
 The mind is its own place, and in it self  
 Can make a Heav'n of Hell, a Hell of Heav'n.  
 What matter where, if I be still the same,  
 And what I should be, all but less then hee  
 Whom Thunder hath made greater? Here at least  
 We shall be free; th' Almighty hath not built  
 Here for his envy, will not drive us hence: 260

Here we may reign secure, and in my choyce  
To reign is worth ambition though in Hell:  
Better to reign in Hell, then serve in Heav'n.  
But wherefore let we then our faithful friends,  
Th' associates and copartners of our loss  
Lye thus astonisht on th' oblivious Pool,  
And call them not to share with us their part  
In this unhappy Mansion, or once more  
With rallied Arms to try what may be yet  
Regained in Heav'n, or what more lost in Hell?

270

So *Satan* spake, and him *Bēëlzebub*  
Thus answer'd. Leader of those Armies bright,  
Which but th' Omnipotent none could have foyld,  
If once they hear that voyce, their liveliest pledge  
Of hope in fears and dangers, heard so oft  
In worst extreame, and on the perilous edge  
Of battel when it rag'd, in all assaults  
Their surest signal, they will soon resume  
New courage and revive, though now they lye  
Groveling and prostrate on yon Lake of Fire,  
As we erewhile, astounded and amaz'd,  
No wonder, fall'n such a pernicious highth.

280

He scarce had ceas't when the superiour Fiend  
Was moving toward the shore; his ponderous shield  
Ethereal temper, massy, large and round,  
Behind him cast; the broad circumference  
Hung on his shoulders like the Moon, whose Orb  
Through Optic Glass the *Tuscan* Artist views  
At Ev'ning from the top of *Fesole*,  
Or in *Valdarno*, to descry new Lands,  
Rivers or Mountains in her spotty Globe.  
His Spear, to equal which the tallest Pine  
Hewn on *Norwegian* hills, to be the Mast  
Of some great Ammiral, were but a wand,  
He walkt with to support uneasie steps  
Over the burning Marle, not like those steps  
On Heavens Azure, and the torrid Clime  
Smote on him sore besides, vaulted with Fire;  
Nathless he so endur'd, till on the Beach  
Of that inflamed Sea, he stood and call'd  
His Legions, Angel Forms, who lay intrans't  
Thick as Autumnal Leaves that strow the Brooks

290

300

*Paradise Lost.*

In *Vallombrosa*, where th' *Etrurian* shades  
 High overarch't imbrow; or scatterd sedge  
 Afloat, when with fierce Winds *Orion* arm'd  
 Hath vex't the Red-Sea Coast, whose waves orethrew  
*Busiris* and his *Memphian* Chivalrie,  
 While with perfidious hatred they pursu'd  
 The Sojourners of *Goshen*, who beheld  
 From the safe shore their floating Carkases 310  
 And broken Chariot Wheels, so thick bestrown  
 Abject and lost lay these, covering the Flood,  
 Under amazement of their hideous change.  
 He call'd so loud, that all the hollow Deep  
 Of Hell resounded. Princes, Potentates,  
 Warriors, the Flow'r of Heav'n, once yours, now lost,  
 If such astonishment as this can sieze  
 Eternal spirits; or have ye chos'n this place  
 After the toyl of Battel to repose  
 Your wearied vertue, for the ease you find 320  
 To slumber here, as in the Vales of Heav'n?  
 Or in this abject posture have ye sworn  
 To adore the Conquerour? who now beholds  
 Cherube and Seraph rowling in the Flood  
 With scatter'd Arms and Ensigns, till anon  
 His swift pursuers from Heav'n Gates discern  
 Th' advantage, and descending tread us down  
 Thus drooping, or with linked Thunderbolts  
 Transfix us to the bottom of this Gulfe.  
 Awake, arise, or be for ever fall'n. 330

They heard, and were abasht, and up they sprung  
 Upon the wing, as when men wont to watch  
 On duty, sleeping found by whom they dread,  
 Rouse and bestir themselves ere well awake.  
 Nor did they not perceave the evil plight  
 In which they were, or the fierce pains not feel;  
 Yet to their Generals Voyce they soon obey'd  
 Innumerable. As when the potent Rod  
 Of *Anrams* Son in *Egypt's* evill day  
 Wav'd round the Coast, up call'd a pitchy cloud 340  
 Of *Locusts*, warping on the Eastern Wind,  
 That ore the Realm of impious *Pharaoh* hung  
 Like Night, and darken'd all the Land of *Nile*:  
 So numberless were those bad Angels seen



# Paradise Lost.

[BK. I.

Hovering on wing under the Cope of Hell  
'Twixt upper, nether, and surrounding Fires ;  
Till, as a signal giv'n, th' uplifted Spear  
Of their great Sultan waving to direct  
Thir course, in even ballance down they light  
On the firm brimstone, and fill all the Plain : 350  
A multitude, like which the populous North  
Pour'd never from her frozen loyns, to pass  
*Rhene* or the *Danaw*, when her barbarous Sons  
Came like a Deluge on the South, and spread  
Beneath *Gibraltar* to the *Lybian* sands.  
Forthwith from every Squadron and each Band  
The Heads and Leaders thither hast where stood  
Their great Commander ; Godlike shapes and forms  
Excelling human, Princely Dignities,  
And Powers that earst in Heaven sat on Thrones ; 360  
Though of their Names in heav'nly Records now  
Be no memorial, blotted out and ras'd  
By thir Rebellion, from the Books of Life.  
Nor had they yet among the Sons of *Eve*  
Got them new Names, till wandring ore the Earth,  
Through Gods high sufferance for the tryal of man,  
By falsities and lyes the greatest part  
Of Mankind they corrupted for forsake  
God their Creator, and th' invisible  
Glory of him, that made them, to transform 370  
Oft to the Image of a Brute, adorn'd  
With gay Religions full of Pomp and Gold,  
And Devils to adore for Deities :  
Then were they known to men by various Names,  
And various Idols through the Heathen World.  
Say, Muse, their Names then known, who first, who last,  
Rous'd from the slumber, on that fiery Couch,  
At thir great Emperors call, as next in worth  
Came singly where he stood on the bare strand,  
While the promiscuous croud stood yet aloof ? 380  
The chief were those who from the Pit of Hell  
Roaming to seek their prey on earth, durst fix  
Their Seats long after next the Seat of God,  
Their Altars by his Altar, Gods ador'd  
Among the Nations round, and durst abide  
*Jehovah* thundring out of *Sion*, thron'd



Between the Cherubim ; yea, often plac'd  
 Within his Sanctuary it self their Shrines,  
 Abominations ; and with cursed things  
 His holy Rites, and solemn Feasts profan'd, 390  
 And with their darkness durst affront his light.  
 First *Moloch*, horrid King besmear'd with blood  
 Of human sacrifice, and parents tears,  
 Though for the noyse of Drums and Timbrels loud  
 Their childrens cries unheard, that past through fire  
 To his grim Idol. Him the *Ammonite*  
 Worshipt in *Rabba* and her watry Plain,  
 In *Argob* and in *Basan*, to the stream  
 Of utmost *Arnon*. Nor content with such  
 Audacious neighbourhood, the wisest heart 400  
 Of *Solomon* he led by fraud to build  
 His Temple right against the Temple of God  
 On that opprobrious Hill, and made his Grove  
 The pleasant Vally of *Hinnom*, *Tophet* thence  
 And black *Gehenna* call'd, the Type of Hell.  
 Next *Chemos*, th' obscene dread of *Moabs* Sons,  
 From *Aroer* to *Nebo*, and the wild  
 Of Southmost *Abarim* ; in *Hesebon*  
 And *Horonaim*, *Seons* Realm, beyond  
 The flowry Dale of *Sibma* clad with Vines, 410  
 And *Eleale* to th' *Asphaltick* Pool.  
*Peor* his other Name, when he entic'd  
*Israel* in *Sittim* on their march from *Nile*  
 To do him wanton rites, which cost them woe.  
 Yet thence his lustful Orgies he enlarg'd  
 Even to that Hill of scandal, by the Grove  
 Of *Moloch* homicide, lust hard by hate ;  
 Till good *Josiah* drove them thence to Hell.  
 With these came they, who from the bordring flood  
 Of old *Euphrates* to the Brook that parts 420  
*Egypt* from *Syrian* ground, had general Names  
 Of *Baalim* and *Ashtaroth*, those male,  
 These Feminine. For Spirits when they please  
 Can either Sex assume, or both ; so soft  
 And uncompounded is their Essence pure,  
 Not ti'd or manacl'd with joynt or limb,  
 Nor founded on the brittle strength of bones,  
 Like cumbrous flesh ; but in what shape they choose

Dilated or condens't, bright or obscure,  
 Can execute their aerie purposes, 430  
 And works of love or enmity fulfill.  
 For those the Race of *Israel* oft forsook  
 Their living strength, and unfrequented left  
 His righteous Altar, bowing lowly down  
 To bestial Gods; for which their heads as low  
 Bow'd down in Battel, sunk before the Spear  
 Of despicable foes. With these in troop  
 Came *Astoreth*, whom the *Phœnicians* call'd  
*Astarte*, Queen of Heav'n, with crescent Horns;  
 To whose bright Image nightly by the Moon 440  
*Sidonian* Virgins paid their Vows and Songs,  
 In *Sion* also not unsung, where stood  
 Her Temple on th' offensive Mountain, built  
 By that uxorious King, whose heart though large,  
 Beguil'd by fair Idolatresses, fell  
 To Idols foul. *Thammuz* came next behind.  
 Whose annual wound in *Lebanon* allur'd  
 The *Syrian* Damsels to lament his fate  
 In amorous dittyes all a Summers day,  
 While smooth *Adonis* from his native Rock 450  
 Ran purple to the Sea, suppos'd with blood  
 Of *Thammuz* yearly wounded: the Love-tale  
 Infected *Sions* daughters with like heat,  
 Whose wanton passions in the sacred Porch  
*Ezekiel* saw, when by the Vision led  
 His eye survey'd the dark Idolatries  
 Of alienated *Judah*. Next came one  
 Who mourn'd in earnest, when the Captive Ark  
 Maim'd his brute Image, head and hands lopt off  
 In his own Temple, on the grunsel edge, 460  
 Where he fell flat, and sham'd his Worshipers:  
*Dagon* his Name, Sea Monster, upward Man  
 And downward Fish: yet had his Temple high  
 Rear'd in *Azotus*, dreaded through the Coast  
 Of *Palestine*, in *Gath* and *Ascalon*,  
 And *Accaron* and *Gaza's* frontier bounds.  
 Him follow'd *Rimmon*, whose delightful Seat  
 Was fair *Damascus*, on the fertil Banks  
 Of *Abbana* and *Pharphar*, lucid streams.  
 He also against the house of God was bold: 470

A Leper once he lost and gain'd a King,  
*Ahaz* his sottish Conquerour, whom he drew  
 Gods Altar to disparage and displace  
 For one of *Syrian* mode, whereon to burn  
 His odious offrings, and adore the Gods  
 Whom he had vanquisht. After these appear'd  
 A crew who under Names of old Renown,  
*Osiris, Isis, Orus* and their Train  
 With monstrous shapes and sorceries abus'd  
 Fanatic *Egypt* and her Priests, to seek  
 Thir wandring Gods disguis'd in brutish forms  
 Rather then human. Nor did *Israel* scape  
 Th' infection when their borrow'd Gold compos'd  
 The Calf in *Oreb*: and the Rebel King  
 Doubl'd that sin in *Bethel* and in *Dan*,  
 Lik'ning his Maker to the Grazed Ox,  
*Jehovah*, who in one Night when he pass'd  
 From *Egypt* marching, equal'd with one stroke  
 Both her first born and all her bleating Gods.  
*Belial* came last, then whom a Spirit more lewd  
 Fell not from Heaven, or more gross to love  
 Vice for it self: To him no Temple stood  
 Or Altar smoak'd; yet who more oft then hee  
 In Temples and at Altars, when the Priest  
 Turns Atheist, as did *Elys* Sons, who fill'd  
 With lust and violence the house of God.  
 In Courts and Palaces he also Reigns  
 And in luxurious Cities, where the noyse  
 Of riot ascends above thir loftiest Towrs,  
 And injury and outrage: And when Night  
 Darkens the Streets, then wander forth the Sons  
 Of *Belial*, flown with insolence and wine.  
 Witness the Streets of *Sodom*, and that night  
 In *Gibeah*, when hospitable *Dores*  
 Yielded thir Matrons to prevent worse rape.  
 These were the prime in order and in might;  
 The rest were long to tell, though far renown'd,  
 Th' *Ionian* Gods, of *Javans* Issue held  
 Gods, yet confest later then Heav'n and Earth  
 Thir boasted Parents; *Titan* Heav'ns first born

480

490

500

510

504, 5 hospitable *Dores* Yielded thir Matrons] the hospitable door Expos'd  
 a Matron 1674

With his enormous brood, and birthright seis'd  
 By younger *Saturn*, he from mightier *Jove*  
 His own and *Rhea's* Son like measure found;  
 So *Jove* usurping reign'd: these first in *Creet*  
 And *Ida* known, thence on the Snowy top  
 Of cold *Olympus* rul'd the middle Air  
 Thir highest Heav'n; or on the *Delphian* Cliff,  
 Or in *Dodona*, and through all the bounds  
 Of *Doric* Land; or who with *Saturn* old  
 Fled over *Adria* to th' *Hesperian* Fields,  
 And ore the *Celtic* roam'd the utmost Isles.  
 All these and more came flocking; but with looks  
 Down cast and damp, yet such wherein appear'd  
 Obscure som glimps of joy, to have found thir chief  
 Not in despair, to have found themselves not lost  
 In loss it self; which on his count'nance cast  
 Like doubtful hue: but he his wonted pride  
 Soon recollecting, with high words, that bore  
 Semblance of worth not substance, gently rais'd  
 Their fainted courage, and dispel'd their fears.  
 Then strait commands that at the warlike sound  
 Of Trumpets loud and Clarions be upreard  
 His mighty Standard; that proud honour claim'd  
*Azazel* as his right, a Cherube tall:  
 Who forthwith from the glittering Staff unfurld  
 Th' Imperial Ensign, which full high advanc't  
 Shon like a Meteor streaming to the Wind  
 With Gems and Golden lustre rich imblaz'd,  
 Seraphic arms and Trophies: all the while  
 Sonorous mettal blowing Martial sounds:  
 At which the universal Host upsent  
 A shout that tore Hells Concave, and beyond  
 Frighted the Reign of *Chaos* and old Night.  
 All in a moment through the gloom were seen  
 Ten thousand Banners rise into the Air  
 With Orient Colours waving: with them rose  
 A Forrest huge of Spears: and thronging Helms  
 Appear'd, and serried Shields in thick array  
 Of depth immeasurable: Anon they move  
 In perfect *Phalanx* to the *Dorian* mood  
 Of Flutes and soft Recorders; such as rais'd

520

530

540

550

530 fainted] fa(i)nting 1674

To highth of noblest temper Hero's old  
 Arming to Battel, and in stead of rage  
 Deliberate valour breath'd, firm and unmov'd  
 With dread of death to flight or foul retreat,  
 Nor wanting power to mitigate and swage  
 With solemn touches, troubl'd thoughts, and chase  
 Anguish and doubt and fear and sorrow and pain  
 From mortal or immortal minds. Thus they  
 Breathing united force with fixed thought  
 Mov'd on in silence to soft Pipes that charm'd  
 Thir painful steps o're the burnt soyle; and now  
 Advanc't in view they stand, a horrid Front  
 Of dreadful length and dazzling Arms, in guise  
 Of Warriors old with order'd Spear and Shield,  
 Awaiting what command thir mighty Chief  
 Had to impose: He through the armed Files  
 Darts his experienc't eye, and soon traverse  
 The whole Battalion views, thir order due,  
 Thir visages and stature as of Gods,  
 Thir number last he summs. And now his heart  
 Distends with pride, and hardning in his strength  
 Glories: For never since created man,  
 Met such imbodied force, as nam'd with these  
 Could merit more then that small infantry  
 Warr'd on by Cranes: though all the Giant brood  
 Of *Phlegra* with th' Heroic Race were joyn'd  
 That fought at *Theb's* and *Ilium*, on each side  
 Mixt with auxiliar Gods; and what resounds  
 In Fable or *Romance* of *Uthers* Son  
 Begirt with *British* and *Armoric* Knights;  
 And all who since, Baptiz'd or Infidel  
 Jousted in *Aspramont* or *Montalban*,  
*Damasco*, or *Marocco*, or *Trebisond*,  
 Or whom *Biserta* sent from *Afric* shore  
 When *Charlemain* with all his Peerage fell  
 By *Fontarabbia*. Thus far these beyond  
 Compare of mortal prowess, yet observ'd  
 Thir dread Commander: he above the rest  
 In shape and gesture proudly eminent  
 Stood like a Towr; his form had yet not lost  
 All her Original brightness, nor appear'd  
 Less then Arch Angel ruind, and th' excess

560

570

580

590

Of Glory obscur'd: As when the Sun new ris'n  
Looks through the Horizontal misty Air  
Shorn of his Beams, or from behind the Moon  
In dim Eclips disastrous twilight sheds  
On half the Nations, and with fear of change  
Perplexes Monarchs. Dark'n'd so, yet shon  
Above them all th' Arch Angel: but his face 600  
Deep scars of Thunder had intrencht, and care  
Sat on his faded cheek, but under Browes  
Of dauntless courage, and considerate Pride  
Waiting revenge: cruel his eye, but cast  
Signs of remorse and passion to behold  
The fellows of his crime, the followers rather  
(Far other once beheld in bliss) condemn'd  
For ever now to have their lot in pain,  
Millions of Spirits for his fault amerc't  
Of Heav'n, and from Eternal Splendors flung 610  
For his revolt, yet faithfull how they stood,  
Thir Glory witherd. As when Heavens Fire  
Hath scath'd the Forrest Oaks, or Mountain Pines,  
With singed top their stately growth though bare  
Stands on the blasted Heath. He now prepar'd  
To speak; whereat their doubl'd Ranks they bend  
From Wing to Wing, and half enclose him round  
With all his Peers: attention held them mute.  
Thrice he assayd, and thrice in spite of scorn,  
Tears such as Angels weep, burst forth: at last 620  
Words interwove with sighs found out their way.

O Myriads of immortal Spirits, O Powers  
Matchless, but with th' Almighty, and that strife  
Was not inglorious, though th' event was dire,  
As this place testifies, and this dire change  
Hateful to utter: but what power of mind  
Foreseeing or presaging, from the Depth  
Of knowledge past or present, could have fear'd,  
How such united force of Gods, how such  
As stood like these, could ever know repulse? 630  
For who can yet beleieve, though after loss,  
That all these puissant Legions, whose exile  
Hath emptied Heav'n, shall faile to re-ascend  
Self-rais'd, and repossess their native seat?  
For me, be witness all the Host of Heav'n,



If counsels different, or danger shun'd  
 By me, have lost our hopes. But he who reigns  
 Monarch in Heav'n, till then as one secure  
 Sat on his Throne, upheld by old repute,  
 Consent or custome, and his Regal State  
 Put forth at full, but still his strength conceal'd,  
 Which tempted our attempt, and wrought our fall.  
 Henceforth his might we know, and know our own  
 So as not either to provoke, or dread  
 New warr, provok't; our better part remains  
 To work in close design, by fraud or guile  
 What force effected not: that he no less  
 At length from us may find, who overcomes  
 By force, hath overcome but half his foe.  
 Space may produce new Worlds; whereof so rife  
 There went a fame in Heav'n that he ere long  
 Intended to create, and therein plant  
 A generation, whom his choice regard  
 Should favour equal to the Sons of Heaven:  
 Thither, if but to prie, shall be perhaps  
 Our first eruption, thither or elsewhere:  
 For this Infernal Pit shall never hold  
 Cælestial Spirits in Bondage, nor th' Abyse  
 Long under darkness cover. But these thoughts  
 Full Counsel must mature: Peace is despair'd,  
 For who can think Submission! Warr then, Warr  
 Open or understood must be resolv'd.

640

650

660

He spake: and to confirm his words, out-flew  
 Millions of flaming swords, drawn from the thighs  
 Of mighty Cherubim; the sudden blaze  
 Far round illumin'd hell: highly they rag'd  
 Against the Highest, and fierce with grasped arms  
 Clash'd on their sounding shields the din of war,  
 Hurling defiance toward the vault of Heav'n.

There stood a Hill not far whose griesly top  
 Belch'd fire and rowling smoak; the rest entire  
 Shon with a glossie scurff, undoubted sign  
 That in his womb was hid metallic Ore,  
 The work of Sulphur. Thither wing'd with speed  
 A numerous Brigad hasten'd. As when bands  
 Of Pioners with Spade and Pickaxe arm'd  
 Forerun the Royal Camp, to trench a Field,

670

Or cast a Rampart. *Mammon* led them on,  
*Mammon*, the least erected Spirit that fell  
 From heav'n, for ev'n in heav'n his looks and thoughts 680  
 Were always downward bent, admiring more  
 The riches of Heav'n's pavement, trod'n Gold,  
 Then aught divine or holy else enjoy'd  
 In vision beatific: by him first  
 Men also, and by his suggestion taught,  
 Ransack'd the Center, and with impious hands  
 Riff'd the bowels of their mother Earth  
 For Treasures better hid. Soon had his crew  
 Op'nd into the Hill a spacious wound  
 And dig'd out ribs of Gold. Let none admire 690  
 That riches grow in Hell; that soyle may best  
 Deserve the pretious bane. And here let those  
 Who boast in mortal things, and wondring tell  
 Of *Babel*, and the works of *Memphian* Kings,  
 Learn how thir greatest Monuments of Fame,  
 And Strength and Art are easily outdone  
 By Spirits reprobate, and in an hour  
 What in an age they with incessant toyle  
 And hands innumerable scarce perform.  
 Nigh on the Plain in many cells prepar'd, 700  
 That underneath had veins of liquid fire  
 Sluc'd from the Lake, a second multitude  
 With wondrous Art founded the massie Ore,  
 Severing each kinde, and scum'd the Bullion dross:  
 A third as soon had form'd within the ground  
 A various mould, and from the boyling cells  
 By strange conveyance fill'd each hollow nook,  
 As in an Organ from one blast of wind  
 To many a row of Pipes the sound-board breaths.  
 Anon out of the earth a Fabrick huge 710  
 Rose like an Exhalation, with the sound  
 Of Dulcet Symphonies and voices sweet,  
 Built like a Temple, where *Pilasters* round  
 Were set, and Doric pillars overlaid  
 With Golden Architrave; nor did there want  
 Cornice or Freeze, with bossy Sculptures grav'n,  
 The Roof was fretted Gold. Not *Babylon*,  
 Nor great *Alcairo* such magnificence

703 founded] found out 1674



Equal'd in all thir glories, to inshrine  
*Belus* or *Serapis* thir Gods, or seat 720  
 Thir Kings, when *Ægypt* with *Assyria* strove  
 In wealth and luxurie. Th' ascending pile  
 Stood fixt her stately highth, and strait the dores  
 Op'ning thir brazen foulds discover wide  
 Within, her ample spaces, o're the smooth  
 And level pavement: from the arched roof  
 Pendant by suttile Magic many a row  
 Of Starry Lamps and blazing Cressets fed  
 With *Naphtha* and *Asphaltus* yeilded light  
 As from a sky. The hasty multitude 730  
 Admiring enter'd, and the work some praise  
 And some the Architect: his hand was known  
 In Heav'n by many a Towred structure high,  
 Where Scepter'd Angels held thir residence,  
 And sat as Princes, whom the supreme King  
 Exalted to such power, and gave to rule,  
 Each in his Herarchie, the Orders bright.  
 Nor was his name unheard or unador'd  
 In ancient *Greece*; and in *Ausonian* land  
 Men called him *Mulciber*; and how he fell 740  
 From Heav'n, they fabl'd, thrown by angry *Jove*  
 Sheer o're the Chrystal Battlements: from Morn  
 To Noon he fell, from Noon to dewy Eve,  
 A Summers day; and with the setting Sun  
 Dropt from the Zenith like a falling Star,  
 On *Lemnos* th' *Ægean* Ile: thus they relate,  
 Erring; for he with this rebellious rout  
 Fell long before; nor aught avail'd him now  
 To have built in Heav'n high Towrs; nor did he scape  
 By all his Engines, but was headlong sent 750  
 With his industrious crew to build in hell.  
 Mean while the winged Haralds by command  
 Of Sovran power, with awful Ceremony  
 And Trumpets sound throughout the Host proclaim  
 A solemn Councel forthwith to be held  
 At *Pandemonium*, the high Capital  
 Of Satan and his Peers: thir summons call'd  
 From every Band and squared Regiment  
 By place or choice the worthiest; they anon

With hunderds and with thousands trooping came 760  
 Attended: all access was throng'd, the Gates  
 And Porches wide, but chief the spacious Hall  
 (Though like a cover'd field, where Champions bold  
 Wont ride in arm'd, and at the Soldans chair  
 Defi'd the best of *Panin* chivalry  
 To mortal combat or carreer with Lance)  
 Thick swarm'd, both on the ground and in the air,  
 Brusht with the hiss of russling wings. As Bees  
 In spring time, when the Sun with *Taurus* rides,  
 Poure forth thir populous youth about the Hive 770  
 In clusters; they among fresh dews and flowers  
 Flie to and fro, or on the smoothed Plank,  
 The suburb of thir Straw-built Cittadel,  
 New rub'd with Baume, expatiate and confer  
 Thir State affairs. So thick the aerie crowd  
 Swarm'd and were straitn'd; till the Signal giv'n,  
 Behold a wonder! they but now who seemd  
 In bigness to surpass Earths Giant Sons  
 Now less then smallest Dwarfs, in narrow room  
 Throng numberless, like that Pigmean Race 780  
 Beyond the *Indian* Mount, or Faerie Elves,  
 Whose midnight Revels, by a Forrest side  
 Or Fountain some belated Peasant sees,  
 Or dreams he sees, while over head the Moon  
 Sits Arbitress, and neerer to the Earth  
 Wheels her pale course, they on thir mirth & dance  
 Intent, with jocond Music charm his ear;  
 At once with joy and fear his heart rebounds.  
 Thus incorporeal Spirits to smallest forms  
 Reduc'd thir shapes immense, and were at large, 790  
 Though without number still amidst the Hall  
 Of that infernal Court. But far within  
 And in thir own dimensions like themselves  
 The great Seraphic Lords and Cherubim  
 In close recess and secret conclave sat  
 A thousand Demy-Gods on golden seat's,  
 Frequent and full. After short silence then  
 And summons read, the great consult began.

*The End of the First Book.*

# PARADISE LOST.

## BOOK II.

### THE ARGUMENT.

*The Consultation begun, Satan debates whether another Battel be to be hazarded for the recovery of Heaven: some advise it, others dissuade: A third proposal is prefer'd, mention'd before by Satan, to search the truth of that Prophesie or Tradition in Heaven concerning another world, and another kind of creature equal or not much inferiour to themselves, about this time to be created: Thir doubt who shall be sent on this difficult search: Satan thir chief undertakes alone the voyage, is honourd and applauded. The Council thus ended, the rest betake them several wayes and to several employments, as thir inclinations lead them, to entertain the time till Satan return. He passes on his Journey to Hell Gates, finds them shut, and who sat there to guard them, by whom at length they are op'nd, and discover to him the great Gulf between Hell and Heaven; with what difficulty he passes through, directed by Chaos, the Power of that place, to the sight of this new World which he sought.*

HIGH on a Throne of Royal State, which far  
Outshon the wealth of Ormus and of Ind,  
Or where the gorgeous East with richest hand  
Shows on her Kings *Barbaric* Pearl & Gold,  
Satan exalted sat, by merit rais'd  
To that bad eminence; and from despair  
Thus high uplifted beyond hope, aspires  
Beyond thus high, insatiate to pursue  
Vain Warr with Heav'n, and by success untaught  
His proud imaginations thus displaid.

10

Powers and Dominions, Deities of Heav'n,  
For since no deep within her gulf can hold  
Immortal vigor, though opprest and fall'n,  
I give not Heav'n for lost. From this descent  
Celestial virtues rising, will appear

Argument l. 7 shall] should 1669

More glorious and more dread then from no fall,  
 And trust themselves to fear no second fate :  
 Mee though just right, and the fixt Laws of Heav'n  
 Did first create your Leader, next, free choice,  
 With what besides, in Counsel or in Fight, 20  
 Hath bin achievd of merit, yet this loss  
 Thus farr at least recover'd, hath much more  
 Establish't in a safe unenvied Throne  
 Yielded with full consent. The happier state  
 In Heav'n, which follows dignity, might draw  
 Envy from each inferior ; but who here  
 Will envy whom the highest place exposes  
 Formost to stand against the Thunderers aime  
 Your bulwark, and condemns to greatest share  
 Of endless pain ? where there is then no good 30  
 For which to strive, no strife can grow up there  
 From Faction ; for none sure will claim in hell  
 Precedence, none, whose portion is so small  
 Of present pain, that with ambitious mind  
 Will covet more. With this advantage then  
 To union, and firm Faith, and firm accord,  
 More then can be in Heav'n, we now return  
 To claim our just inheritance of old,  
 Surer to prosper then prosperity  
 Could have assur'd us ; and by what best way, 40  
 Whether of open Warr or covert guile,  
 We now debate ; who can advise, may speak.

He ceas'd, and next him *Moloch*, Scepter'd King  
 Stood up, the strongest and the fiercest Spirit  
 That fought in Heav'n ; now fiercer by despair :  
 His trust was with th' Eternal to be deem'd  
 Equal in strength, and rather then be less  
 Car'd not to be at all ; with that care lost  
 Went all his fear : of God, or Hell, or worse  
 He reck'd not, and these words thereafter spake. 50

My sentence is for open Warr : Of Wiles,  
 More unexpert, I boast not : them let those  
 Contrive who need, or when they need, not now.  
 For while they sit contriving, shall the rest,  
 Millions that stand in Arms, and longing wait  
 The Signal to ascend, sit lingring here  
 Heav'ns fugitives, and for thir dwelling place

Accept this dark opprobrious Den of shame,  
 The Prison of his Tyranny who Reigns  
 By our delay? no, let us rather choose 60  
 Arm'd with Hell flames and fury all at once  
 O're Heav'ns high Towrs to force resistless way,  
 Turning our Tortures into horrid Arms  
 Against the Torturer; when to meet the noise  
 Of his Almighty Engin he shall hear  
 Infernal Thunder, and for Lightning see  
 Black fire and horror shot with equal rage  
 Among his Angels; and his Throne it self  
 Mixt with *Tartarean* Sulphur, and strange fire, 70  
 His own invented Torments. But perhaps  
 The way seems difficult and steep to scale  
 With upright wing against a higher foe.  
 Let such bethink them, if the sleepy drench  
 Of that forgetful Lake benumme not still,  
 That in our proper motion we ascend  
 Up to our native seat: descent and fall  
 To us is adverse. Who but felt of late  
 When the fierce Foe hung on our brok'n Rear  
 Insulting, and pursu'd us through the Deep,  
 With what compulsion and laborious flight 80  
 We sunk thus low? Th' ascent is easie then;  
 Th' event is fear'd; should we again provoke  
 Our stronger, some worse way his wrath may find  
 To our destruction: if there be in Hell  
 Fear to be worse destroy'd: what can be worse  
 Then to dwell here, driv'n out from bliss, condemn'd  
 In this abhorred deep to utter woe;  
 Where pain of unextinguishable fire  
 Must exercise us without hope of end  
 The Vassals of his anger, when the Scourge 90  
 Inexorably, and the torturing houre  
 Calls us to Penance? More destroy'd then thus  
 We should be quite abolisht and expire.  
 What fear we then? what doubt we to incense  
 His utmost ire? which to the highth enrag'd,  
 Will either quite consume us, and reduce  
 To nothing this essential, happier farr  
 Then miserable to have eternal being:  
 Or if our substance be indeed Divine,

And cannot cease to be, we are at worst 100  
 On this side nothing; and by proof we feel  
 Our power sufficient to disturb his Heav'n,  
 And with perpetual inrodes to Allarme,  
 Though inaccessible, his fatal Throne :  
 Which if not Victory is yet Revenge.

He ended frowning, and his look denounc'd  
 Desperate revenge, and Battel dangerous  
 To less then Gods. On th' other side up rose  
*Belial*, in act more graceful and humane ;  
 A fairer person lost not Heav'n ; he seemd 110  
 For dignity compos'd and high exploit :  
 But all was false and hollow ; though his Tongue  
 Dropt Manna, and could make the worse appear  
 The better reason, to perplex and dash  
 Maturest Counsels : for his thoughts were low ;  
 To vice industrious, but to Nobler deeds  
 Timorous and slothful : yet he pleas'd the eare,  
 And with perswasive accent thus began.

I should be much for open Warr, O Peers,  
 As not behind in hate ; if what was urg'd 120  
 Main reason to perswade immediate Warr,  
 Did not dissuade me most, and seem to cast  
 Ominous conjecture on the whole success :  
 When he who most excels in fact of Arms,  
 In what he counsels and in what excels  
 Mistrustful, grounds his courage on despair  
 And utter dissolution, as the scope  
 Of all his aim, after some dire revenge.  
 First, what Revenge ? the Towrs of Heav'n are fill'd  
 With Armed watch, that render all access 130  
 Impregnable ; oft on the bordering Deep  
 Encamp thir Legions, or with obscure wing  
 Scout farr and wide into the Realm of night,  
 Scorning surprize. Or could we break our way  
 By force, and at our heels all Hell should rise  
 With blackest Insurrection, to confound  
 Heav'ns purest Light, yet our great Enemie  
 All incorruptible would on his Throne  
 Sit unpolluted, and th' Ethereal mould  
 Incapable of stain would soon expel  
 Her mischief, and purge off the baser fire 140



Victorious. Thus repuls'd, our final hope  
 Is flat despair; we must exasperate  
 Th' Almighty Victor to spend all his rage,  
 And that must end us, that must be our cure,  
 To be no more; sad cure; for who would loose,  
 Though full of pain, this intellectual being,  
 Those thoughts that wander through Eternity,  
 To perish rather, swallowd up and lost  
 In the wide womb of uncreated night,  
 Devoid of sense and motion? and who knows,  
 Let this be good, whether our angry Foe  
 Can give it, or will ever? how he can  
 Is doubtful; that he never will is sure.  
 Will he, so wise, let loose at once his ire,  
 Belike through impotence, or unaware,  
 To give his Enemies thir wish, and end  
 Them in his anger, whom his anger saves  
 To punish endless? wherefore cease we then?  
 Say they who counsel Warr, we are decreed,  
 Reserv'd and destin'd to Eternal woe;  
 Whatever doing, what can we suffer more,  
 What can we suffer worse? is this then worst,  
 Thus sitting, thus consulting, thus in Arms?  
 What when we fled amain, pursu'd and strook  
 With Heav'ns afflicting Thunder, and besought  
 The Deep to shelter us? this Hell then seem'd  
 A refuge from those wounds: or when we lay  
 Chain'd on the burning Lake? that sure was worse.  
 What if the breath that kindl'd those grim fires  
 Awak'd should blow them into sevenfold rage  
 And plunge us in the Flames? or from above  
 Should intermitted vengeance Arme again  
 His red right hand to plague us? what if all  
 Her stores were op'n'd, and this Firmament  
 Of Hell should spout her Cataracts of Fire,  
 Impendent horrors, threatening hideous fall  
 One day upon our heads; while we perhaps  
 Designing or exhorting glorious Warr,  
 Caught in a fierie Tempest shall be hurl'd  
 Each on his rock transfixt, the sport and prey  
 Of racking whirlwinds, or for ever sunk  
 Under yon boyling Ocean, wrapt in Chains;

150

160

170

180

There to converse with everlasting groans,  
Unrespited, unpitied, unrepreevd,  
Ages of hopeless end ; this would be worse.  
Warr therefore, open or conceal'd, alike  
My voice dissuades ; for what can force or guile  
With him, or who deceive his mind, whose eye  
Views all things at one view ? he from heav'ns highth  
All these our motions vain, sees and derides ; 191  
Not more Almighty to resist our might  
Then wise to frustrate all our plots and wiles.  
Shall we then live thus vile, the race of Heav'n  
Thus trampil'd, thus expell'd to suffer here  
Chains and these Torments ? better these then worse  
By my advice ; since fate inevitable  
Subdues us, and Omnipotent Decree  
The Victors will. To suffer, as to doe,  
Our strength is equal, nor the Law unjust 200  
That so ordains : this was at first resolv'd,  
If we were wise, against so great a foe  
Contending, and so doubtful what might fall.  
I laugh, when those who at the Spear are bold  
And vent'rous, if that fail them, shrink and fear  
What yet they know must follow, to endure  
Exile, or ignominy, or bonds, or pain,  
The sentence of thir Conquerour : This is now  
Our doom ; which if we can sustain and bear,  
Our Supream Foe in time may much remit 210  
His anger, and perhaps thus farr remov'd  
Not mind us not offending, satisf'd  
With what is punish't ; whence these raging fires  
Will slack'n, if his breath stir not thir flames.  
Our purer essence then will overcome  
Thir noxious vapour, or enur'd not feel,  
Or chang'd at length, and to the place conformd  
In temper, and in nature, will receive  
Familiar the fierce heat, and void of pain ;  
This horror will grow milde, this darkness light, 220  
Besides what hope the never-ending flight  
Of future days may bring, what chance, what change  
Worth waiting, since our present lot appears  
For happy though but ill, for ill not worst,  
If we procure not to our selves more woe.



Thus *Belial* with words cloath'd in reasons garb  
 Counsel'd ignoble ease, and peaceful sloath,  
 Not peace : and after him thus *Mammon* spake.

Either to disinthrone the King of Heav'n  
 We warr, if warr be best, or to regain 230  
 Our own right lost : him to unthroned we then  
 May hope, when everlasting Fate shall yeild  
 To fickle Chance, and *Chaos* judge the strife :  
 The former vain to hope argues as vain  
 The latter : for what place can be for us  
 Within Heav'n's bound, unless Heav'n's Lord supream  
 We overpower? Suppose he should relent  
 And publish Grace to all, on promise made  
 Of new Subjection ; with what eyes could we  
 Stand in his presence humble, and receive 240  
 Strict Laws impos'd, to celebrate his Throne  
 With warbl'd Hymns, and to his Godhead sing  
 Forc't Halleluiahs ; while he Lordly sits  
 Our envied Sovran, and his Altar breathes  
 Ambrosial Odours and Ambrosial Flowers,  
 Our servile offerings. This must be our task  
 In Heav'n, this our delight ; how wearisom  
 Eternity so spent in worship paid  
 To whom we hate. Let us not then pursue  
 By force impossible, by leave obtain'd 250  
 Unacceptable, though in Heav'n, our state  
 Of splendid vassalage, but rather seek  
 Our own good from our selves, and from our own  
 Live to our selves, though in this vast recess,  
 Free, and to none accountable, preferring  
 Hard liberty before the easie yoke  
 Of servile Pomp. Our greatness will appear  
 Then most conspicuous, when great things of small,  
 Useful of hurtful, prosperous of adverse  
 We can create, and in what place so e're 260  
 Thrive under evil, and work ease out of pain  
 Through labour and endurance. This deep world  
 Of darkness do we dread? How oft amidst  
 Thick clouds and dark doth Heav'n's all-ruling Sire  
 Choose to reside, his Glory unobscur'd,  
 And with the Majesty of darkness round  
 Covers his Throne ; from whence deep thunders roar

Must'ring thir rage, and Heav'n resembles Hell?  
 As he our Darkness, cannot we his Light  
 Imitate when we please? This Desert soile  
 Wants not her hidden lustre, Gemms and Gold;  
 Nor want we skill or art, from whence to raise  
 Magnificence; and what can Heav'n shew more?  
 Our torments also may in length of time  
 Become our Elements, these piercing Fires  
 As soft as now severe, our temper chang'd  
 Into their temper; which must needs remove  
 The sensible of pain. All things invite  
 To peaceful Counsels, and the settl'd State  
 Of order, how in safety best we may  
 Compose our present evils, with regard  
 Of what we are and where, dismissing quite  
 All thoughts of Warr; ye have what I advise.

270

280

He scarce had finisht, when such murmur filld  
 Th' Assembly, as when hollow Rocks retain  
 The sound of blustering winds, which all night long  
 Had rous'd the Sea, now with hoarse cadence lull  
 Sea-faring men orewatcht, whose Bark by chance  
 Or Pinnacle anchors in a craggy Bay  
 After the Tempest: Such applause was heard  
 As *Mammon* ended, and his Sentence pleas'd,  
 Advising peace: for such another Field  
 They dreaded worse then Hell: so much the fear  
 Of Thunder and the Sword of *Michael*  
 Wrought still within them; and no less desire  
 To found this nether Empire, which might rise  
 By pollicy, and long process of time,  
 In emulation opposite to Heav'n.

290

Which when *Bēēlzebub* perceiv'd, then whom,  
*Satan* except, none higher sat, with grave  
 Aspect he rose, and in his rising seem'd  
 A Pillar of State; deep on his Front engraven  
 Deliberation sat and publick care;  
 And Princely counsel in his face yet shon,  
 Majestick though in ruin: sage he stood  
 With *Atlantean* shoulders fit to bear  
 The weight of mightiest Monarchies; his look  
 Drew audience and attention still as Night

300

Or Summers Noon-tide air, while thus he spake.

Thrones and imperial Powers, off-spring of heav'n, 310  
 Ethereal Vertues ; or these Titles now  
 Must we renounce, and changing stile be call'd  
 Princes of Hell? for so the popular vote  
 Inclines, here to continue, and build up here  
 A growing Empire ; doubtless ; while we dream,  
 And know not that the King of Heav'n hath doom'd  
 This place our dungeon, not our safe retreat  
 Beyond his Potent arm, to live exempt  
 From Heav'n's high jurisdiction, in new League  
 Banded against his Throne, but to remaine 320  
 In strictest bondage, though thus far remov'd,  
 Under th' inevitable curb, reserv'd  
 His captive multitude : For he, be sure,  
 In highth or depth, still first and last will Reign  
 Sole King, and of his Kingdom loose no part  
 By our revolt, but over Hell extend  
 His Empire, and with Iron Scepter rule  
 Us here, as with his Golden those in Heav'n.  
 What sit we then projecting Peace and Warr?  
 Warr hath determin'd us, and foild with loss 330  
 Irreparable ; tearms of peace yet none  
 Voutsaft or sought ; for what peace will be giv'n  
 To us enslav'd, but custody severe,  
 And stripes, and arbitrary punishment  
 Inflicted? and what peace can we return,  
 But to our power hostility and hate,  
 Untam'd reluctance, and revenge though slow,  
 Yet ever plotting how the Conquerour least  
 May reap his conquest, and may least rejoyce  
 In doing what we most in suffering feel? 340  
 Nor will occasion want, nor shall we need  
 With dangerous expedition to invade  
 Heav'n, whose high walls fear no assault or Siege,  
 Or ambush from the Deep. What if we find  
 Some easier enterprize? There is a place  
 (If ancient and prophetic fame in Heav'n  
 Err not) another World, the happy seat  
 Of som new Race call'd *Man*, about this time  
 To be created like to us, though less  
 In power and excellence, but favour'd more 350

Of him who rules above ; so was his will  
 Pronounc'd among the Gods, and by an Oath,  
 That shook Heav'n's whol circumference, confirm'd.  
 Thither let us bend all our thoughts, to learn  
 What creatures there inhabit, of what mould,  
 Or substance, how endu'd, and what thir Power,  
 And where thir weakness, how attempted best,  
 By force or suttlety : Though Heav'n be shut,  
 And Heav'n's high Arbitrator sit secure  
 In his own strength, this place may lye expos'd 360  
 The utmost border of his Kingdom, left  
 To their defence who hold it : here perhaps  
 Som advantagious act may be achiev'd  
 By sudden onset, either with Hell fire  
 To waste his whole Creation, or possess  
 All as our own, and drive as we were driven,  
 The punie habitants, or if not drive,  
 Seduce them to our Party, that thir God  
 May prove thir foe, and with repenting hand  
 Abolish his own works. This would surpass 370  
 Common revenge, and interrupt his joy  
 In our Confusion, and our Joy upraise  
 In his disturbance ; when his darling Sons  
 Hurl'd headlong to partake with us, shall curse  
 Thir frail Originals, and faded bliss,  
 Faded so soon. Advise if this be worth  
 Attempting, or to sit in darkness here  
 Hatching vain Empires. Thus *Bēelzebub*  
 Pleaded his devilish Counsel, first devis'd  
 By *Satan*, and in part propos'd : for whence, 380  
 But from the Author of all ill could Spring  
 So deep a malice, to confound the race  
 Of mankind in one root, and Earth with Hell  
 To mingle and involve, done all to spite  
 The great Creatour ? But thir spite still serves  
 His glory to augment. The bold design  
 Pleas'd highly those infernal States, and joy  
 Sparkl'd in all thir eyes ; with full assent  
 They vote : whereat his speech he thus renews.

Well have ye judg'd, well ended long debate, 390  
 Synod of Gods, and like to what ye are,  
 Great things resolv'd ; which from the lowest deep

Will once more lift us up, in spight of Fate,  
 Neerer our ancient Seat; perhaps in view  
 Of those bright confines, whence with neighbouring Arms  
 And opportune excursion we may chance  
 Re-enter Heav'n; or else in some milde Zone  
 Dwell not unvisited of Heav'n's fair Light  
 Secure, and at the brightning Orient beam  
 Purge off this gloom; the soft delicious Air, 400  
 To heal the scarr of these corrosive Fires  
 Shall breath her balme. But first whom shall we send  
 In search of this new world, whom shall we find  
 Sufficient? who shall tempt with wandring feet  
 The dark unbottom'd infinite Abyss  
 And through the palpable obscure find out  
 His uncouth way, or spread his aerie flight  
 Upborn with indefatigable wings  
 Over the vast abrupt, ere he arrive  
 The happy Ile; what strength, what art can then 410  
 Suffice, or what evasion bear him safe  
 Through the strict Senteries and Stations thick  
 Of Angels watching round? Here he had need  
 All circumspection, and wee now no less  
 Choice in our suffrage; for on whom we send,  
 The weight of all and our last hope relies.

This said, he sat; and expectation held  
 His look suspence, awaiting who appeer'd  
 To second, or oppose, or undertake  
 The perilous attempt; but all sat mute, 420  
 Pondering the danger with deep thoughts; and each  
 In others count'nance red his own dismay  
 Astonisht: none among the choice and prime  
 Of those Heav'n-warring Champions could be found  
 So hardie as to proffer or accept  
 Alone the dreadful voyage; till at last  
*Satan*, whom now transcendent glory rais'd  
 Above his fellows, with Monarchal pride  
 Conscious of highest worth, unmov'd thus spake.

O Progeny of Heav'n, Empyrean Thrones, 430  
 With reason hath deep silence and demurr  
 Seis'd us, though undismaid: long is the way  
 And hard, that out of Hell leads up to Light;

402 breath] *misprint for breathe.*

Our prison strong, this huge convex of Fire,  
Outrageous to devour, immures us round  
Ninefold, and gates of burning Adamant  
Barr'd over us prohibit all egress.  
These past, if any pass, the void profound  
Of unessential Night receives him next  
Wide gaping, and with utter loss of being 440  
Threatens him, plung'd in that abortive gulf.  
If thence he scape into what ever world,  
Or unknown Region, what remains him less  
Then unknown dangers and as hard escape.  
But I should ill become this Throne, O Peers,  
And this Imperial Sov'ranty, adorn'd  
With splendor, arm'd with power, if aught propos'd  
And judg'd of public moment, in the shape  
Of difficulty or danger could deterre  
Me from attempting. Wherefore do I assume 450  
These Royalties, and not refuse to Reign,  
Refusing to accept as great a share  
Of hazard as of honour, due alike  
To him who Reigns, and so much to him due  
Of hazard more, as he above the rest  
High honourd sits? Go therefore mighty powers,  
Terror of Heav'n, though fall'n; intend at home,  
While here shall be our home, what best may ease  
The present misery, and render Hell  
More tollerable; if there be cure or charm 460  
To respite or deceive, or slack the pain  
Of this ill Mansion: intermit no watch  
Against a wakeful Foe, while I abroad  
Through all the coasts of dark destruction seek  
Deliverance for us all: this enterprize  
None shall partake with me. Thus saying rose  
The Monarch, and prevented all reply,  
Prudent, least from his resolution rais'd  
Others among the chief might offer now  
(Certain to be refus'd) what erst they feard; 470  
And so refus'd might in opinion stand  
His rivals, winning cheap the high repute  
Which he through hazard huge must earn. But they  
Dreaded not more th' adventure then his voice  
Forbidding; and at once with him they rose;

Thir rising all at once was as the sound  
 Of Thunder heard remote. Towards him they bend  
 With awful reverence prone; and as a God  
 Extoll him equal to the highest in Heav'n:  
 Nor fail'd they to express how much they prais'd, 480  
 That for the general safety he despis'd  
 His own: for neither do the Spirits damn'd  
 Loose all thir vertue; least bad men should boast  
 Thir specious deeds on earth, which glory excites,  
 Or close ambition varnisht o're with zeal.  
 Thus they thir doubtful consultations dark  
 Ended rejoicing in thir matchless Chief:  
 As when from mountain tops the dusky clouds  
 Ascending, while the North wind sleeps, o'respread  
 Heav'n's chearful face, the lowring Element 490  
 Scowls ore the dark'nd lantskip Snow, or showre;  
 If chance the radiant Sun with farewell sweet  
 Extend his ev'ning beam, the fields revive,  
 The birds thir notes renew, and bleating herds  
 Attest thir joy, that hill and valley rings.  
 O shame to men! Devil with Devil damn'd  
 Firm concord holds, men onely disagree  
 Of Creatures rational, though under hope  
 Of heavenly Grace; and God proclaiming peace,  
 Yet live in hatred, enmitie, and strife 500  
 Among themselves, and levie cruel warres,  
 Wasting the Earth, each other to destroy:  
 As if (which might induce us to accord)  
 Man had not hellish foes anow besides,  
 That day and night for his destruction waite.

The *Stygian* Councel thus dissolv'd; and forth  
 In order came the grand infernal Peers,  
 Midst came thir mighty Paramount, and seemd  
 Alone th' Antagonist of Heav'n, nor less  
 Then Hells dread Emperour with pomp Supream, 510  
 And God-like imitated State; him round  
 A Globe of fierie Seraphim inclos'd  
 With bright imblazonrie, and horrent Arms.  
 Then of thir Session ended they bid cry  
 With Trumpets regal sound the great result:  
 Toward the four winds four speedy Cherubim



Put to thir mouths the sounding Alchymie  
 By Haralds voice explain'd: the hollow Abyss  
 Heard farr and wide, and all the host of Hell  
 With deafning shout, return'd them loud acclaim. 520  
 Thence more at ease thir minds and somewhat rais'd  
 By false presumptuous hope, the ranged powers  
 Disband, and wandring, each his several way  
 Pursues, as inclination or sad choice  
 Leads him perplex, where he may likeliest find  
 Truce to his restless thoughts, and entertain  
 The irksome hours, till his great Chief return.  
 Part on the Plain, or in the Air sublime  
 Upon the wing, or in swift race contend,  
 As at th' Olympian Games or *Pythian* fields; 530  
 Part curb thir fierie Steeds, or shun the Goal  
 With rapid wheels, or fronted Brigads form.  
 As when to warn proud Cities warr appears  
 Wag'd in the troubl'd Skie, and Armies rush  
 To Battel in the Clouds, before each Van  
 Pric forth the Aerie Knights, and couch thir spears  
 Till thickest Legions close; with feats of Arms  
 From either end of Heav'n the welkin burns.  
 Others with vast *Typhæan* rage more fell  
 Rend up both Rocks and Hills, and ride the Air 540  
 In whirlwind; Hell scarce holds the wilde uproar.  
 As when *Alcides* from *Oealia* Crown'd  
 With conquest, felt th' envenom'd robe, and tore  
 Through pain up by the roots *Thessalian* Pines,  
 And *Lichas* from the top of *Oeta* threw  
 Into th' *Euboic* Sea. Others more milde,  
 Retreated in a silent valley, sing  
 With notes Angelical to many a Harp  
 Thir own Heroic deeds and hapless fall  
 By doom of Battel; and complain that Fate 550  
 Free Vertue should enthrall to Force or Chance.  
 Thir song was partial, but the harmony  
 (What could it less when Spirits immortal sing?)  
 Suspended Hell, and took with ravishment  
 The thronging audience. In discourse more sweet  
 (For Eloquence the Soul, Song charms the Sense.)  
 Others apart sat on a Hill retir'd,



*Paradise Lost.*

In thoughts more elevate, and reason'd high  
 Of Providence, Foreknowledge, Will, and Fate,  
 Fixt Fate, free will, foreknowledge absolute, 560  
 And found no end, in wandring mazes lost.  
 Of good and evil much they argu'd then,  
 Of happiness and final misery,  
 Passion and Apathie, and glory and shame,  
 Vain wisdom all, and false Philosophie:  
 Yet with a pleasing sorcerie could charm  
 Pain for a while or anguish, and excite  
 Fallacious hope, or arm th' obdured brest  
 With stubborn patience as with triple steel.  
 Another part in Squadrons and gross Bands 570  
 On bold adventure to discover wide  
 That dismal World, if any Clime perhaps  
 Might yeild them easier habitation, bend  
 Four ways thir flying March, along the Banks  
 Of four infernal Rivers that disgorge  
 Into the burning Lake thir baleful streams;  
 Abhorred *Styx* the flood of deadly hate,  
 Sad *Acheron* of Sorrow, black and deep;  
*Cocytus*, nam'd of lamentation loud  
 Heard on the ruful stream; fierce *Phlegeton* 580  
 Whose waves of torrent fire inflame with rage.  
 Farr off from these a slow and silent stream,  
*Lethe* the River of Oblivion roules  
 Her watrie Labyrinth, whereof who drinks,  
 Forthwith his former state and being forgets,  
 Forgets both joy and grief, pleasure and pain.  
 Beyond this flood a frozen Continent  
 Lies dark and wilde, beat with perpetual storms  
 Of Whirlwind and dire Hail, which on firm land  
 Thaws not, but gathers heap, and ruin seems 590  
 Of ancient pile; all else deep snow and ice,  
 A gulf profound as that *Serbonian* Bog  
 Betwixt *Damiata* and mount *Casius* old,  
 Where Armies whole have sunk: the parching Air  
 Burns froze, and cold performs th' effect of Fire.  
 Thither by harpy-footed Furies hail'd,  
 At certain revolutions all the damn'd  
 Are brought: and feel by turns the bitter change  
 Of fierce extreams, extreams by change more fierce,

From Beds of raging Fire to starve in Ice 600  
 Thir soft Ethereal warmth, and there to pine  
 Immovable, infixt, and frozen round,  
 Periods of time, thence hurried back to fire.  
 They ferry over this *Lethæan* Sound  
 Both to and fro, thir sorrow to augment,  
 And wish and struggle, as they pass, to reach  
 The tempting stream, with one small drop to loose  
 In sweet forgetfulness all pain and woe,  
 All in one moment, and so neer the brink ;  
 But fate withstands, and to oppose th' attempt 610  
*Medusa* with *Gorgonian* terror guards  
 The Ford, and of it self the water flies  
 All taste of living wight, as once it fled  
 The lip of *Tantalus*. Thus roving on  
 In confus'd march forlorn, th' adventurous Bands  
 With shuddring horror pale, and eyes agast  
 View'd first thir lamentable lot, and found  
 No rest : through many a dark and drearie Vaile  
 They pass'd, and many a Region dolorous,  
 O're many a Frozen, many a Fierie Alpe, 620  
 Rocks, Caves, Lakes, Fens, Bogs, Dens, and shades of death,  
 A Universe of death, which God by curse  
 Created evil, for evil only good,  
 Where all life dies, death lives, and nature breeds,  
 Perverse, all monstrous, all prodigious things,  
 Abominable, inutterable, and worse  
 Then Fables yet have feign'd, or fear conceiv'd,  
*Gorgons* and *Hydra's*, and *Chimera's* dire.

Mean while the Adversary of God and Man,  
*Satan* with thoughts inflam'd of highest design, 630  
 Puts on swift wings, and toward the Gates of Hell  
 Explores his solitary flight ; som times  
 He scours the right hand coast, som times the left,  
 Now shaves with level wing the Deep, then soares  
 Up to the fiery concave touring high.  
 As when farr off at Sea a Fleet descri'd  
 Hangs in the Clouds, by *Æquinoctial* Winds  
 Close sailing from *Bengala*, or the Iles  
 Of *Ternate* and *Tidore*, whence Merchants bring  
 Thir spicie Drugs : they on the trading Flood 640

631 toward] towards 1674

Through the wide *Ethiopian* to the Cape  
 Ply stemming nightly toward the Pole. So seem'd  
 Farr off the flying Fiend: at last appear  
 Hell bounds high reaching to the horrid Roof,  
 And thrice threefold the Gates; three folds were Brass,  
 Three Iron, three of Adamantine Rock,  
 Impenitrable, impal'd with circling fire,  
 Yet unconsum'd. Before the Gates there sat  
 On either side a formidable shape;  
 The one seem'd Woman to the waste, and fair, 650  
 But ended foul in many a scaly fould  
 Voluminous and vast, a Serpent arm'd  
 With mortal sting: about her middle round  
 A cry of Hell Hounds never ceasing bark'd  
 With wide *Cerberian* mouths full loud, and rung  
 A hideous Peal: yet, when they list, would creep,  
 If aught disturb'd thir noyse, into her woomb,  
 And kennel there, yet there still bark'd and howl'd  
 Within unseen. Farr less abhorrd then these  
 Vex'd *Scylla* bathing in the Sea that parts 660  
*Calabria* from the hoarce *Trinacrian* shore:  
 Nor uglier follow the Night-Hag, when call'd  
 In secret, riding through the Air she comes  
 Lur'd with the smell of infant blood, to dance  
 With *Lapland* Witches, while the labouring Moon  
 Eclipses at thir charms. The other shape,  
 If shape it might be call'd that shape had none  
 Distinguishable in member, joynt, or limb,  
 Or substance might be call'd that shadow seem'd,  
 For each seem'd either; black it stood as Night, 670  
 Fierce as ten Furies, terrible as Hell,  
 And shook a dreadful Dart; what seem'd his head  
 The likeness of a Kingly Crown had on.  
*Satan* was now at hand, and from his seat  
 The Monster moving onward came as fast,  
 With horrid strides, Hell trembled as he strode.  
 Th' undaunted Fiend what this might be admir'd,  
 Admir'd, not fear'd; God and his Son except,  
 Created thing naught vallu'd he nor shun'd;  
 And with disdainful look thus first began. 680

Whence and what art thou, execrable shape,  
 That dar'st, though grim and terrible, advance

Thy miscreated Front athwart my way  
To yonder Gates? through them I mean to pass,  
That be assured, without leave askt of thee:  
Retire, or taste thy folly, and learn by proof,  
Hell-born, not to contend with Spirits of Heav'n.

To whom the Goblin full of wrauth reply'd,  
Art thou that Traitor Angel, art thou hee,  
Who first broke peace in Heav'n and Faith, till then 690  
Unbrok'n, and in proud rebellious Arms  
Drew after him the third part of Heav'n's Sons  
Conjur'd against the highest, for which both Thou  
And they outcast from God, are here condemn'd  
To waste Eternal daies in woe and pain?  
And reck'n'st thou thy self with Spirits of Heav'n,  
Hell-doomd, and breath'st defiance here and scorn,  
Where I reign King, and to enrage thee more,  
Thy King and Lord? Back to thy punishment,  
False fugitive, and to thy speed add wings, 700  
Least with a whip of Scorpions I pursue  
Thy lingring, or with one stroke of this Dart  
Strange horror seise thee, and pangs unfelt before.

So spake the grieslie terrour, and in shape,  
So speaking and so threatning, grew ten fold  
More 'dreadful and deform: on th' other side  
Incenc't with indignation *Satan* stood  
Unterrifi'd, and like a Comet burn'd,  
That fires the length of *Ophiucus* huge  
In th' Artick Sky, and from his horrid hair 710  
Shakes Pestilence and Warr. Each at the Head  
Level'd his deadly aime; thir fatall hands  
No second stroke intend, and such a frown  
Each cast at th' other, as when two black Clouds  
With Heav'n's Artillery fraught, come rattling on  
Over the *Caspian*, then stand front to front  
Hov'ring a space, till Winds the signal blow  
To joyn thir dark Encounter in mid air:  
So frownd the mighty Combatants, that Hell  
Grew darker at thir frown, so matcht they stood; 720  
For never but once more was either like  
To meet so great a foe: and now great deeds  
Had been achiev'd, whereof all Hell had rung,  
Had not the Snakie Sorceress that sat

Fast by Hell Gate, and kept the fatal Key,  
Ris'n, and with hideous outcry rush'd between.

O Father, what intends thy hand, she cry'd,  
Against thy only Son? What fury O Son,  
Possesses thee to bend that mortal Dart  
Against thy Fathers head? and know'st for whom; 730  
For him who sits above and laughs the while  
At thee ordain'd his drudge, to execute  
What e're his wrath, which he calls Justice, bids,  
His wrath which one day will destroy ye both.

She spake, and at her words the hellish Pest  
Forbore, then these to her *Satan* return'd:

So strange thy outcry, and thy words so strange  
Thou interposest, that my sudden hand  
Prevented spares to tell thee yet by deeds  
What it intends; till first I know of thee, 740  
What thing thou art, thus double-form'd, and why  
In this infernal Vaile first met thou call'st  
Me Father, and that Fantasm call'st my Son?  
I know thee not, nor ever saw till now  
Sight more detestable then him and thee.

T' whom thus the Portress of Hell Gate reply'd;  
Hast thou forgot me then, and do I seem  
Now in thine eye so foul, once deem'd so fair  
In Heav'n, when at th' Assembly, and in sight  
Of all the Seraphim with thee combin'd 750  
In bold conspiracy against Heav'n's King,  
All on a sudden miserable pain  
Surpris'd thee, dim thine eyes, and dizzie swumm  
In darkness, while thy head flames thick and fast  
Threw forth, till on the left side op'ning wide,  
Likest to thee in shape and count'nance bright,  
Then shining heav'nly fair, a Goddess arm'd  
Out of thy head I sprung; amazement seis'd  
All th' Host of Heav'n; back they recoild affraid  
At first, and call'd me *Sin*, and for a Sign 760  
Portentous held me; but familiar grown,  
I pleas'd, and with attractive graces won  
The most averse, thee chiefly, who full oft  
Thy self in me thy perfect image viewing  
Becam'st enamour'd, and such joy thou took'st  
With me in secret, that my womb conceiv'd

A growing burden. Mean while Warr arose,  
And fields were fought in Heav'n; wherein remaind  
(For what could else) to our Almighty Foe  
Cleer Victory, to our part loss and rout

770

Through all the Empyrean: down they fell  
Driv'n headlong from the Pitch of Heaven, down  
Into this Deep, and in the general fall

I also; at which time this powerful Key  
Into my hand was giv'n, with charge to keep  
These Gates for ever shut, which none can pass  
Without my op'ning. Pensive here I sat  
Alone, but long I sat not, till my womb  
Pregnant by thee, and now excessive grown  
Prodigious motion felt and rueful throes.

780

At last this odious offspring whom thou seest  
Thine own begotten, breaking violent way  
Tore through my entrails, that with fear and pain  
Distorted, all my nether shape thus grew  
'Transform'd: but he my inbred enemy

Forth issu'd, brandishing his fatal Dart  
Made to destroy: I fled, and cry'd out *Death*;  
Hell trembl'd at the hideous Name, and sigh'd  
From all her Caves, and back resounded *Death*.

I fled, but he pursu'd (though more, it seems,  
Inflam'd with lust then rage) and swifter far,  
Me overtook his mother all dismaid,

790

And in embraces forcible and foule  
Ingendring with me, of that rape begot  
These yelling Monsters that with ceaseless cry  
Surround me, as thou sawst, hourly conceiv'd  
And hourly born, with sorrow infinite

To me, for when they list into the womb  
That bred them they return, and howle and gnaw  
My Bowels, their repast; then bursting forth  
Afresh with conscious terrors vex me round,  
That rest or intermission none I find.

800

Before mine eyes in opposition sits  
Grim *Death* my Son and foe, who sets them on,  
And me his Parent would full soon devour  
For want of other prey, but that he knows  
His end with mine involv'd; and knows that I  
Should prove a bitter Morsel, and his bane,



When ever that shall be ; so Fate pronounc'd.  
 But thou O Father, I forewarn thee, shun 810  
 His deadly arrow ; neither vainly hope  
 To be invulnerable in those bright Arms,  
 Though temper'd heav'nly, for that mortal dint,  
 Save he who reigns above, none can resist.

She finish'd, and the suttler Fiend his lore  
 Soon learn'd, now milder, and thus answer'd smooth.  
 Dear Daughter, since thou claim'st me for thy Sire,  
 And my fair Son here showst me, the dear pledge  
 Of dalliance had with thee in Heav'n, and joys  
 Then sweet, now sad to mention, through dire change 820  
 Befalln us unforeseen, unthought of, know  
 I come no enemie, but to set free  
 From out this dark and dismal house of pain,  
 Both him and thee, and all the heav'nly Host  
 Of Spirits that in our just pretenses arm'd  
 Fell with us from on high : from them I go  
 This uncouth errand sole, and one for all  
 My self expose, with lonely steps to tread  
 Th' unfounded deep, & through the void immense  
 To search with wandring quest a place foretold 830  
 Should be, and, by concurring signs, ere now  
 Created vast and round, a place of bliss  
 In the Pourlieues of Heav'n, and therein plac't  
 A race of upstart Creatures, to supply  
 Perhaps our vacant room, though more remov'd,  
 Least Heav'n surcharg'd with potent multitude  
 Might hap to move new broiles : Be this or aught  
 Then this more secret now design'd, I haste  
 To know, and this once known, shall soon return,  
 And bring ye to the place where Thou and Death 840  
 Shall dwell at ease, and up and down unseen  
 Wing silently the buxom Air, imbalm'd  
 With odours ; there ye shall be fed and fill'd  
 Immeasurably, all things shall be your prey.  
 He ceas'd, for both seem'd highly pleas'd, and Death  
 Grinn'd horrible a gastly smile, to hear  
 His famine should be fill'd, and blest his mawe  
 Destin'd to that good hour : no less rejoyc'd  
 His mother bad, and thus bespake her Sire.

The key of this infernal Pit by due,

850

And by command of Heav'n's all-powerful King  
 I keep, by him forbidden to unlock  
 These Adamantine Gates; against all force  
 Death ready stands to interpose his dart,  
 Fearless to be o'rematcht by living might.  
 But what ow I to his commands above  
 Who hates me, and hath hither thrust me down  
 Into this gloom of *Tartarus* profound,  
 To sit in hateful Office here confin'd,  
 Inhabitant of Heav'n, and heav'nlie-born, 860  
 Here in perpetual agonie and pain,  
 With terrors and with clamors compasst round  
 Of mine own brood, that on my bowels feed:  
 Thou art my Father, thou my Author, thou  
 My being gav'st me; whom should I obey  
 But thee, whom follow? thou wilt bring me soon  
 To that new world of light and bliss, among  
 The Gods who live at ease, where I shall Reign  
 At thy right hand voluptuous, as beseems  
 Thy daughter and thy darling, without end. 870

Thus saying, from her side the fatal Key,  
 Sad instrument of all our woe, she took;  
 And towards the Gate rouling her bestial train,  
 Forthwith the huge Portcullis high up drew,  
 Which but her self not all the *Stygian* powers  
 Could once have mov'd; then in the key-hole turns  
 Th' intricate wards, and every Bolt and Bar  
 Of massie Iron or sollid Rock with ease  
 Unfast'ns: on a sudden op'n flie  
 With impetuous recoile and jarring sound 880  
 Th' infernal dores, and on thir hinges grate  
 Harsh Thunder, that the lowest bottom shook  
 Of *Erebus*. She op'nd, but to shut  
 Excel'd her power; the Gates wide op'n stood,  
 That with extended wings a Bannerd Host  
 Under spread Ensigns marching might pass through  
 With Horse and Chariots rankt in loose array;  
 So wide they stood, and like a Furnace mouth  
 Cast forth redounding smoak and ruddy flame.  
 Before thir eyes in sudden view appear 890  
 The secrets of the hoarie deep, a dark  
 Illimitable Ocean without bound,



*Paradise Lost.*

Without dimension, where length, breadth, and highth,  
 And time and place are lost ; where eldest Night  
 And *Chaos*, Ancestors of Nature, hold  
 Eternal *Anarchie*, amidst the noise  
 Of endless warrs, and by confusion stand.  
 For hot, cold, moist, and dry, four Champions fierce  
 Strive here for Maistrie, and to Battel bring  
 Thir embryon Atoms ; they around the flag 900  
 Of each his faction, in thir several Clanns,  
 Light-arm'd or heavy, sharp, smooth, swift or slow,  
 Swarm populous, unnumber'd as the Sands  
 Of *Barca* or *Cyrene's* torrid soil,  
 Levied to side with warring Winds, and poise  
 Thir lighter wings. To whom these most adhere,  
 Hee rules a moment ; *Chaos* Umpire sits,  
 And by decision more imbroiles the fray  
 By which he Reigns : next him high Arbiter  
*Chance* governs all. Into this wilde Abyss, 910  
 The Womb of nature and perhaps her Grave,  
 Of neither Sea, nor Shore, nor Air, nor Fire,  
 But all these in thir pregnant causes mixt  
 Confus'dly, and which thus must ever fight,  
 Unless th' Almighty Maker them ordain  
 His dark materials to create more Worlds,  
 Into this wild Abyss the warie fiend  
 Stood on the brink of Hell and look'd a while,  
 Pondering his Voyage : for no narrow frith  
 He had to cross. Nor was his eare less peal'd 920  
 With noises loud and ruinous (to compare  
 Great things with small) then when *Bellona* storms,  
 With all her battering Engines bent to rase  
 Som Capital City, or less then if this frame  
 Of Heav'n were falling, and these Elements  
 In mutinie had from her Axle torn  
 The stedfast Earth. At last his Sail-broad Vannes  
 He spreads for flight, and in the surging smoak  
 Uplifted spurns the ground, thence many a League  
 As in a cloudy Chair ascending rides 930  
 Audacious, but that seat soon failing, meets  
 A vast vacuitie : all unawares  
 Fluttring his pennons vain plumb down he drops  
 Ten thousand fadom deep, and to this hour

Down had been falling, had not by ill chance  
 The strong rebuff of som tumultuous cloud  
 Instinct with Fire and Nitre hurried him  
 As many miles aloft: that furie stay'd,  
 Quencht in a Boggie *Syrts*, neither Sea,  
 Nor good dry Land: nigh founderd on he fares, 940  
 Treading the crude consistence, half on foot,  
 Half flying; behoves him now both Oare and Saile.  
 As when a Gryfon through the Wilderness  
 With winged course ore Hill or moarie Dale,  
 Pursues the *Arimaspian*, who by stelth  
 Had from his wakeful custody purloind  
 The guarded Gold: So eagerly the fiend  
 Ore bog or steep, through strait, rough, dense, or rare,  
 With head, hands, wings, or feet pursues his way,  
 And swims or sinks, or wades, or creeps, or flies: 950  
 At length a universal hubbub wilde  
 Of stunning sounds and voices all confus'd  
 Born through the hollow dark assaults his eare  
 With loudest vehemence: thither he plyes,  
 Undaunted to meet there what ever power  
 Or Spirit of the nethermost Abyss  
 Might in that noise reside, of whom to ask  
 Which way the neerest coast of darkness lyes  
 Bordering on light; when strait behold the Throne  
 Of *Chaos*, and his dark Pavilion spread 960  
 Wide on the wasteful Deep; with him Enthron'd  
 Sat Sable-vested Night, eldest of things,  
 The Consort of his Reign; and by them stood  
*Orcus* and *Ades*, and the dreaded name  
 Of *Demogorgon*; Rumor next and Chance,  
 And Tumult and Confusion all imbroid,  
 And Discord with a thousand various mouths.

T' whom *Satan* turning boldly, thus. Ye Powers  
 And Spirits of this nethermost Abyss,  
*Chaos* and *ancient Night*, I come no Spie, 970  
 With purpose to explore or to disturb  
 The secrets of your Realm, but by constraint  
 Wandring this darksome desert, as my way  
 Lies through your spacious Empire up to light,  
 Alone, and without guide, half lost, I seek  
 What readiest path leads where your gloomie bounds

Confine with Heav'n ; or if som other place  
 From your Dominion won, th' Ethereal King  
 Possesses lately, thither to arrive  
 I travel this profound, direct my course ; 890  
 Directed, no mean recompence it brings  
 To your behoof, if I that Region lost,  
 All usurpation thence expell'd, reduce  
 To her original darkness and your sway  
 (Which is my present journey) and once more  
 Erect the Standerd there of *ancient Night* ;  
 Yours be th' advantage all, mine the revenge.

Thus *Satan* ; and him thus the Anarch old  
 With faultring speech and visage incompas'd  
 Answer'd. I know thee, stranger, who thou art, 990  
 That mighty leading Angel, who of late  
 Made head against Heav'n's King, though overthrown.  
 I saw and heard, for such a numerous host  
 Fled not in silence through the frighted deep  
 With ruin upon ruin, rout on rout,  
 Confusion worse confounded ; and Heav'n Gates  
 Poured out by millions her victorious Bands  
 Pursuing. I upon my Frontieres here  
 Keep residence ; if all I can will serve,  
 That little which is left so to defend 1000  
 Encroacht on still through our intestine broiles  
 Weakning the Scepter of old Night : first Hell  
 Your dungeon stretching far and wide beneath ;  
 Now lately Heaven and Earth, another World  
 Hung ore my Realm, link'd in a golden Chain  
 To that side Heav'n from whence your Legions fell :  
 If that way be your walk, you have not farr ;  
 So much the neerer danger ; goe and speed ;  
 Havock and spoil and ruin are my gain.

He ceas'd ; and *Satan* staid not to reply, 1010  
 But glad that now his Sea should find a shore,  
 With fresh alacritie and force renew'd  
 Springs upward like a Pyramid of fire  
 Into the wilde Expanse, and through the shock  
 Of fighting Elements, on all sides round  
 Environ'd wins his way ; harder beset  
 And more endanger'd, then when *Argo* pass'd  
 Through *Bosporus* betwixt the justling Rocks :

Or when *Ulysses* on the Larbord shunn'd  
*Charybdis*, and by th' other whirlpool steard. 1020  
 So he with difficulty and labour hard  
 Mov'd on, with difficulty and labour hee ;  
 But hee once past, soon after when man fell,  
 Strange alteration ! Sin and Death amain  
 Following his track, such was the will of Heav'n,  
 Pav'd after him a broad and beat'n way  
 Over the dark Abyss, whose boiling Gulf  
 Tamely endur'd a Bridge of wondrous length  
 From Hell continu'd reaching th' utmost Orbe 1030  
 Of this frail World ; by which the Spirits perverse  
 With easie intercourse pass to and fro  
 To tempt or punish mortals, except whom  
 God and good Angels guard by special grace.  
 But now at last the sacred influence  
 Of light appears, and from the walls of Heav'n  
 Shoots farr into the bosom of dim Night  
 A glimmering dawn ; here Nature first begins  
 Her fardest verge, and *Chaos* to retire  
 As from her outmost works a brok'n foe 1040  
 With tumult less and with less hostile din,  
 That *Satan* with less toil, and now with ease  
 Wafts on the calmer wave by dubious light  
 And like a weather-beaten Vessel holds  
 Gladly the Port, though Shrouds and Tackle torn ;  
 Or in the emptier waste, resembling Air,  
 Weighs his spread wings, at leasure to behold  
 Farr off th' Empyrean Heav'n, extended wide  
 In circuit, undetermin'd square or round,  
 With Opal Towrs and Battlements adorn'd  
 Of living Sapphire, once his native Seat ; 1050  
 And fast by hanging in a golden Chain  
 This pendant world, in bigness as a Starr  
 Of smallest Magnitude close by the Moon.  
 Thither full fraught with mischievous revenge,  
 Accurst, and in a cursed hour he hies.

*The End of the Second Book.*

# PARADISE LOST.

## BOOK III.

### THE ARGUMENT.

*God sitting on his Throne sees Satan flying towards this world, then newly created; shews him to the Son who sat at his right hand; foretells the success of Satan in perverting mankind; clears his own Justice and Wisdom from all imputation, having created Man free and able enough to have withstood his Tempter; yet declares his purpose of grace towards him, in regard he fell not of his own malice, as did Satan, but by him seduc't. The Son of God renders praises to his Father for the manifestation of his gracious purpose towards Man; but God again declares, that Grace cannot be extended towards Man without the satisfaction of divine Justice; Man hath offended the majesty of God by aspiring to Godhead, and therefore with all his Progeny devoted to death must dye, unless some one can be found sufficient to answer for his offence, and undergoe his Punishment. The Son of God freely offers himself a Ransome for Man: the Father accepts him, ordains his incarnation, pronounces his exaltation above all Names in Heaven and Earth; commands all the Angels to adore him; they obey, and hymning to their Harps in full Quire, celebrate the Father and the Son. Mean while Satan alights upon the bare convex of this Worlds outermost Orb; where wandring he first finds a place since call'd The Lymbo of Vanity; what persons and things fly up thither; thence comes to the Gate of Heaven, describ'd ascending by stairs, and the waters above the Firmament that flow about it: His passage thence to the Orb of the Sun; he finds there Uriel the Regent of that Orb, but first changes himself into the shape of a meaner Angel; and pretending a zealous desire to behold the new Creation and Man whom God had plac't here, inquires of him the place of his habitation, and is directed; alights first on Mount Niphates.*

HAIL holy light, offspring of Heav'n first-born,  
Or of th' Eternal Coeternal beam  
May I express thee unblam'd? since God is light,  
And never but in unapproach'd light

Dwelt from Eternitie, dwelt then in thee,  
 Bright effluence of bright essence increate.  
 Or hear'st thou rather pure Ethereal stream,  
 Whose Fountain who shall tell? before the Sun,  
 Before the Heavens thou wert, and at the voice  
 Of God, as with a Mantle didst invest  
 The rising world of waters dark and deep,  
 Won from the void and formless infinite.  
 Thee I re-visit now with bolder wing,  
 Escap't the *Stygian* Pool, though long detain'd  
 In that obscure sojourn, while in my flight  
 Through utter and through middle darkness borne  
 With other notes then to th' *Orphean* Lyre  
 I sung of *Chaos* and *Eternal Night*,  
 Taught by the heav'nly Muse to venture down  
 The dark descent, and up to reascend,  
 Though hard and rare: thee I revisit safe,  
 And feel thy sovran vital Lamp; but thou  
 Revisit'st not these eyes, that rowle in vain  
 To find thy piercing ray, and find no dawn;  
 So thick a drop serene hath quencht thir Orbs,  
 Or dim suffusion veild. Yet not the more  
 Cease I to wander where the Muses haunt  
 Cleer Spring, or shadie Grove, or Sunnie Hill,  
 Smit with the love of sacred song; but chief  
 Thee *Sion* and the flowrie Brooks beneath  
 That wash thy hallowd feet, and warbling flow,  
 Nightly I visit: nor somtimes forget  
 Those other two equal'd with me in Fate,  
 So were I equal'd with them in renown,  
 Blind *Thamyris* and blind *Mæonides*,  
 And *Tiresias* and *Phineus* Prophets old.  
 Then feed on thoughts, that voluntarie move  
 Harmonious numbers; as the wakeful Bird  
 Sings darkling, and in shadiest Covert hid  
 Tunes her nocturnal Note. Thus with the Year  
 Seasons return, but not to me returns  
 Day, or the sweet approach of Ev'n or Morn,  
 Or sight of vernal bloom, or Summers Rose,  
 Or flocks, or herds, or human face divine;  
 But cloud in stead, and ever-during dark  
 Surrounds me, from the chearful waies of men

10

20

30

40

Cut off, and for the Book of knowledg fair  
 Presented with a Universal blanc  
 Of Natures works to mee expung'd and ras'd,  
 And wisdom at one entrance quite shut out. 50  
 So much the rather thou Celestial light  
 Shine inward, and the mind through all her powers  
 Irradiate, there plant eyes, all mist from thence  
 Purge and disperse, that I may see and tell  
 Of things invisible to mortal sight.

Now had the Almighty Father from above,  
 From the pure Empyrean where he sits  
 High Thron'd above all highth, bent down his eye,  
 His own works and their works at once to view:  
 About him all the Sanctities of Heaven 60  
 Stood thick as Starrs, and from his sight receiv'd  
 Beatitude past utterance; on his right  
 The radiant image of his Glory sat,  
 His onely Son; On Earth he first beheld  
 Our two first Parents, yet the onely two  
 Of mankind, in the happie Garden plac't,  
 Reaping immortal fruits of joy and love,  
 Uninterrupted joy, unrivald love  
 In blissful solitude; he then survey'd  
 Hell and the Gulf between, and *Satan* there 70  
 Coasting the wall of Heav'n on this side Night  
 In the dun Air sublime, and ready now  
 To stoop with wearied wings, and willing feet  
 On the bare outside of this World, that seem'd  
 Firm land imbosom'd without Firmament,  
 Uncertain which, in Ocean or in Air.  
 Him God beholding from his prospect high,  
 Wherein past, present, future he beholds,  
 Thus to his onely Son foreseeing spake.

Onely begotten Son, seest thou what rage 80  
 Transports our adversarie, whom no bounds  
 Prescrib'd, no barrs of Hell, nor all the chains  
 Heapt on him there, nor yet the main Abyss  
 Wide interrupt can hold; so bent he seems  
 On desperat revenge, that shall redound  
 Upon his own rebellious head. And now  
 Through all restraint broke loose he wings his way  
 Not farr off Heav'n, in the Precincts of light,



Directly towards the new created World,  
And Man there plac't, with purpose to assay 90  
If him by force he can destroy, or worse,  
By som false guile pervert; and shall pervert;  
For man will heark'n to his glozing lyes,  
And easily transgress the sole Command,  
Sole pledge of his obedienee: So will fall  
Hee and his faithless Progenie: whose fault?  
Whose but his own? ingrate, he had of mee  
All he could have; I made him just and right,  
Sufficient to have stood, though free to fall.  
Such I created all th' Ethereal Powers 100  
And Spirits, both them who stood & them who faild;  
Freely they stood who stood, and fell who fell.  
Not free, what proof could they have givn sincere  
Of true allegiance, constant Faith or Love,  
Where onely what they needs must do, appeard,  
Not what they would? what praise could they receive?  
What pleasure I from such obedience paid,  
When Will and Reason (Reason also is choice)  
Useless and vain, of freedom both despoild,  
Made passive both, had servd necessitie, 110  
Not mee. They therefore as to right belongd,  
So were created, nor can justly accuse  
Thir maker, or thir making, or thir Fate;  
As if Predestination over-rul'd  
Thir will, dispos'd by absolute Decree  
Or high foreknowledge; they themselves decreed  
Thir own revolt, not I: if I foreknew,  
Foreknowledge had no influence on their fault,  
Which had no less prov'd certain unforeknown.  
So without least impulse or shadow of Fate, 120  
Or aught by me immutablíe foreseen,  
They trespass, Authors to themselves in all  
Both what they judge and what they choose; for so  
I formed them free, and free they must remain,  
Till they enthrall themselves: I else must change  
Thir nature, and revoke the high Decree  
Unchangeable, Eternal, which ordain'd  
Thir freedom, they themselves ordain'd thir fall.  
The first sort by thir own suggestion fell,  
Self-tempted, self-deprav'd: Man falls deceiv'd 130



*Paradise Lost.*

By the other first : Man therefore shall find grace,  
 The other none : in Mercy and Justice both,  
 Through Heav'n and Earth, so shall my glorie excel,  
 But Mercy first and last shall brightest shine.

Thus while God spake, ambrosial fragrance fill'd  
 All Heav'n, and in the blessed Spirits elect  
 Sense of new joy ineffable diffus'd :

Beyond compare the Son of God was seen  
 Most glorious, in him all his Father shon  
 Substantially express'd, and in his face  
 Divine compassion visibly appeerd,  
 Love without end, and without measure Grace,  
 Which uttering thus he to his Father spake.

140

O Father, gracious was that word which clos'd  
 Thy sovran sentence, that Man should find grace ;  
 For which both Heav'n and Earth shall high extoll  
 Thy praises, with th' innumerable sound  
 Of Hymns and sacred Songs, wherewith thy Throne  
 Encompass'd shall resound thee ever blest.

For should Man finally be lost, should Man  
 Thy creature late so lov'd, thy youngest Son  
 Fall circumvented thus by fraud, though joynd  
 With his own folly ? that be from thee farr,  
 That farr be from thee, Father, who art Judge  
 Of all things made, and judgest onely right.

150

Or shall the Adversarie thus obtain  
 His end, and frustrate thine, shall he fulfill  
 His malice, and thy goodness bring to naught,  
 Or proud return though to his heavier doom,  
 Yet with revenge accomplish't and to Hell

160

Draw after him the whole Race of mankind,  
 By him corrupted ? or wilt thou thy self  
 Abolish thy Creation, and unmake,  
 For him, what for thy glorie thou hast made ?  
 So should thy goodness and thy greatness both  
 Be questiond and blasphem'd without defence.

To whom the great Creatour thus reply'd.  
 O Son, in whom my Soul hath chief delight,  
 Son of my bosom, Son who art alone  
 My word, my wisdom, and effectual might,  
 All hast thou spok'n as my thoughts are, all  
 As my Eternal purpose hath decreed :

170

Man shall not quite be lost, but sav'd who will,  
 Yet not of will in him, but grace in me  
 Freely voutsaft; once more I will renew  
 His lapsed powers, though forfeit and enthrall'd  
 By sin to foul exorbitant desires;  
 Upheld by me, yet once more he shall stand  
 On even ground against his mortal foe,  
 By me upheld, that he may know how frail 180  
 His fall'n condition is, and to me ow  
 All his deliv'rance, and to none but me.  
 Some I have chosen of peculiar grace  
 Elect above the rest; so is my will:  
 The rest shall hear me call, and oft be warnd  
 Thir sinful state, and to appease betimes  
 Th' incensed Deitie while offerd grace  
 Invites; for I will cleer thir senses dark,  
 What may suffice, and soft'n stonie hearts  
 To pray, repent, and bring obedience duc. 190  
 To prayer, repentance, and obedience due,  
 Though but endevord with sincere intent,  
 Mine care shall not be slow, mine eye not shut.  
 And I will place within them as a guide  
 My Umpire *Conscience*, whom if they will hear,  
 Light after light well us'd they shall attain,  
 And to the end persisting, safe arrive.  
 This my long sufferance and my day of grace  
 They who neglect and scorn, shall never taste;  
 But hard be hard'nd, blind be blinded more, 200  
 That they may stumble on, and deeper fall;  
 And none but such from mercy I exclude.  
 But yet all is not don; Man disobeying,  
 Disloyal breaks his fealtie, and sinns  
 Against the high Supremacie of Heav'n,  
 Affecting God-head, and so loosing all,  
 To expiate his Treason hath naught left,  
 But to destruction sacred and devote,  
 He with his whole posteritie must die,  
 Die hee or Justice must; unless for him 210  
 Som other able, and as willing, pay  
 The rigid satisfaction, death for death.  
 Say Heav'nly Powers, where shall we find such love,  
 Which of ye will be mortal to redeem

Mans mortal crime, and just th' unjust to save,  
Dwels in all Heaven charitie so deare?

He ask'd, but all the Heav'nly Quire stood mute,  
And silence was in Heav'n: on mans behalf  
Patron or Intercessor none appeerd,  
Much less that durst upon his own head draw 220  
The deadly forfeiture, and ransom set.  
And now without redemption all mankind  
Must have bin lost, adjudg'd to Death and Hell  
By doom severe, had not the Son of God,  
In whom the fulness dwels of love divine,  
His dearest mediation thus renewd.

Father, thy word is past, man shall find grace;  
And shall grace not find means, that finds her way,  
The speediest of thy winged messengers,  
To visit all thy creatures, and to all 230

Comes unprevented, unimplor'd, unsought,  
Happie for man, so coming; he her aide  
Can never seek, once dead in sins and lost;  
Attonement for himself or offering meet,  
Indebted and undon, hath none to bring:  
Behold mee then, mee for him, life for life  
I offer, on mee let thine anger fall;

Account mee man; I for his sake will leave  
Thy bosom, and this glorie next to thee  
Freely put off, and for him lastly die 240

Well pleas'd, on me let Death wreck all his rage;  
Under his gloomie power I shall not long  
Lie vanquisht; thou hast givn me to possess  
Life in my self for ever, by thee I live,  
Though now to Death I yeild, and am his due  
All that of me can die, yet that debt paid,

Thou wilt not leave me in the loathsom grave

His prey, nor suffer my unspotted Soule

For ever with corruption there to dwell;

But I shall rise Victorious, and subdue 250

My Vanquisher, spoild of his vanted spoile;

Death his deaths wound shall then receive, & stoop  
Inglorious, of his mortall sting disarm'd.

I through the ample Air in Triumph high

Shall lead Hell Captive maugre Hell, and show

The powers of darkness bound. Thou at the sight

Pleas'd, out of Heaven shalt look down and smile,  
 While by thee rais'd I ruin all my Foes,  
 Death last, and with his Carcass glut the Grave:  
 Then with the multitude of my redeem'd 260  
 Shall enter Heaven long absent, and returne,  
 Father, to see thy face, wherein no cloud  
 Of anger shall remain, but peace assur'd,  
 And reconcilment; wrauth shall be no more  
 Thenceforth, but in thy presence Joy entire.

His words here ended, but his meek aspect  
 Silent yet spake, and breath'd immortal love  
 To mortal men, above which only shon  
 Filial obedience: as a sacrifice  
 Glad to be offer'd, he attends the will 270  
 Of his great Father. Admiration seisd  
 All Heav'n, what this might mean, & whither tend  
 Wondring; but soon th' Almighty thus reply'd:

O thou in Heav'n and Earth the only peace  
 Found out for mankind under wrauth, O thou  
 My sole complacence! well thou know'st how dear,  
 To me are all my works, nor Man the least  
 Though last created, that for him I spare  
 Thee from my bosom and right hand, to save,  
 By loosing thee a while, the whole Race lost. 280  
 Thou therefore whom thou only canst redeeme,  
 Thir Nature also to thy Nature joyne;  
 And be thy self Man among men on Earth,  
 Made flesh, when time shall be, of Virgin seed,  
 By wondrous birth: Be thou in *Adams* room  
 The Head of all mankind, though *Adams* Son.  
 As in him perish all men, so in thee  
 As from a second root shall be restor'd,  
 As many as are restor'd, without thee none.  
 His crime makes guiltie all his Sons, thy merit 290  
 Imputed shall absolve them who renounce  
 Thir own both righteous and unrighteous deeds,  
 And live in thee transplanted, and from thee  
 Receive new life. So Man, as is most just,  
 Shall satisfie for Man, be judg'd and die,  
 And dying rise, and rising with him raise  
 His Brethren, ransom'd with his own dear life.  
 So Heav'nly love shal outdoo Hellish hate,

Giving to death, and dying to redeeme,  
 So dearly to redeem what Hellish hate 300  
 So easily destroy'd, and still destroys  
 In those who, when they may, accept not grace.  
 Nor shalt thou by descending to assume  
 Mans Nature, less'n or degrade thine owne.  
 Because thou hast, though Thron'd in highest bliss  
 Equal to God, and equally enjoying  
 God-like fruition, quitted all to save  
 A World from utter loss, and hast been found  
 By Merit more then Birthright Son of God,  
 Found worthiest to be so by being Good, 310  
 Farr more then Great or High; because in thee  
 Love hath abounded more then Glory abounds,  
 Therefore thy Humiliation shall exalt  
 With thee thy Manhood also to this Throne;  
 Here shalt thou sit incarnate, here shalt Reigne  
 Both God and Man, Son both of God and Man,  
 Anointed universal King; all Power  
 I give thee, reign for ever, and assume  
 Thy Merits; under thee as Head Supream  
 Thrones, Princedoms, Powers, Dominions I reduce: 320  
 All knees to thee shall bow, of them that bide  
 In Heaven, or Earth, or under Earth in Hell;  
 When thou attended gloriously from Heav'n  
 Shalt in the Skie appeer, and from thee send  
 The summoning Arch-Angels to proclaime  
 Thy dread Tribunal: forthwith from all Windes  
 The living, and forthwith the cited dead  
 Of all past Ages to the general Doom  
 Shall hast'n, such a peal shall rouse thir sleep.  
 Then all thy Saints assembl'd, thou shalt judge 330  
 Bad men and Angels, they arraignd shall sink  
 Beneath thy Sentence; Hell, her numbers full,  
 Thenceforth shall be for ever shut. Mean while  
 The World shall burn, and from her ashes spring  
 New Heav'n and Earth, wherein the just shall dwell  
 And after all thir tribulations long  
 See golden days, fruitful of golden deeds,  
 With Joy and Love triumphing, and fair Truth.  
 Then thou thy regal Scepter shalt lay by,  
 For regal Scepter then no more shall need, 340

God shall be All in All. But all ye Gods,  
Adore him, who to compass all this dies,  
Adore the Son, and honour him as mee.

No sooner had th' Almighty ceas't, but all  
The multitude of Angels with a shout  
Loud as from numbers without number, sweet  
As from blest voices, uttering joy, Heav'n rung  
With Jubilee, and loud Hosannas fill'd  
Th' eternal Regions: lowly reverent  
Towards either Throne they bow, & to the ground 350  
With solemn adoration down they cast  
Thir Crowns inwove with Amarant and Gold,  
Immortal Amarant, a Flour which once  
In Paradise, fast by the Tree of Life  
Began to bloom, but soon for mans offence  
To Heav'n remov'd where first it grew, there grows,  
And flours aloft shading the Fount of Life,  
And where the river of Bliss through midst of Heavn  
Rowls o're *Elisian* Flours her Amber stream;  
With these that never fade the Spirits Elect 360  
Bind thir resplendent locks inwreath'd with beams,  
Now in loose Garlands thick thrown off, the bright  
Pavement that like a Sea of Jasper shon  
Impurpl'd with Celestial Roses smil'd.  
Then Crown'd again thir gold'n Harps they took,  
Harps ever tun'd, that glittering by thir side  
Like Quivers hung, and with Præamble sweet  
Of charming symphonie they introduce  
Thir sacred Song, and waken raptures high;  
No voice exempt, no voice but well could joine 370  
Melodious part, such concord is in Heav'n.

Thee Father first they sung Omnipotent,  
Immutable, Immortal, Infinite,  
Eternal King; thee Author of all being,  
Fountain of Light, thy self invisible  
Amidst the glorious brightness where thou sit'st  
Thron'd inaccessible, but when thou shad'st  
The full blaze of thy beams, and through a cloud  
Drawn round about thee like a radiant Shrine,  
Dark with excessive bright thy skirts appeer, 380  
Yet dazle Heav'n, that brightest Seraphim  
Approach not, but with both wings veil thir eyes.

'Thee next they sang of all Creation first,  
 Begotten Son, Divine Similitude,  
 In whose conspicuous count'nance, without cloud  
 Made visible, th' Almighty Father shines,  
 Whom else no Creature can behold; on thee  
 Impresst the effulgence of his Glorie abides,  
 Transfus'd on thee his ample Spirit rests.  
 Hee Heav'n of Heavens and all the Powers therein 390  
 By thee created, and by thee threw down  
 Th' aspiring Dominations: thou that day  
 Thy Fathers dreadful Thunder didst not spare,  
 Nor stop thy flaming Chariot wheels, that shook  
 Heav'n's everlasting Frame, while o're the necks  
 Thou drov'st of warring Angels disarraid.  
 Back from pursuit thy Powers with loud acclaime  
 Thee only extold, Son of thy Fathers might,  
 To execute fierce vengeance on his foes,  
 Not so on Man; him through their malice fall'n, 400  
 Father of Mercie and Grace, thou didst not doome  
 So strictly, but much more to pitie encline:  
 No sooner did thy dear and onely Son  
 Perceive thee purpos'd not to doom frail Man  
 So strictly, but much more to pitie enclin'd,  
 He to appease thy wrauth, and end the strife  
 Of Mercy and Justice in thy face discern'd,  
 Regardless of the Bliss wherein hee sat  
 Second to thee, offerd himself to die  
 For mans offence. O unexempl'd love, 410  
 Love no where to be found less then Divine!  
 Hail Son of God, Saviour of Men, thy Name  
 Shall be the copious matter of my Song  
 Henceforth, and never shall my Harp thy praise  
 Forget, nor from thy Fathers praise disjoine.  
 Thus they in Heav'n, above the starry Sphear,  
 Thir happie hours in joy and hymning spent.  
 Mean while upon the firm opacous Globe  
 Of this round World, whose first convex divides 420  
 The luminous inferior Orbs, enclos'd  
 From *Chaos* and th' inroad of Darkness old,  
*Satan* alighted walks: a Globe farr off  
 It seem'd, now seems a boundless Continent  
 Dark, waste, and wild, under the frown of Night



Starless expos'd, and ever-threatening storms  
 Of *Chaos* blustering round, inclement skie ;  
 Save on that side which from the wall of Heav'n  
 Though distant farr som small reflection gaines  
 Of glimmering air less vext with tempest loud :  
 Here walk'd the Fiend at large in spacious field. 430  
 As when a Vultur on *Imaus* bred,  
 Whose snowie ridge the roving *Tartar* bounds,  
 Dislodging from a Region scarce of prey  
 To gorge the flesh of Lambs or yeanling Kids  
 On Hills where Flocks are fed, flies toward the Springs  
 Of *Ganges* or *Hydaspes*, *Indian* streams ;  
 But in his way lights on the barren plaines  
 Of *Sericana*, where *Chineses* drive  
 With Sails and Wind thir canie Waggon's light :  
 So on this windie Sea of Land, the Fiend 440  
 Walk'd up and down alone bent on his prey,  
 Alone, for other Creature in this place  
 Living or liveless to be found was none,  
 None yet, but store hereafter from the earth  
 Up hither like Aereal vapours flew  
 Of all things transitorie and vain, when Sin  
 With vanity had filld the works of men :  
 Both all things vain, and all who in vain things  
 Built their fond hopes of Glorie or lasting fame,  
 Or happiness in this or th' other life ; 450  
 All who have thir reward on Earth, the fruits  
 Of painful Superstition and blind Zeal,  
 Naught seeking but the praise of men, here find  
 Fit retribution, emptie as thir deeds ;  
 All th' unaccomplisht works of Natures hand,  
 Abortive, monstrous, or unkindly mixt,  
 Dissolv'd on earth, fleet hither, and in vain,  
 Till final dissolution, wander here,  
 Not in the neighbouring Moon, as some have dreamd ;  
 Those argent Fields more likely habitants, 460  
 Translated Saints, or middle Spirits hold  
 Betwixt th' Angelical and Human kinde :  
 Hither of ill-joynd Sons and Daughters born  
 First from the ancient World those Giants came  
 With many a vain exploit, though then renown'd :  
 The builders next of *Babel* on the Plain



Of *Sennaar*, and still with vain designe  
 New *Babels*, had they wherewithall, would build :  
 Others came single ; hee who to be deemd  
 A God, leap'd fondly into *Ætna* flames  
*Empedocles*, and hee who to enjoy  
*Plato's Elysium*, leap'd into the Sea,  
*Cleombrotus*, and many more too long,  
 Embryos, and Idiots, Eremites and Friers  
 White, Black and Grey, with all thir trumperie.  
 Here Pilgrims roam, that stray'd so farr to seek  
 In *Golgotha* him dead, who lives in Heav'n ;  
 And they who to be sure of Paradise  
 Dying put on the weeds of *Dominic*,  
 Or in *Franciscan* think to pass disguis'd ;  
 They pass the Planets seven, and pass the fixt,  
 And that Crystalline Sphear whose ballance weighs  
 The Trepidation talkt, and that first mov'd ;  
 And now Saint *Peter* at Heav'ns Wicket seems  
 To wait them with his Keys, and now at foot  
 Of Heav'ns ascent they lift thir Feet, when loe  
 A violent cross wind from either Coast  
 Blows them transverse ten thousand Leagues awry  
 Into the devious Air ; then might ye see  
 Cowles, Hoods and Habits with thir wearers tost  
 And flutterd into Raggs, then Reliques, Beads,  
 Indulgences, Dispenses, Pardons, Bulls,  
 The sport of Winds : all these upwhirld aloft  
 Fly o're the backside of the World farr off  
 Into a *Limbo* large and broad, since calld  
 The Paradise of Fools, to few unknown  
 Long after, now unpeopl'd, and untrod ;  
 All this dark Globe the Fiend found as he pass'd,  
 And long he wanderd, till at last a gleame  
 Of dawning light turnd thither-ward in haste  
 His travell'd steps ; farr distant hee descries  
 Ascending by degrees magnificent  
 Up to the wall of Heaven a Structure high,  
 At top whereof, but farr more rich appeerd  
 The work as of a Kingly Palace Gate  
 With Frontispice of Diamond and Gold  
 Imbellisht, thick with sparkling orient Gemmes  
 The Portal shon, inimitable on Earth

470

480

490

500

# Paradise Lost.

[BK. III.

By Model, or by shading Pencil drawn.  
The Stairs were such as whereon *Jacob* saw 510  
Angels ascending and descending, bands  
Of Guardians bright, when he from *Esau* fled  
To *Padan-Aram* in the field of *Luz*,  
Dreaming by night under the open Skie,  
And waking cri'd, This is the Gate of Heav'n.  
Each Stair mysteriously was meant, nor stood  
There alwaies, but drawn up to Heav'n sometimes  
Viewless, and underneath a bright Sea flow'd  
Of Jasper, or of liquid Pearle, whereon  
Who after came from Earth, sayling arriv'd, 520  
Wafted by Angels, or flew o're the Lake  
Rapt in a Chariot drawn by fiery Steeds.  
The Stairs were then let down, whether to dare  
The Fiend by easie ascent, or aggravate  
His sad exclusion from the dores of Bliss.  
Direct against which op'nd from beneath,  
Just o're the blissful seat of Paradise,  
A passage down to th' Earth, a passage wide,  
Wider by farr then that of after-times  
Over Mount *Sion*, and, though that were large, 530  
Over the *Promis'd Land* to God so dear,  
By which, to visit oft those happy Tribes,  
On high behests his Angels to and fro  
Pass'd frequent, and his eye with choice regard  
From *Paneas* the fount of *Jordans* flood  
To *Bëersaba*, where the *Holy Land*  
Borders on *Ægypt* and the *Arabian* shoare;  
So wide the op'ning seemd, where bounds were set  
To darkness, such as bound the Ocean wave.  
*Satan* from hence now on the lower stair 540  
That scal'd by steps of Gold to Heav'n Gate  
Looks down with wonder at the sudden view  
Of all this World at once. As when a Scout  
Through dark and desart wayes with peril gone  
All night; at last by break of chearful dawne  
Obtains the brow of some high-climbing Hill,  
Which to his eye discovers unaware  
The goodly prospect of some forein land  
First seen, or some renownd Metropolis  
With glistening Spires and Pinnacles adorn'd, 550

*Paradise Lost.*

Which now the Rising Sun guilds with his beams.  
 Such wonder seis'd, though after Heaven seen,  
 The Spirit maligne. but much more envy seis'd  
 At sight of all this World beheld so faire.  
 Round he surveys, and well might, where he stood  
 So high above the circling Canopie  
 Of Nights extended shade; from Eastern Point  
 Of *Libra* to the fleecie Starr that bears  
*Andromeda* farr off *Atlantick* Seas  
 Beyond th' *Horizon*; then from Pole to Pole 560  
 He views in bredth, and without longer pause  
 Down right into the Worlds first Region throws  
 His flight precipitant, and windes with ease  
 Through the pure marble Air his oblique way  
 Amongst innumerable Starrs, that shon  
 Stars distant, but nigh hand seemd other Worlds,  
 Or other Worlds they seemd, or happy Iles,  
 Like those *Hesperian* Gardens fam'd of old,  
 Fortunate Fields, and Groves and flourie Vales,  
 Thrice happy Iles, but who dwelt happy there 570  
 He stayd not to enquire: above them all  
 The golden Sun in splendor likest Heaven  
 Allur'd his eye: Thither his course he bends  
 Through the calm Firmament; but up or downe  
 By center, or eccentric, hard to tell,  
 Or Longitude, where the great Luminarie  
 Alooff the vulgar Constellations thick,  
 That from his Lordly eye keep distance due,  
 Dispenses Light from farr; they as they move  
 Thir Starry dance in numbers that compute 580  
 Days, months, and years, towards his all-chearing Lamp  
 Turn swift their various motions, or are turnd  
 By his Magnetic beam, that gently warms  
 The Univers, and to each inward part  
 With gentle penetration, though unseen,  
 Shoots invisible vertue even to the deep:  
 So wondrously was set his Station bright.  
 There lands the Fiend, a spot like which perhaps  
 Astronomer in the Sun's lucent Orbe  
 Through his glaz'd Optic Tube yet never saw. 590  
 The place he found beyond expression bright,  
 Compar'd with aught on Earth, Medal or Stone;

Not all parts like, but all alike informd  
 With radiant light, as glowing Iron with fire ;  
 If mettall, part seemd Gold, part Silver cleer ;  
 If stone, Carbuncle most or Chrysolite,  
 Rubie or Topaz, to the Twelve that shon  
 In *Aarons* Brestplate, and a stone besides  
 Imagind rather oft then elsewhere seen,  
 That stone, or like to that which here below 600  
 Philosophers in vain so long have sought,  
 In vain, though by thir powerful Art they binde  
 Volatil *Hermes*, and call up unbound  
 In various shapes old *Proteus* from the Sea,  
 Draind through a Limbec to his Native forme.  
 What wonder then if fields and regions here  
 Breathe forth *Elixir* pure, and Rivers run  
 Potable Gold, when with one vertuous touch  
 Th' Arch-chimic Sun so farr from us remote 610  
 Produces with Terrestrial Humor mixt  
 Here in the dark so many precious things  
 Of colour glorious and effect so rare ?  
 Here matter new to gaze the Devil met  
 Undazl'd, farr and wide his eye commands,  
 For sight no obstacle found here, nor shade,  
 But all Sun-shine, as when his Beams at Noon  
 Culminate from th' *Æquator*, as they now  
 Shot upward still direct, whence no way round  
 Shadow from body opaque can fall, and the Aire,  
 No where so cleer, sharp'nd his visual ray 620  
 To objects distant farr, whereby he soon  
 Saw within kenn a glorious Angel stand,  
 The same whom *John* saw also in the Sun :  
 His back was turnd, but not his brightness hid ;  
 Of beaming sunnie Raies, a golden tiar  
 Circl'd his Head, nor less his Locks behind  
 Illustrious on his Shoulders fledge with wings  
 Lay waving round ; on som great charge imploy'd  
 Hee seemd, or fixt in cogitation deep.  
 Glad was the Spirit impure ; as now in hope 630  
 To find who might direct his wandring flight  
 To Paradise the happie seat of Man,  
 His journies end and our beginning woe.  
 But first he casts to change his proper shape,

Which else might work him danger or delay :  
 And now a stripling Cherube he appeers,  
 Not of the prime, yet such as in his face  
 Youth smil'd Celestial, and to every Limb  
 Sutable grace diffus'd, so well he feign'd ;  
 Under a Coronet his flowing haire  
 In curles on either cheek plaid, wings he wore  
 Of many a colourd plume sprinkl'd with Gold,  
 His habit fit for speed succinct, and held  
 Before his decent steps a Silver wand.  
 He drew not nigh unheard, the Angel bright,  
 Ere he drew nigh, his radiant visage turn'd,  
 Admonisht by his eare, and strait was known  
 Th' Arch-Angel *Uriel*, one of the seav'n  
 Who in God's presence, neerest to his Throne  
 Stand ready at command, and are his Eyes  
 That run through all the Heav'ns, or down to th' Earth  
 Bear his swift errands over moist and dry,  
 O're Sea and Land ; him *Satan* thus accostes.

640

650

660

670

*Uriel*, for thou of those seav'n Spirits that stand  
 In sight of Gods high Throne, gloriously bright,  
 The first are wont his great authentic will  
 Interpreter through highest Heav'n to bring,  
 Where all his Sons thy Embassie attend ;  
 And here art likeliest by supream decree  
 Like honour to obtain, and as his Eye  
 To visit oft this new Creation round ;  
 Unspeakable desire to see, and know  
 All these his wondrous works, but chiefly Man,  
 His chief delight and favour, him for whom  
 All these his works so wondrous he ordain'd,  
 Hath brought me from the Quires of Cherubim  
 Alone thus wandring. Brightest Seraph tell  
 In which of all these shining Orbes hath Man  
 His fixed seat, or fixed seat hath none,  
 But all these shining Orbes his choice to dwell ;  
 That I may find him, and with secret gaze,  
 Or open admiration him behold  
 On whom the great Creator hath bestow'd  
 Worlds, and on whom hath all these graces powrd ;  
 That both in him and all things, as is meet,  
 The Universal Maker we may praise ;

Who justly hath drivn out his Rebell Foes  
To deepest Hell, and to repair that loss  
Created this new happie Race of Men  
To serve him better: wise are all his ways.

680

So spake the false dissembler unperceivd;  
For neither Man nor Angel can discern  
Hypocrisie, the only evil that walks  
Invisible, except to God alone,  
By his permissive will, through Heav'n and Earth:  
And oft though wisdom wake, suspicion sleeps  
At wisdoms Gate, and to simplicitie  
Resigns her charge, while goodness thinks no ill  
Where no ill seems: Which now for once beguil'd  
*Uriel*, though Regent of the Sun, and held  
The sharpest sighted Spirit of all in Heav'n;  
Who to the fraudulent Impostor foule  
In his uprightness answer thus returnd.

690

Faire Angel, thy desire which tends to know  
The works of God, thereby to glorifie  
The great Work-Maister, leads to no excess  
That reaches blame, but rather merits praise  
The more it seems excess, that led thee hither  
From thy Empyrean Mansion thus alone,  
To witness with thine eyes what some perhaps  
Contented with report heare onely in heav'n:  
For wonderful indeed are all his works,  
Pleasant to know, and worthiest to be all  
Had in remembrance alwayes with delight;  
But what created mind can comprehend  
Thir number, or the wisdom infinite  
That brought them forth, but hid thir causes deep.  
I saw when at his Word the formless Mass,  
This worlds material mould, came to a heap:  
Confusion heard his voice, and wilde uproar  
Stood rul'd, stood vast infinitude confin'd;  
Till at his second bidding darkness fled,  
Light shon, and order from disorder sprung:  
Swift to thir several Quarters hasted then  
The cumbrous Elements, Earth, Flood, Aire, Fire,  
And this Æthereal quintessence of Heav'n  
Flew upward, spirited with various forms,  
That rowld orbicular, and turnd to Starrs

700

710

*Paradise Lost.*

Numberless, as thou seest, and how they move ;  
 Each had his place appointed, each his course, 720  
 The rest in circuit walles this Universe.  
 Look downward on that Globe whose hither side  
 With light from hence, though but reflected, shines ;  
 That place is Earth the seat of Man, that light  
 His day, which else as th' other Hemisphere  
 Night would invade, but there the neighbouring Moon  
 (So call that opposite fair Starr) her aide  
 Timely interposes, and her monthly round  
 Still ending, still renewing through mid Heav'n,  
 With borrowd light her countenance triform 730  
 Hence fills and empties to enlighten the Earth,  
 And in her pale dominion checks the night.  
 That spot to which I point is *Paradise*,  
*Adams* abode, those loftie shades his Bowre.  
 Thy way thou canst not miss, me mine requires.  
 Thus said, he turnd, and *Satan* bowing low,  
 As to superior Spirits is wont in Heav'n,  
 Where honour due and reverence none neglects,  
 Took leave, and toward the coast of Earth beneath,  
 Down from th' Ecliptic, sped with hop'd success, 740  
 Throws his steep flight in many an Aerie wheele,  
 Nor staid, till on *Niphates* top he lights.

*The End of the Third Book.*



# PARADISE LOST.

## BOOK IV.

### THE ARGUMENT.

Satan now in prospect of Eden, and nigh the place where he must now attempt the bold enterprize which he undertook alone against God and Man, falls into many doubts with himself, and many passions, fear, envy, and despare; but at length confirms himself in evil, journeys on to Paradise, whose outward prospect and scituation is described, overleaps the bounds, sits in the shape of a Cormorant on the Tree of life, as highest in the Garden to look about him. The Garden describ'd; Satans first sight of Adam and Eve; his wonder at thir excellent form and happy state, but with resolution to work thir fall; overhears thir discourse, thence gathers that the Tree of knowledge was forbidden them to eat of, under penalty of death; and thereon intends to found his temptation, by seducing them to transgress: then leaves them a while, to know further of thir state by some other means. Mean while Uriel descending on a Sun-beam warns Gabriel, who had in charge the Gate of Paradise, that some evil spirit had escap'd the Deep, and past at Noon by his Sphere in the shape of a good Angel down to Paradise, discovered after by his furious gestures in the Mount. Gabriel promises to find him out ere morning. Night coming on, Adam and Eve discourse of going to thir rest: thir Bower describ'd; thir Evening worship. Gabriel drawing forth his Bands of Night-watch to walk the round of Paradise, appoints two strong Angels to Adams Bower, least the evill spirit should be there doing some harm to Adam or Eve sleeping; there they find him at the ear of Eve, tempting her in a dream, and bring him, though unwilling, to Gabriel; by whom question'd, he scornfully answers, prepares resistance, but hinder'd by a Sign from Heaven, flies out of Paradise.

18 find him out] find him 1674



O FOR that warning voice, which he who saw  
 Th' *Apocalyps*, heard cry in Heav'n aloud,  
 Then when the Dragon, put to second rout,  
 Came furious down to be reveng'd on men,  
*Wo to the inhabitants on Earth!* that now,  
 While time was, our first Parents had bin warnd  
 The coming of thir secret foe, and scap'd  
 Haply so scap'd his mortal snare; for now  
*Satan*, now first inflam'd with rage came down,  
 The Tempter ere th' Accuser of man-kind,  
 To wreck on innocent frail man his loss  
 Of that first Battel, and his flight to Hell:  
 Yet not rejoycing in his speed, though bold,  
 Far off and fearless, nor with cause to boast,  
 Begins his dire attempt, which nigh the birth  
 Now rowling, boiles in his tumultuous brest,  
 And like a devillish Engine back recoiles  
 Upon himself; horror and doubt distract  
 His troubl'd thoughts, and from the bottom stirr  
 The Hell within him, for within him Hell  
 He brings, and round about him, nor from Hell  
 One step no more then from himself can fly  
 By change of place: Now conscience wakes despair  
 That slumberd, wakes the bitter memorie  
 Of what he was, what is, and what must be  
 Worse; of worse deeds worse sufferings must ensue.  
 Sometimes towards *Eden* which now in his view  
 Lay pleasant, his grievd look he fixes sad,  
 Sometimes towards Heav'n and the full-blazing Sun,  
 Which now sat high in his Meridian Towre:  
 Then much revolving, thus in sighs began.

10

20

30

O thou that with surpassing Glory crownd,  
 Look'st from thy sole Dominion like the God  
 Of this new World; at whose sight all the Starrs  
 Hide thir diminisht heads; to thee I call,  
 But with no friendly voice, and add thy name  
 O Sun, to tell thee how I hate thy beams  
 That bring to my remembrance from what state  
 I fell, how glorious once above thy Spheare;  
 Till Pride and worse Ambition threw me down  
 Warring in Heav'n against Heav'ns matchless King:  
 Ah wherefore! he deservd no such return

40

From me, whom he created what I was  
 In that bright eminence, and with his good  
 Upbraided none; nor was his service hard.  
 What could be less then to afford him praise,  
 The easiest recompence, and pay him thanks,  
 How due! yet all his good prov'd ill in me,  
 And wrought but malice; lifted up so high  
 I sdeind subjection, and thought one step higher 50  
 Would set me highest, and in a moment quit  
 The debt immense of endless gratitude,  
 So burthensome, still paying, still to ow;  
 Forgetful what from him I still receivd,  
 And understood not that a grateful mind  
 By owing owes not, but still pays, at once  
 Indebted and dischargd; what burden then?  
 O had his powerful Destiny ordaind  
 Me some inferiour Angel, I had stood  
 Then happie; no unbounded hope had rais'd 60  
 Ambition. Yet why not? som other Power  
 As great might have aspir'd, and me though mean  
 Drawn to his part; but other Powers as great  
 Fell not, but stand unshak'n, from within  
 Or from without, to all temptations arm'd.  
 Hadst thou the same free Will and Power to stand?  
 Thou hadst: whom hast thou then or what to accuse,  
 But Heav'ns free Love dealt equally to all?  
 Be then his Love accurst, since love or hate,  
 To me alike, it deals eternal woe. 70  
 Nay curs'd be thou; since against his thy will  
 Chose freely what it now so justly rues.  
 Me miserable! which way shall I flie  
 Infinite wrauth, and infinite despaire?  
 Which way I flie is Hell; my self am Hell;  
 And in the lowest deep a lower deep  
 Still threatning to devour me opens wide,  
 To which the Hell I suffer seems a Heav'n.  
 O then at last relent: is there no place  
 Left for Repentance, none for Pardon left? 80  
 None left but by submission; and that word  
*Disdain* forbids me, and my dread of shame  
 Among the spirits beneath, whom I seduc'd  
 With other promises and other vaunts

Then to submit, boasting I could subdue  
 Th' Omnipotent. Ay me, they little know  
 How dearly I abide that boast so vaine,  
 Under what torments inwardly I groane:  
 While they adore me on the Throne of Hell,  
 With Diadem and Scepter high advanced 90  
 The lower still I fall, onely Supream  
 In miserie; such joy Ambition findes.  
 But say I could repent and could obtaine  
 By Act of Grace my former state; how soon  
 Would highth recal high thoughts, how soon unsay  
 What feign'd submission swore: ease would recant  
 Vows made in pain, as violent and void.  
 For never can true reconcilment grow  
 Where wounds of deadly hate have peirc'd so deep:  
 Which would but lead me to a worse relapse, 100  
 And heavier fall: so should I purchase deare  
 Short intermission bought with double smart.  
 This knows my punisher; therefore as farr  
 From granting hee, as I from begging peace:  
 All hope excluded thus, behold in stead  
 Of us out-cast, exil'd, his new delight,  
 Mankind created, and for him this World.  
 So farwel Hope, and with Hope farwel Fear,  
 Farwel Remorse: all Good to me is lost;  
 Evil be thou my Good; by thee at least 110  
 Divided Empire with Heav'ns King I hold  
 By thee, and more then half perhaps will reigne;  
 As Man ere long, and this new World shall know.  
 Thus while he spake, each passion dimm'd his face  
 Thrice chang'd with pale, ire, envie and despair,  
 Which marrd his borrow'd visage, and betraid  
 Him counterfet, if any eye beheld.  
 For heav'nly mindes from such distempers foule  
 Are ever cleer. Whereof hee soon aware,  
 Each perturbation smooth'd with outward calme, 120  
 Artificer of fraud; and was the first  
 That practisd falshood under saintly shew,  
 Deep malice to conceale, couch't with revenge:  
 Yet not anough had practisd to deceive  
*Uriel* once warnd; whose eye pursu'd him down  
 The way he went, and on th' *Assyrian* mount

Saw him disfigur'd, more then could befall  
 Spirit of happie sort: his gestures fierce  
 He markd and mad demeanour, then alone,  
 As he suppos'd all unobserv'd, unseen. 130  
 So on he fares, and to the border comes  
 Of *Eden*, where delicious Paradise,  
 Now nearer, Crowns with her enclosure green,  
 As with a rural mound the champain head  
 Of a steep wilderness, whose hairie sides  
 With thicket overgrown, grotesque and wilde,  
 Access deni'd; and over head up grew  
 Insuperable highth of loftiest shade,  
 Cedar, and Pine, and Firr, and branching Palm  
 A Silvan Scene, and as the ranks ascend 140  
 Shade above shade, a woodie Theatre  
 Of stateliest view. Yet higher then thir tops  
 The verdurous wall of Paradise up sprung:  
 Which to our general Sire gave prospect large  
 Into his neather Empire neighbouring round.  
 And higher then that wall a circling row  
 Of goodliest Trees loaden with fairest Fruit,  
 Blossoms and Fruits at once of golden hue  
 Appeerd, with gay enameld colours mixt:  
 On which the Sun more glad impress'd his beams 150  
 Then in fair Evening Cloud, or humid Bow,  
 When God hath showrd the earth; so lovely seemd  
 That Lantskip: And of pure now purer aire  
 Meets his approach, and to the heart inspires  
 Vernal delight and joy, able to drive  
 All sadness but despair: now gentle gales  
 Fanning thir odoriferous wings dispense  
 Native perfumes, and whisper whence they stole  
 Those balmie spoiles. As when to them who sail  
 Beyond the *Cape of Hope*, and now are past 160  
*Mozambic*, off at Sea North-East windes blow  
*Sabeau* Odours from the spicie shoare  
 Of *Arabie* the blest, with such delay  
 Well pleas'd they slack thir course, and many a League  
 Cheard with the grateful smell old Ocean smiles.  
 So entertaind those odorous sweets the Fiend  
 Who came thir bane, though with them better pleas'd  
 Then *Asmodeus* with the fishie fume,

That drove him, though enamour'd, from the Spouse  
Of *Tobits* Son, and with a vengeance sent  
From *Media* post to *Ægypt*, there fast bound. 170

Now to th' ascent of that steep savage Hill  
*Satan* had journied on, pensive and slow;  
But further way found none, so thick entwin'd,  
As one continu'd brake, the undergrowth  
Of shrubs and tangling bushes had perplext  
All path of Man or Beast that past that way:  
One Gate there onely was, and that look'd East  
On th' other side: which when th' arch-fellon saw  
Due entrance he disdain'd, and in contempt, 180  
At one slight bound high overleap'd all bound  
Of Hill or highest Wall, and sheer within  
Lights on his feet. As when a prowling Wolfe,  
Whom hunger drives to seek new haunt for prey,  
Watching where Shepherds pen thir Flocks at eve  
In hurdld Cotes amid the field secure,  
Leaps o're the fence with ease into the Fould:  
Or as a Thief bent to unhoord the cash  
Of some rich Burgher, whose substantial dores,  
Cross-barred and bolted fast, fear no assault, 190  
In at the window climbs, or o're the tiles:  
So clomb this first grand Thief into Gods Fould:  
So since into his Church lewd Hirelings climb.  
Thence up he flew, and on the Tree of Life,  
The middle Tree and highest there that grew,  
Sat like a Cormorant; yet not true Life  
Thereby regain'd, but sat devising Death  
To them who liv'd; nor on the vertue thought  
Of that life-giving Plant, but only us'd  
For prospect, what well us'd had bin the pledge 200  
Of immortalitie. So little knows  
Any, but God alone, to value right  
The good before him, but perverts best things  
To worst abuse, or to thir meanest use.  
Beneath him with new wonder now he views  
To all delight of human sense expos'd  
In narrow room Natures whole wealth, yea more,  
A Heaven on Earth: for blissful Paradise  
Of God the Garden was, by him in the East  
Of *Eden* planted; *Eden* stretchd her Line 210

From *Auran* Eastward to the Royal Towrs  
 Of Great *Seleucia*, built by *Grecian* Kings,  
 Or where the Sons of *Eden* long before  
 Dwelt in *Telassar*: in this pleasant soile  
 His farr more pleasant Garden God ordaind;  
 Out of the fertil ground he caus'd to grow  
 All Trees of noblest kind for sight, smell, taste;  
 And all amid them stood the Tree of Life,  
 High eminent, blooming Ambrosial Fruit  
 Of vegetable Gold; and next to Life 220  
 Our Death the Tree of Knowledge grew fast by,  
 Knowledge of Good bought dear by knowing ill.  
 Southward through *Eden* went a River large,  
 Nor chang'd his course, but through the shaggie hill  
 Pass'd underneath ingulft, for God had thrown  
 That Mountain as his Garden mould high rais'd  
 Upon the rapid current, which through veins  
 Of porous Earth with kindly thirst up drawn,  
 Rose a fresh Fountain, and with many a rill  
 Waterd the Garden; thence united fell 230  
 Down the steep glade, and met the neather Flood,  
 Which from his darksom passage now appeers,  
 And now divided into four main Streams,  
 Runs divers, wandring many a famous Realme  
 And Country whereof here needs no account,  
 But rather to tell how, if Art could tell,  
 How from that Saphire Fount the crisped Brooks,  
 Rowling on Orient Pearl and sands of Gold,  
 With mazie error under pendant shades  
 Ran Nectar, visiting each plant, and fed 240  
 Flours worthy of Paradise which not nice Art  
 In Beds and curious Knots, but Nature boon  
 Powrd forth profuse on Hill and Dale and Plaine,  
 Both where the morning Sun first warmly smote  
 The open field, and where the unpierc't shade  
 Imbround the noontide Bows: Thus was this place,  
 A happy rural seat of various view:  
 Groves whose rich Trees wept odorous Gumms and Balme,  
 Others whose fruit burnisht with Golden Rinde  
 Hung amiable, *Hesperian* Fables true, 250  
 If true, here onely, and of delicious taste:  
 Betwixt them Lawns, or level Downs, and Flocks



Grasing the tender herb, were interpos'd,  
 Or palmie hilloc, or the flourie lap  
 Of som irriguous Valley spread her store,  
 Flours of all hue, and without Thorn the Rose :  
 Another side, umbrageous Grots and Caves  
 Of coole recess, o're which the mantling Vine  
 Layes forth her purple Grape, and gently creeps  
 Luxuriant ; mean while murmuring waters fall 260  
 Down the slope hills, disperst, or in a Lake,  
 'That to the fringed Bank with Myrtle crown'd,  
 Her chrystall mirror holds, unite thir streams.  
 The Birds thir quire apply ; aires, vernal aires,  
 Breathing the smell of field and grove, attune  
 The trembling leaves, while Universal *Pan*  
 Knit with the *Graces* and the *Hours* in dance  
 Led on th' Eternal Spring. Not that faire field  
 Of *Enna*, where *Proserpin* gathring flours  
 Her self a fairer Floure by gloomie *Dis* 270  
 Was gatherd, which cost *Ceres* all that pain  
 'To seek her through the world ; nor that sweet Grove  
 Of *Daphne* by *Orontes*, and th' inspir'd  
*Castalian* Spring might with this Paradise  
 Of *Eden* strive ; nor that *Nyseian* Ile  
 Girt with the River *Triton*, where old *Cham*,  
 Whom Gentiles *Ammon* call and *Libyan Jove*,  
 Hid *Amalthea* and her Florid Son  
 Young *Bacchus* from his Stepdame *Rhea's* eye ;  
 Nor where *Abassin* Kings thir issue Guard, 280  
 Mount *Amara*, though this by som suppos'd  
 True Paradise under the *Ethiop* Line  
 By *Nilus* head, enclos'd with shining Rock,  
 A whole dayes journey high, but wide remote  
 From this *Assyrian* Garden, where the Fiend  
 Saw undelighted all delight, all kind  
 Of living Creatures new to sight and strange :  
 Two of far nobler shape erect and tall,  
 Godlike erect, with native Honour clad  
 In naked Majestie seemd Lords of all, 290  
 And worthie seemd, for in thir looks Divine  
 The image of thir glorious Maker shon,  
 Truth, Wisdome, Sanctitude severe and pure,  
 Severe, but in true filial freedom plac't ;

Whence true autoritie in men; though both  
 Not equal, as their sex not equal seemd;  
 For contemplation hee and valour formd,  
 For softness shee and sweet attractive Grace,  
 Hee for God only, shee for God in him:  
 His fair large Front and Eye sublime declar'd 300  
 Absolute rule; and Hyacinthin Locks  
 Round from his parted forelock manly hung  
 Clustering, but not beneath his shoulders broad:  
 Shee as a vail down to the slender waste  
 Her unadorned golden tresses wore  
 Dissheveld, but in wanton ringlets wav'd  
 As the Vine curles her tendrils, which impli'd  
 Subjection, but requir'd with gentle sway,  
 And by her yeilded, by him best receivd,  
 Yeilded with coy submission, modest pride, 310  
 And sweet reluctant amorous delay.  
 Nor those mysterious parts were then conceald,  
 Then was not guiltie shame, dishonest shame  
 Of natures works, honor dishonorable,  
 Sin-bred, how have ye troubl'd all mankind  
 With shews instead, meer shews of seeming pure,  
 And banisht from mans life his happiest life,  
 Simplicitie and spotless innocence.  
 So passd they naked on, nor shund the sight  
 Of God or Angel, for they thought no ill: 320  
 So hand in hand they passd, the lovliest pair  
 That ever since in loves imbraces met,  
*Adam* the goodliest man of men since born  
 His Sons, the fairest of her Daughters *Eve*.  
 Under a tuft of shade that on a green  
 Stood whispering soft, by a fresh Fountain side  
 They sat them down, and after no more toil  
 Of thir sweet Gardning labour then suffic'd  
 To recommend coole *Zephyr*, and made ease  
 More easie, wholsom thirst and appetite 330  
 More grateful, to thir Supper Fruits they fell,  
 Nectarine Fruits which the compliant boughes  
 Yeilded them, side-long as they sat recline  
 On the soft downie Bank damaskt with flours:  
 The savourie pulp they chew, and in the rinde  
 Still as they thirsted scoop the brimming stream;



Nor gentle purpose, nor endearing smiles  
 Wanted, nor youthful dalliance as beseems  
 Fair couple, linkt in happie nuptial League,  
 Alone as they. About them frisking playd 340  
 All Beasts of th' Earth, since wilde, and of all chase  
 In Wood or Wilderness, Forrest or Den ;  
 Sporting the Lion rampd, and in his paw  
 Dandl'd the Kid ; Bears, Tygers, Ounces, Pard  
 Gambold before them, th' unwieldy Elephant  
 To make them mirth us'd all his might, and wreathd  
 His Lithe Proboscis ; close the Serpent sly  
 Insinuating, wove with Gordian twine  
 His breaded train, and of his fatal guile  
 Gave proof unheeded ; others on the grass 350  
 Coucht, and now fild with pasture gazing sat,  
 Or Bedward ruminating ; for the Sun  
 Declin'd was hasting now with prone carreer  
 To th' Ocean Iles, and in th' ascending Scale  
 Of Heav'n the Starrs that usher Evening rose :  
 When *Satan* still in gaze, as first he stood,  
 Scarce thus at length faild speech recoverd sad.

O Hell ! what doe mine eyes with grief behold,  
 Into our room of bliss thus high advanc't  
 Creatures of other mould, earth-born perhaps, 360  
 Not Spirits, yet to heav'nly Spirits bright  
 Little inferior ; whom my thoughts pursue  
 With wonder, and could love, so lively shines  
 In them Divine resemblance, and such grace  
 The hand that formd them on thir shape hath pourd.  
 Ah gentle pair, yee little think how nigh  
 Your change approaches, when all these delights  
 Will vanish and deliver ye to woe,  
 More woe, the more your taste is now of joy ;  
 Happie, but for so happie ill secur'd 370  
 Long to continue, and this high seat your Heav'n  
 Ill fenc't for Heav'n to keep out such a foe  
 As now is enterd ; yet no purpos'd foe  
 To you whom I could pittie thus forlorne  
 Though I unpittied : League with you I seek,  
 And mutual amitie so streight, so close,  
 That I with you must dwell, or you with me  
 Henceforth ; my dwelling haply may not please

Like this fair Paradise, your sense, yet such  
 Accept your Makers work ; he gave it me, 380  
 Which I as freely give ; Hell shall unfould,  
 To entertain you two, her widest Gates.  
 And send forth all her Kings ; there will be room,  
 Not like these narrow limits, to receive  
 Your numerous offspring ; if no better place,  
 Thank him who puts me loath to this revenge  
 On you who wrong me not for him who wrongd.  
 And should I at your harmless innocence  
 Melt, as I doe, yet public reason just,  
 Honour and Empire with revenge enlarg'd, 390  
 By conquering this new World, compels me now  
 To do what else though damnd I should abhorre.

So spake the Fiend, and with necessitie,  
 The Tyrants plea, excus'd his devilish deeds.  
 Then from his loftie stand on that high Tree  
 Down he alights among the sportful Herd  
 Of those fourfooted kindes, himself now one,  
 Now other, as thir shape servd best his end  
 Neerer to view his prey, and unesp'd  
 To mark what of thir state he more might learn 400  
 By word or action markt : about them round  
 A Lion now he stalkes with fierie glare,  
 Then as a 'Tiger, who by chance hath spi'd  
 In some Purlieu two gentle Fawnes at play,  
 Strait couches close, then rising changes oft  
 His couchant watch, as one who chose his ground  
 Whence rushing he might surest seise them both  
 Grip't in each paw : when *Adam* first of men  
 To first of women *Eve* thus moving speech,  
 Turnd him all eare to heare new utterance flow. 410

Sole partner and sole part of all these joyes,  
 Dearer thy self then all ; needs must the Power  
 That made us, and for us this ample World  
 Be infinitely good, and of his good  
 As liberal and free as infinite,  
 That rais'd us from the dust and plac't us here  
 In all this happiness, who at his hand  
 Have nothing merited, nor can performe  
 Aught whereof hee hath need, hee who requires  
 From us no other service then to keep 420

This one, this easie charge, of all the Trees  
 In Paradise that beare delicious fruit  
 So various, not to taste that onely Tree  
 Of knowledge, planted by the Tree of Life,  
 So neer grows Death to Life, what ere Death is,  
 Som dreadful thing no doubt; for well thou knowst  
 God hath pronounc't it death to taste that Tree,  
 The only sign of our obedience left  
 Among so many signes of power and rule  
 Conferd upon us, and Dominion giv'n  
 Over all other Creatures that possesse  
 Earth, Aire, and Sea. Then let us not think hard  
 One easie prohibition, who enjoy  
 Free leave so large to all things else, and choice  
 Unlimited of manifold delights:  
 But let us ever praise him, and extoll  
 His bountie, following our delightful task  
 To prune these growing Plants, & tend these Flours,  
 Which were it toilsom, yet with thee were sweet.

430

To whom thus *Eve* repli'd. O thou for whom  
 And from whom I was formd flesh of thy flesh,  
 And without whom am to no end, my Guide  
 And Head, what thou hast said is just and right.  
 For wee to him indeed all praises owe,  
 And daily thanks, I chiefly who enjoy  
 So farr the happier Lot, enjoying thee  
 Preëminent by so much odds, while thou  
 Like consort to thy self canst no where find.  
 That day I oft remember, when from sleep  
 I first awak't, and found my self repos'd  
 Under a shade on flours, much wondring where  
 And what I was, whence thither brought, and how.  
 Not distant far from thence a murmuring sound  
 Of waters issu'd from a Cave and spread  
 Into a liquid Plain, then stood unmov'd  
 Pure as th' expanse of Heav'n; I thither went  
 With unexperient thought, and laid me downe  
 On the green bank, to look into the cleer  
 Smooth Lake, that to me seemd another Skie.  
 As I bent down to look, just opposite,  
 A Shape within the watry gleam appeerd  
 Bending to look on me, I started back,

440

450

460

It started back, but pleas'd I soon returnd,  
 Pleas'd it returnd as soon with answering looks  
 Of sympathie and love, there I had fixt  
 Mine eyes till now, and pin'd with vain desire,  
 Had not a voice thus warnd me, What thou seest,  
 What there thou seest fair Creature is thy self,  
 With thee it came and goes: but follow me,  
 And I will bring thee where no shadow staies  
 Thy coming, and thy soft imbraces, hee  
 Whose image thou art, him thou shall enjoy  
 Inseparablie thine, to him shalt beare  
 Multitudes like thy self, and thence be call'd  
 Mother of human Race: what could I doe,  
 But follow strait, invisibly thus led?  
 Till I espi'd thee, fair indeed and tall,  
 Under a Platan, yet methought less faire,  
 Less winning soft, less amiablie milde,  
 Then that smooth watry image; back I turnd,  
 Thou following cryd'st aloud, Return fair *Eve*,  
 Whom fl'i'st thou? whom thou fl'i'st, of him thou art,  
 His flesh, his bone; to give thee being I lent  
 Out of my side to thee, neerest my heart  
 Substantial Life, to have thee by my side  
 Henceforth an individual solace dear;  
 Part of my Soul I seek thee, and thee claim  
 My other half: with that thy gentle hand  
 Seisd mine, I yeilded, and from that time see  
 How beauty is excelld by manly grace  
 And wisdom, which alone is truly fair.

470

480

490

So spake our general Mother, and with eyes  
 Of conjugal attraction unprov'd,  
 And meek surrender, half imbracing leand  
 On our first Father, half her swelling Breast  
 Naked met his under the flowing Gold  
 Of her loose tresses hid: he in delight  
 Both of her Beauty and submissive Charms  
 Smil'd with superior Love, as *Jupiter*  
 On *Juno* smiles, when he impregns the Clouds  
 That shed *May* Flowers; and press'd her Matron lip  
 With kisses pure: aside the Devil turnd  
 For envie, yet with jealous leer maligne  
 Ey'd them askance, and to himself thus plaind.

500

Sight hateful, sight tormenting! thus these two  
 Imparadis't in one anothers arms  
 The happier *Eden*, shall enjoy thir fill  
 Of bliss on bliss, while I to Hell am thrust,  
 Where neither joy nor love, but fierce desire,  
 Among our other torments not the least, 510  
 Still unfulfill'd with pain of longing pines;  
 Yet let me not forget what I have gain'd  
 From thir own mouths; all is not theirs it seems:  
 One fatal Tree there stands of Knowledge call'd,  
 Forbidden them to taste: Knowledge forbidd'n?  
 Suspicious, reasonless. Why should thir Lord  
 Envie them that? can it be sin to know,  
 Can it be death? and do they onely stand  
 By Ignorance, is that thir happie state,  
 The proof of thir obedience and thir faith? 520  
 O fair foundation laid whereon to build  
 Thir ruine! Hence I will excite thir minds  
 With more desire to know, and to reject  
 Envious commands, invented with designe  
 To keep them low whom knowledge might exalt  
 Equal with Gods; aspiring to be such,  
 They taste and die: what likelier can ensue?  
 But first with narrow search I must walk round  
 This Garden, and no corner leave unspi'd;  
 A chance but chance may lead where I may meet 530  
 Some wandring Spirit of Heav'n, by Fountain side,  
 Or in thick shade retir'd, from him to draw  
 What further would be learnt. Live while ye may,  
 Yet happie pair; enjoy, till I return,  
 Short pleasures, for long woes are to succeed.

So saying, his proud step he scornful turn'd,  
 But with sly circumspection, and began  
 Through wood, through waste, o're hil, o're dale his roam.  
 Mean while in utmost Longitude, where Heav'n  
 With Earth and Ocean meets, the setting Sun 540  
 Slowly descended, and with right aspect  
 Against the eastern Gate of Paradise  
 Level'd his eevning Rayes: it was a Rock  
 Of Alablaster, pil'd up to the Clouds,  
 Conspicuous farr, winding with one ascent  
 Accessible from Earth, one entrance high;

The rest was craggie cliff, that overhung  
 Still as it rose, impossible to climbe.  
 Betwixt these rockie Pillars *Gabriel* sat  
 Chief of th' Angelic Guards, awaiting night ;  
 About him exercis'd Heroic Games  
 Th' unarmed Youth of Heav'n, but nigh at hand  
 Celestial Armourie, Shields, Helmes, and Speares  
 Hung high with Diamond flaming, and with Gold.  
 Thither came *Uriel*, gliding through the Eeven  
 On a Sun beam, swift as a shooting Starr  
 In *Autumn* thwarts the night, when vapors fir'd  
 Impress the Air, and shews the Mariner  
 From what point of his Compass to beware  
 Impetuous winds: he thus began in haste.

550

560

*Gabriel*, to thee thy cours by Lot hath giv'n  
 Charge and strict watch that to this happie place  
 No evil thing approach or enter in ;  
 This day at highth of Noon came to my Spheare  
 A Spirit, zealous, as he seem'd, to know  
 More of th' Almightyes works, and chiefly Man  
 Gods latest Image: I describ'd his way  
 Bent all on speed, and markt his Aerie Gate ;  
 But in the Mount that lies from *Eden* North,  
 Where he first lighted, soon discern'd his looks  
 Alien from Heav'n, with passions foul obscur'd :  
 Mine eye pursu'd him still, but under shade  
 Lost sight of him ; one of the banisht crew  
 I fear, hath ventur'd from the deep, to raise  
 New troubles ; him thy care must be to find.

570

To whom the winged Warriour thus returnd :

*Uriel*, no wonder if thy perfet sight,  
 Amid the Suns bright circle where thou sitst,  
 See farr and wide: in at this Gate none pass  
 The vigilance here plac't, but such as come  
 Well known from Heav'n ; and since Meridian hour  
 No Creature thence: if Spirit of other sort,  
 So minded, have oreleapt these earthie bounds  
 On purpose, hard thou knowst it to exclude  
 Spiritual substance with corporeal barr.  
 But if within the circuit of these walks  
 In whatsoever shape he lurk, of whom  
 Thou telst, by morrow dawning I shall know.

580



So promis'd hee, and *Uriel* to his charge  
 Returnd on that bright beam, whose point now raisd 590  
 Bore him slope downward to the Sun now fall'n  
 Beneath th' *Azores*; whither the prime Orb,  
 Incredible how swift, had thither rowl'd  
 Diurnal, or this less volubil Earth  
 By shorter flight to th' East, had left him there  
 Arraying with reflected Purple and Gold  
 The Clouds that on his Western Throne attend:  
 Now came still Eevning on, and Twilight gray  
 Had in her sober Liverie all things clad;  
 Silence accompanied, for Beast and Bird, 600  
 They to thir grassie Couch, these to thir Nests  
 Were slunk, all but the wakeful Nightingale;  
 She all night long her amorous descant sung;  
 Silence was pleas'd: now glow'd the Firmament  
 With living Saphirs: *Hesperus* that led  
 The starrie Host, rode brightest, till the Moon  
 Rising in clouded Majestie, at length  
 Apparent Queen unvaild her peerless light,  
 And o're the dark her Silver Mantle threw.

When *Adam* thus to *Eve*: Fair Consort, th' hour 610  
 Of night, and all things now retir'd to rest  
 Mind us of like repose, since God hath set  
 Labour and rest, as day and night to men  
 Successive, and the timely dew of sleep  
 Now falling with soft slumbrous weight inclines  
 Our eye-lids; other Creatures all day long  
 Rove idle unimploid, and less need rest;  
 Man hath his daily work of body or mind  
 Appointed, which declares his Dignitie,  
 And the regard of Heav'n on all his waies; 620  
 While other Animals unactive range,  
 And of thir doings God takes no account.  
 To morrow ere fresh Morning streak the East  
 With first approach of light, we must be ris'n,  
 And at our pleasant labour, to reform  
 Yon flourie Arbors, yonder Allies green,  
 Our walks at noon, with branches overgrown,  
 That mock our scant manuring, and require  
 More hands than ours to lop thir wanton growth:

627 walks] walk 1674

Those Blossoms also, and those dropping Gumms, 630  
That lie bestrowne unsightly and unsmooth,  
Ask riddance, if we mean to tread with ease;  
Mean while, as Nature wills, Night bids us rest.

To whom thus *Eve* with perfet beauty adorn'd.  
My Author and Disposer, what thou bidst  
Unargu'd I obey; so God ordains,  
God is thy Law, thou mine: to know no more  
Is womans happiest knowledge and her praise.  
With thee conversing I forget all time,  
All seasons and thir change, all please alike. 640

Sweet is the breath of morn, her rising sweet,  
With charm of earliest Birds; pleasant the Sun  
When first on this delightful Land he spreads  
His orient Beams, on herb, tree, fruit, and flour,  
Glistring with dew; fragrant the fertile earth  
After soft showers; and sweet the coming on  
Of grateful Eevning milde, then silent Night  
With this her solemn Bird and this fair Moon,  
And these the Gemms of Heav'n, her starrie train: 650

But neither breath of Morn when she ascends  
With charm of earliest Birds, nor rising Sun  
On this delightful land, nor herb, fruit, floure,  
Glistring with dew, nor fragrance after showers,  
Nor grateful Evening mild, nor silent Night  
With this her solemn Bird, nor walk by Moon,  
Or glittering Starr-light without thee is sweet.  
But wherfore all night long shine these, for whom  
This glorious sight, when sleep hath shut all eyes?

To whom our general Ancestor repli'd.  
Daughter of God and Man, accomplisht *Eve*, 660  
Those have thir course to finish, round the Earth,  
By morrow Eevning, and from Land to Land  
In order, though to Nations yet unborn,  
Ministring light prepar'd, they set and rise;  
Least total darkness should by Night regaine  
Her old possession, and extinguish life  
In Nature and all things, which these soft fires  
Not only enlighten, but with kindly heate  
Of various influence foment and warme,  
Temper or nourish, or in part shed down 670  
Thir stellar vertue on all kinds that grow



On Earth, made hereby apter to receive  
 Perfection from the Suns more potent Ray.  
 These then, though unbeheld in deep of night,  
 Shine not in vain, nor think, though men were none,  
 That heav'n would want spectators, God want praise;  
 Millions of spiritual Creatures walk the Earth  
 Unseen, both when we wake, and when we sleep:  
 All these with ceaseless praise his works behold  
 Both day and night: how often from the steep  
 Of echoing Hill or Thicket have we heard  
 Celestial voices to the midnight air,  
 Sole, or responsive each to others note  
 Singing thir great Creator: oft in bands  
 While they keep watch, or nightly rounding walk  
 With Heav'nly touch of instrumental sounds  
 In full harmonic number joind, thir songs  
 Divide the night, and lift our thoughts to Heaven.

68c

Thus talking hand in hand alone they pass'd  
 On to thir blissful Bower; it was a place  
 Chos'n by the sovran Planter, when he fram'd  
 All things to mans delightful use; the rooffe  
 Of thickest covert was inwoven shade  
 Laurel and Mirtle, and what higher grew  
 Of firm and fragrant leaf; on either side  
*Acanthus*, and each odorous bushie shrub  
 Fenc'd up the verdant wall; each beauteous flour,  
*Iris* all hues, Roses, and Gessamin  
 Rear'd high thir flourisht heads between, and wrought  
 Mosaic; underfoot the Violet,  
 Crocus, and Hyacinth with rich inlay  
 Broiderd the ground, more colour'd then with stone  
 Of costliest Emblem: other Creature here  
 Beast, Bird, Insect, or Worm durst enter none;  
 Such was thir awe of man. In shadier Bower  
 More sacred and sequesterd, though but feignd,  
*Pan* or *Silvanus* never slept, nor Nymph,  
 Nor *Faunus* haunted. Here in close recess  
 With Flowers, Garlands, and sweet-smelling Herbs  
 Espoused *Eve* deckt first her Nuptial Bed,  
 And heav'nly Quires the Hymenæan sung,  
 What day the genial Angel to our Sire  
 Brought her in naked beauty more adorn'd

69o

70o

71o

More lovely then *Pandora*, whom the Gods  
Endowd with all thir gifts, and O too like  
In sad event, when to the unwiser Son  
Of *Japhet* brought by *Hermes*, she ensnar'd  
Mankind with her faire looks, to be aveng'd  
On him who had stole *Joves* authentic fire.

Thus at thir shadie Lodge arriv'd, both stood,  
Both turnd, and under op'n Skie ador'd  
The God that made both Skie, Air, Earth & Heav'n  
Which they beheld, the Moons resplendent Globe  
And starrie Polc: Thou also mad'st the Night,  
Maker Omnipotent, and thou the Day,  
Which we in our appointed work imployd  
Have finisht happie in our mutual help  
And mutual love, the Crown of all our bliss  
Ordain'd by thee, and this delicious place  
For us too large, where thy abundance wants  
Partakers, and uncropt falls to the ground.  
But thou hast promis'd from us two a Race  
To fill the Earth, who shall with us extoll  
Thy goodness infinite, both when we wake,  
And when we seek, as now, thy gift of sleep.

This said unanimous, and other Rites  
Observing none, but adoration pure  
Which God likes best, into thir inmost bower  
Handed they went; and eas'd the putting off  
These troublesom disguises which wee wear,  
Strait side by side were laid, nor turnd I weene  
*Adam* from his fair Spouse, nor *Eve* the Rites  
Mysterious of connubial Love refus'd:

Whatever Hypocrites austere talk  
Of puritie and place and innocence,  
Defaming as impure what God declares  
Pure, and commands to som, leaves free to all.  
Our Maker bids increase, who bids abstain  
But our Destroyer, foe to God and Man?

Haile wedded Love, mysterious Law, true sourse  
Of human offspring, sole proprietie,

In Paradise of all things common else.  
By thee adulterous lust was driv'n from men  
Among the bestial herds to raunge, by thee  
Founded in Reason, Loyal, Just, and Pure,

Relations dear, and all the Charities  
 Of Father, Son, and Brother first were known.  
 Farr be it, that I should write thee sin or blame,  
 Or think thee unbefitting holiest place,  
 Perpetual Fountain of Domestic sweets,  
 Whose Bed is undefil'd and chaste pronounc't,  
 Present, or past, as Saints and Patriarchs us'd.  
 Here Love his golden shafts imploies, here lights  
 His constant Lamp, and waves his purple wings,  
 Reigns here and revels; not in the bought smile  
 Of Harlots, loveless, joyless, undeard,  
 Casual fruition, nor in Court Amours  
 Mixt Dance, or wanton Mask, or Midnight Bal,  
 Or Serenate, which the starv'd Lover sings  
 To his proud fair, best quitted with disdain.  
 These lulld by Nightingales imbraceing slept,  
 And on thir naked limbs the flourie roof  
 Showrd Roses, which the Morn repair'd. Sleep on,  
 Blest pair; and O yet happiest if ye seek  
 No happier state, and know to know no more.

760

770

Now had night measur'd with her shaddowie Cone  
 Half way up Hill this vast Sublunar Vault,  
 And from thir Ivorie Port the Cherubim  
 Forth issuing at th' accustomed hour stood armd  
 To thir night watches in warlike Parade,  
 When *Gabriel* to his next in power thus spake.

780

*Uzziel*, half these draw off, and coast the South  
 With strictest watch; these other wheel the North,  
 Our circuit meets full West. As flame they part  
 Half wheeling to the Shield, half to the Spear.  
 From these, two strong and suttile Spirits he calld  
 That neer him stood, and gave them thus in charge.

*Ithuriel* and *Zephon*, with wingd speed  
 Search through this Garden, leav unsearcht no nook,  
 But chiefly where those two fair Creatures Lodge,  
 Now laid perhaps asleep secure of harme.  
 This Eevning from the Sun's decline arriv'd  
 Who tells of som infernal Spirit seen  
 Hitherward bent (who could have thought?) escap'd  
 The barrs of Hell, on errand bad no doubt:  
 Such where ye find, seise fast, and hither bring.

790

So saying, on he led his radiant Files,

Daz'ling the Moon; these to the Bower direct  
 In search of whom they sought: him there they found  
 Squat like a Toad, close at the eare of *Eve*; 800  
 Assaying by his Devilish art to reach  
 The Organs of her Fancie, and with them forge  
 Illusions as he list, Phantasms and Dreams,  
 Or if, inspiring venom, he might taint  
 Th' animal Spirits that from pure blood arise  
 Like gentle breaths from Rivers pure, thence raise  
 At least distemperd, discontented thoughts,  
 Vain hopes, vain aimes, inordinate desires  
 Blown up with high conceits ingending pride.  
 Him thus intent *Ithuriel* with his Spear 810  
 Touch'd lightly; for no falshood can endure  
 Touch of Celestial temper, but returns  
 Of force to its own likeness: up he starts  
 Discoverd and surpriz'd. As when a spark  
 Lights on a heap of nitrous Powder, laid  
 Fit for the Tun som Magazin to store  
 Against a rumord Warr, the Smuttie graine  
 With sudden blaze diffus'd, inflames the Aire:  
 So started up in his own shape the Fiend.  
 Back stept those two fair Angels half amaz'd 820  
 So sudden to behold the grieslie King;  
 Yet thus, unmovd with fear, accost him soon.  
 Which of those rebell Spirits adjudg'd to Hell  
 Com'st thou, escap'd thy prison, and transform'd,  
 Why satst thou like an enemy in waite  
 Here watching at the head of these that sleep?  
 Know ye not then said *Satan*, filld with scorn  
 Know ye not me? ye knew me once no mate  
 For you, there sitting where ye durst not soare;  
 Not to know mee argues your selves unknown, 830  
 The lowest of your throng; or if ye know,  
 Why ask ye, and superfluous begin  
 Your message, like to end as much in vain?  
 To whom thus *Zephon*, answering scorn with scorn.  
 Think not, revolted Spirit, thy shape the same,  
 Or undiminisht brightness, to be known  
 As when thou stoodst in Heav'n upright and pure;  
 That Glorie then, when thou no more wast good,  
 Departed from thee, and thou resembl'st now

Thy sin and place of doom obscure and foule. 840  
 But come, for thou, besure, shalt give account  
 To him who sent us, whose charge is to keep  
 This place inviolable, and these from harm.

So spake the Cherube, and his grave rebuke  
 Severe in youthful beautie, added grace  
 Invincible : abasht the Devil stood,  
 And felt how awful goodness is, and saw  
 Vertue in her shape how lovly, saw, and pin'd  
 His loss ; but chiefly to find here observd  
 His lustre visibly impar'd ; yet seemd 850  
 Undaunted. If I must contend, said he,  
 Best with the best, the Sender not the sent,  
 Or all at once ; more glorie will be wonn,  
 Or less be lost. Thy fear, said *Zephon* bold,  
 Will save us trial what the least can doe  
 Single against thee wicked, and thence weak.

The Fiend repli'd not, overcome with rage ;  
 But like a proud Steed reind, went hautie on,  
 Chaumping his iron curb : to strive or flie  
 He held it vain ; awe from above had quell'd 860  
 His heart, not else dismai'd. Now drew they nigh  
 The western point, where those half-rounding guards  
 Just met, & closing stood in squadron joind  
 Awaiting next command. To whom thir Chief  
*Gabriel* from the Front thus call'd aloud.

O friends, I hear the tread of nimble feet  
 Hasting this way, and now by glimps discern  
*Ithuriel* and *Zephon* through the shade,  
 And with them comes a third of Regal port,  
 But faded splendor wan ; who by his gate 870  
 And fierce demeanour seems the Prince of Hell,  
 Not likely to part hence without contest ;  
 Stand firm, for in his look defiance lours.

He scarce had ended, when those two approachd  
 And brief related whom they brought, wher found,  
 How busied, in what form and posture coucht.

To whom with stern regard thus *Gabriel* spake.  
 Why hast thou, *Satan*, broke the bounds prescrib'd  
 To thy transgressions, and disturbd the charge  
 Of others, who approve not to transgress 880  
 By thy example, but have power and right

To question thy bold entrance on this place ;  
 Imploi'd it seems to violate sleep, and those  
 Whose dwelling God hath planted here in bliss ?

To whom thus *Satan* with contemptuous brow.  
*Gabriel*, thou hadst in Heav'n th' esteem of wise,  
 And such I held thee ; but this question askt  
 Puts me in doubt. Lives ther who loves his pain ?  
 Who would not, finding way, break loose from Hell,  
 Though thither doomd ? Thou wouldst thy self, no doubt, 890  
 And boldly venture to whatever place  
 Farthest from pain, where thou mightst hope to change  
 Torment with ease, & soonest recompence  
 Dole with delight, which in this place I sought ;  
 To thee no reason ; who knowst only good,  
 But evil hast not tri'd : and wilt object  
 His will who bound us ? let him surer barr  
 His Iron Gates, if he intends our stay  
 In that dark durance : thus much what was askt.  
 The rest is true, they found me where they say ; 900  
 But that implies not violence or harme.

Thus hee in scorn. The warlike Angel mov'd,  
 Disdainfully half smiling thus repli'd.  
 O loss of one in Heav'n to judge of wise,  
 Since *Satan* fell, whom follie overthrew,  
 And now returns him from his prison scap't,  
 Gravely in doubt whether to hold them wise  
 Or not, who ask what boldness brought him hither  
 Unlicenc't from his bounds in Hell prescrib'd .

So wise he judges it to fly from pain 910  
 However, and to scape his punishment.  
 So judge thou still, presumptuous, till the wrauth,  
 Which thou incurr'st by flying, meet thy flight  
 Seavenfold, and scourge that wisdom back to Hell,  
 Which taught thee yet no better, that no pain  
 Can equal anger infinite provok't.

But wherefore thou alone ? wherefore with thee  
 Came not all Hell broke loose ? is pain to them  
 Less pain, less to be fled, or thou then they  
 Less hardie to endure ? courageous Chief, 920  
 The first in flight from pain, had'st thou alleg'd  
 To thy deserted host this cause of flight,  
 Thou surely hadst not come sole fugitive.



To which the Fiend thus answerd frowning stern.  
 Not that I less endure, or shrink from pain,  
 Insulting Angel, well thou knowst I stood  
 Thy fiercest, when in Battel to thy aide  
 The blasting volied Thunder made all speed  
 And seconded thy else not dreaded Spear.  
 But still thy words at random, as before,  
 Argue thy inexperience what behooves  
 From hard assaies and ill successes past  
 A faithful Leader, not to hazard all  
 Through wayes of danger by himself untri'd.  
 I therefore, I alone first undertook  
 To wing the desolate Abyss, and spie  
 This new created World, whereof in Hell  
 Fame is not silent, here in hope to find  
 Better abode, and my afflicted Powers  
 To settle here on Earth, or in mid Aire ;  
 Though for possession put to try once more  
 What thou and thy gay Legions dare against ;  
 Whose easier business were to serve thir Lord  
 High up in Heav'n, with songs to hymne his Throne,  
 And practis'd distances to cringe, not fight.

To whom the warriour Angel soon repli'd.  
 To say and strait unsay, pretending first  
 Wise to flie pain, professing next the Spie,  
 Argues no Leader, but a lyar trac't,  
*Satan*, and couldst thou faithful add ? O name,  
 O sacred name of faithfulness profan'd !  
 Faithful to whom ? to thy rebellious crew ?  
 Armie of Fiends, fit body to fit head ;  
 Was this your discipline and faith ingag'd,  
 Your military obedience, to dissolve  
 Allegiance to th' acknowledg'd Power supream ?  
 And thou sly hypocrite, who now wouldst seem  
 Patron of liberty, who more then thou  
 Once fawn'd, and cring'd, and servilly ador'd  
 Heav'ns awful Monarch ? wherefore but in hope  
 To dispossess him, and thy self to reigne ?  
 But mark what I arreede thee now, avant ;  
 Flie thither whence thou fledst : if from this houre  
 Within these hallowd limits thou appeer,

Back to th' infernal pit I drag thee chaind,  
And Seale thee so, as henceforth not to scorne  
The facil gates of hell too slightly barrd.

So threatn'd hee, but *Satan* to no threats  
Gave heed, but waxing more in rage repli'd.

Then when I am thy captive talk of chaines, 970  
Proud limitarie Cherube, but ere then  
Farr heavier load thy self expect to feel  
From my prevailing arme, though Heavens King  
Ride on thy wings, and thou with thy Compeers,  
Us'd to the yোক, draw'st his triumphant wheels  
In progress through the rode of Heav'n Star-pav'd.

While thus he spake, th' Angelic Squadron bright  
Turnd fierie red, sharpning in mooned hornes  
Thir Phalanx, and began to hemm him round  
With ported Spears, as thick as when a field 980  
Of *Ceres* ripe for harvest waving bends  
Her bearded Grove of ears, which way the wind  
Swayes them; the careful Plowman doubting stands  
Least on the threshing floore his hopeful sheaves  
Prove chaff. On th' other side *Satan* allarm'd  
Collecting all his might dilated stood,  
Like *Teneriff* or *Atlas* unremov'd:

His stature reacht the Skie, and on his Crest  
Sat horror Plum'd; nor wanted in his graspe  
What seemd both Spear and Shield: now dreadful deeds 990  
Might have ensu'd, nor onely Paradise  
In this commotion, but the Starrie Cope  
Of Heav'n perhaps, or all the Elements  
At least had gon to rack, disturbd and torne  
With violence of this conflict, had not soon  
Th' Eternal to prevent such horrid fray  
Hung forth in Heav'n his golden Scales, yet seen  
Betwixt *Astrea* and the *Scorpion* signe,  
Wherein all things created first he weighd,  
The pendulous round Earth with ballanc't Aire 1000  
In counterpoise, now ponders all events,  
Battels and Realms: in these he put two weights  
The sequel each of parting and of fight;  
The latter quick up flew, and kickt the beam;  
Which *Gabriel* spying, thus bespake the Fiend.

*Satan*, I know thy strength, and thou knowst mine,



*Paradise Lost.*

Neither our own but giv'n; what follie then  
To boast what Arms can doe, since thine no more  
Then Heav'n permits, nor mine, though doubl'd now  
To trample thee as mire: for proof look up, 1010  
And read thy Lot in yon celestial Sign  
Where thou art weigh'd, & shown how light, how weak,  
If thou resist. The Fiend lookt up and knew  
His mounted scale aloft? nor more; but fled  
Murmuring, and with him fled the shades of night.

*The End of the Fourth Book.*

# PARADISE LOST.

## BOOK V.

### THE ARGUMENT.

*Morning approach't, Eve relates to Adam her troublesome dream; he likes it not, yet comforts her: They come forth to thir day labours: Their Morning Hymn at the Door of their Bower. God to render Man inexcusable sends Raphael to admonish him of his obedience, of his free estate, of his enemy near at hand; who he is, and why his enemy, and whatever else may avail Adam to know. Raphael comes down to Paradise, his appearance describ'd, his coming discern'd by Adam afar off sitting at the door of his Bower; he goes out to meet him, brings him to his lodge, entertains him with the choicest fruits of Paradise got together by Eve; their discourse at Table: Raphael performs his message, minds Adam of his state and of his enemy; relates at Adams request who that enemy is, and how he came to be so, beginning from his first revolt in Heaven, and the occasion thereof; how he drew his Legions after him to the parts of the North, and there incited them to rebel with him, perswading all but only Abdiel a Seraph, who in Argument diswades and opposes him, then forsakes him.*

Now morn her rosie steps in th' Eastern Clime  
Advancing, sow'd the Earth with Orient Pearle,  
When *Adam* wak't, so customd, for his sleep  
Was Aerie light, from pure digestion bred,  
And temperat vapors bland, which th' only sound  
Of leaves and fuming rills, *Aurora's* fan,  
Lightly dispers'd, and the shrill *Matin* Song  
Of Birds on every bough; so much the more  
His wonder was to find unwak'nd *Eve*  
With Tresses discompos'd, and glowing Cheek,  
As through unquiet rest: he on his side

Leaning half-raiſ'd, with looks of cordial Love  
 Hung over her enamour'd, and beheld  
 Beautie, which whether waking or asleep,  
 Shot forth peculiar Graces; then with voice  
 Milde, as when *Zephyrus* on *Flora* breathes,  
 Her hand soft touching, whisperd thus. Awake  
 My fairest, my espous'd, my latest found,  
 Heav'n's last best gift, my ever new delight,  
 Awake, the morning shines, and the fresh field 20  
 Calls us, we lose the prime, to mark how spring  
 Our tended Plants, how blows the Citron Grove,  
 What drops the Myrrhe, & what the balmie Reed,  
 How Nature paints her colours, how the Bee  
 Sits on the Bloom extracting liquid sweet.

Such whispering wak'd her, but with startl'd eye  
 On *Adam*, whom imbracing, thus she spake.

O Sole in whom my thoughts find all repose,  
 My Glorie, my Perfection, glad I see 30  
 Thy face, and Morn return'd, for I this Night,  
 Such night till this I never pass'd, have dream'd,  
 If dream'd, not as I oft am wont, of thee,  
 Works of day pass't, or morrows next designe,  
 But of offence and trouble, which my mind  
 Knew never till this irksom night; methought  
 Close at mine ear one call'd me forth to walk  
 With gentle voice, I thought it thine; it said,  
 Why sleepest thou *Eve*? now is the pleasant time,  
 The cool, the silent, save where silence yields 40  
 To the night-warbling Bird, that now awake  
 Tunes sweetest his love-labor'd song; now reignes  
 Full Orb'd the Moon, and with more pleasing light  
 Shadowie sets off the face of things; in vain,  
 If none regard; Heav'n wakes with all his eyes,  
 Whom to behold but thee, Natures desire,  
 In whose sight all things joy, with ravishment  
 Attracted by thy beauty still to gaze.  
 I rose as at thy call, but found thee not;  
 To find thee I directed then my walk;  
 And on, methought, alone I pass'd through ways 50  
 That brought me on a sudden to the Tree  
 Of interdicted Knowledge: fair it seem'd,  
 Much fairer to my Fancie then by day:

And as I wondring lookt, beside it stood  
 One shap'd and wing'd like one of those from Heav'n  
 By us oft seen; his dewie locks distill'd  
 Ambrosia; on that Tree he also gaz'd;  
 And O fair Plant, said he, with fruit surcharg'd,  
 Deigns none to ease thy load and taste thy sweet,  
 Nor God, nor Man; is Knowledge so despis'd? 60  
 Or envie, or what reserve forbids to taste?  
 Forbid who will, none shall from me withhold  
 Longer thy offerd good, why else set here?  
 This said he paus'd not, but with ventrous Arme  
 He pluckt, he tasted; mee damp horror chil'd  
 At such bold words voucht with a deed so bold:  
 But he thus overjoy'd, O Fruit Divine,  
 Sweet of thy self, but much more sweet thus cropt,  
 Forbidd'n here, it seems, as onely fit  
 For Gods, yet able to make Gods of Men: 70  
 And why not Gods of Men, since good, the more  
 Communicated, more abundant growes,  
 The Author not impair'd, but honourd more?  
 Here, happie Creature, fair Angelic *Eve*,  
 Partake thou also; happie though thou art,  
 Happier thou mayst be, worthier canst not be:  
 Taste this, and be henceforth among the Gods  
 Thy self a Goddess, not to Earth confin'd,  
 But sometimes in the Air, as wee, sometimes  
 Ascend to Heav'n, by merit thine, and see 80  
 What life the Gods live there, and such live thou.  
 So saying, he drew nigh, and to me held,  
 Even to my mouth of that same fruit held part  
 Which he had pluckt; the pleasant savourie smell  
 So quick'nd appetite, that I, methought,  
 Could not but taste. Forthwith up to the Clouds  
 With him I flew, and underneath beheld  
 The Earth outstretcht immense, a prospect wide  
 And various: wondring at my flight and change  
 To this high exaltation; suddenly 90  
 My Guide was gon, and I, me thought, sunk down,  
 And fell asleep; but O how glad I wak'd  
 To find this but a dream! Thus *Eve* her Night  
 Related, and thus *Adam* answerd sad.

Best Image of my self and dearer half,

The trouble of thy thoughts this night in sleep  
 Affects me equally; nor can I like  
 This uncouth dream, of evil sprung I fear;  
 Yet evil whence? in thee can harbour none,  
 Created pure. But know that in the Soule 100  
 Are many lesser Faculties that serve  
 Reason as chief; among these Fansie next  
 Her office holds; of all external things,  
 Which the five watchful Senses represent,  
 She forms Imaginations, Aerie shapes,  
 Which Reason joyning or disjoyning, frames  
 All what we affirm or what deny, and call  
 Our knowledge or opinion; then retires  
 Into her private Cell when Nature rests.  
 Oft in her absence mimic Fansie wakes 110  
 To imitate her; but misjoyning shapes,  
 Wilde work produces oft, and most in dreams,  
 Ill matching words and deeds long past or late.  
 Som such resemblances methinks I find  
 Of our last Eevnings talk, in this thy dream,  
 But with addition strange; yet be not sad.  
 Evil into the mind of God or Man  
 May come and go, so unapprov'd, and leave  
 No spot or blame behind: Which gives me hope  
 That what in sleep thou didst abhorr to dream, 120  
 Waking thou never wilt consent to do:  
 Be not disheart'nd then, nor cloud those looks  
 That wont to be more chearful and serene  
 Then when fair Morning first smiles on the World,  
 And let us to our fresh employments rise  
 Among the Groves, the Fountains, and the Flours  
 That open now thir choicest bosom'd smells  
 Reservd from night, and kept for thee in store.  
 So cheard he his fair Spouse, and she was cheard,  
 But silently a gentle tear let fall 130  
 From either eye, and wip'd them with her haire;  
 Two other precious drops that ready stood,  
 Each in thir chrystal sluice, hee ere they fell  
 Kiss'd as the gracious signs of sweet remorse  
 And pious awe, that feard to have offended.  
 So all was cleard, and to the Field they haste.  
 But first from under shadie arborous roof,

Soon as they forth were come to open sight  
 Of day-spring, and the Sun, who scarce up risen  
 With wheels yet hov'ring o're the Ocean brim, 140  
 Shot paralel to the earth his dewie ray,  
 Discovering in wide Lantskip all the East  
 Of Paradise and *Edens* happie Plains,  
 Lowly they bow'd adoring, and began  
 Thir Orisons, each Morning duly paid  
 In various style, for neither various style  
 Nor holy rapture wanted they to praise  
 Thir Maker, in fit strains pronounc't or sung  
 Unmeditated, such prompt eloquence  
 Flowd from thir lips, in Prose or numerous Verse, 150  
 More tuneable then needed Lute or Harp  
 To add more sweetness, and they thus began.

These are thy glorious works Parent of good,  
 Almighty, thine this universal Frame,  
 Thus wondrous fair; thy self how wondrous then!  
 Unspeakable, who sitst above these Heavens  
 To us invisible or dimly seen  
 In these thy lowest works, yet these declare  
 Thy goodness beyond thought, and Power Divine:  
 Speak yee who best can tell, ye Sons of light, 160  
 Angels, for yee behold him, and with songs  
 And choral symphonies, Day without Night,  
 Circle his Throne rejoycing, yee in Heav'n,  
 On Earth joyn all yee Creatures to extoll  
 Him first, him last, him midst, and without end.  
 Fairest of Starrs, last in the train of Night,  
 If better thou belong not to the dawn,  
 Sure pledge of day, that crownst the smiling Morn  
 With thy bright Circlet, praise him in thy Spheare  
 While day arises, that sweet hour of Prime. 170  
 Thou Sun, of this great World both Eye and Soule,  
 Acknowledge him thy Greater, sound his praise  
 In thy eternal course, both when thou climb'st,  
 And when high Noon hast gaind, & when thou fallst.  
 Moon, that now meetst the orient Sun, now fli'st  
 With the fixt Starrs, fixt in thir Orb that flies,  
 And yee five other wandring Fires that move  
 In mystic Dance not without Song, resound  
 His praise, who out of Darkness call'd up Light.

Aire, and ye Elements the eldest birth 180  
 Of Natures Womb, that in quaternion run  
 Perpetual Circle, multiform; and mix  
 And nourish all things, let your ceaseless change  
 Varie to our great Maker still new praise.  
 Ye Mists and Exhalations that now rise  
 From Hill or steaming Lake, duskie or grey,  
 'Till the Sun paint your fleecie skirts with Gold,  
 In honour to the Worlds great Author rise,  
 Whether to deck with Clouds the uncolour'd skie,  
 Or wet the thirstie Earth with falling showers, 190  
 Rising or falling still advance his praise.  
 His praise ye Winds, that from four Quarters blow,  
 Breathe soft or loud; and wave your tops, ye Pines,  
 With every Plant, in sign of Worship wave.  
 Fountains and yee, that warble, as ye flow,  
 Melodious murmurs, warbling tune his praise.  
 Joyn voices all ye living Souls, ye Birds,  
 That singing up to Heaven Gate ascend,  
 Bear on your wings and in your notes his praise;  
 Yee that in Waters glide, and yee that walk 200  
 The Earth, and stately tread, or lowly creep;  
 Witness if I be silent, Morn or Eeven,  
 To Hill, or Valley, Fountain, or fresh shade  
 Made vocal by my Song, and taught his praise.  
 Hail universal Lord, be bounteous still  
 To give us onely good; and if the night  
 Have gathered aught of evil or conceald,  
 Disperse it, as now light dispels the dark.  
 So pray'd they innocent, and to thir thoughts  
 Firm peace recoverd soon and wonted calm. 210  
 On to thir mornings rural work they haste  
 Among sweet dewes and flours; where any row  
 Of Fruit-trees overwoodie reachd too farr  
 Thir pamperd boughes, and needed hands to check  
 Fruitless imbraces: or they led the Vine  
 To wed her Elm; she spous'd about him twines  
 Her mariageable arms, and with her brings  
 Her dower th' adopted Clusters, to adorn  
 His barren leaves. Them thus imploid beheld  
 With pittie Heav'ns high King, and to him call'd 220  
*Raphael*, the sociable Spirit, that deign'd



To travel with *Tobias*, and secur'd  
His marriage with the seaventimes-wedded Maid.

*Raphael*, said hee, thou hear'st what stir on Earth  
*Satan* from Hell scap't through the darksom Gulf  
Hath raisd in Paradise, and how disturbd  
This night the human pair, how he designes  
In them at once to ruin all mankind.

Go therefore, half this day as friend with friend

Converse with *Adam*, in what Bowre or shade

Thou find'st him from the heat of Noon retir'd,

To respite his day-labour with repast,

Or with repose ; and such discourse bring on,

As may advise him of his happie state,

Happiness in his power left free to will,

Left to his own free Will, his Will though free,

Yet mutable, whence warne him to beware

He swerve not too secure : tell him withall

His danger, and from whom, what enemy

Late falln himself from Heaven, is plotting now

The fall of others from like state of bliss ;

By violence, no, for that shall be withstood,

But by deceit and lies ; this let him know,

Least wilfully transgressing he pretend

Surprisal, unadmonisht, unforewarnd.

So spake th' Eternal Father, and fulfilld

All Justice : nor delaid the winged Saint

After his charge receivd ; but from among

Thousand Celestial Ardors, where he stood

Vaild with his gorgeous wings, up springing light

Flew through the midst of Heav'n ; th' angelic Quires

On each hand parting, to his speed gave way

Through all th' Empyreal road ; till at the Gate

Of Heav'n arriv'd, the gate self-opens wide

On golden Hinges turning, as by work

Divine the sov'ran Architect had fram'd.

From hence, no cloud, or, to obstruct his sight,

Starr interpos'd, however small he sees,

Not unconform to other shining Globes,

Earth and the Gard'n of God, with Cedars crownd

Above all Hills. As when by night the Glass

Of *Galileo*, less assur'd, observes

Imagind Lands and Regions in the Moon :



Or Pilot from amidst the *Cyclades*  
*Delos* or *Samos* first appeering kenns  
 A cloudy spot. Down thither prone in flight  
 He speeds, and through the vast Ethereal Skie  
 Sailes between worlds & worlds, with steddie wing  
 Now on the polar windes, then with quick Fann  
 Winnows the buxom Air; till within soare 270  
 Of Towing Eagles, to all the Fowles he seems  
 A *Phoenix*, gaz'd by all, as that sole Bird  
 When to enshrine his reliques in the Sun's  
 Bright Temple, to *Egyptian Theb's* he flies.  
 At once on th' Eastern cliff of Paradise  
 He lights, and to his proper shape returns  
 A Seraph wingd; six wings he wore, to shade  
 His lineaments Divine; the pair that clad  
 Each shoulder broad, came mantling o're his brest 280  
 With regal Ornament; the middle pair  
 Girt like a Starrie Zone his waste, and round  
 Skirted his loines and thighes with downie Gold  
 And colours dipt in Heav'n; the third his feet  
 Shaddowd from either heele with featherd maile  
 Skie-tinctur'd grain. Like *Maia's* son he stood,  
 And shook his Plumes, that Heav'nly fragrance filld  
 The circuit wide. Strait knew him all the Bands  
 Of Angels under watch; and to his state,  
 And to his message high in honour rise;  
 For on som message high they guesd him bound. 290  
 Thir glittering Tents he passd, and now is come  
 Into the blissful field, through Groves of Myrrhe,  
 And flouring Odours, Cassia, Nard, and Balme;  
 A Wilderness of sweets; for Nature here  
 Wantond as in her prime, and plaid at will  
 Her Virgin Fancies, pouring forth more sweet,  
 Wilde above rule or art; enormous bliss.  
 Him through the spicie Forrest onward com  
*Adam* discern'd, as in the dore he sat  
 Of his coole Bowre, while now the mounted Sun 300  
 Shot down direct his fervid Raies, to warme  
 Earths inmost womb, more warmth then *Adam* needs  
 And *Eve* within, due at her hour prepar'd  
 For dinner savourie fruits, of taste to please  
 True appetite, and not disrelish thirst

Of nectarous draughts between, from milkie stream,  
Berrie or Grape: to whom thus *Adam* call'd.

Haste hither *Eve*, and worth thy sight behold  
Eastward among those Trees, what glorious shape  
Comes this way moving; seems another Morn 310  
Ris'n on mid-noon; som great behest from Heav'n  
To us perhaps he brings, and will voutsafe  
This day to be our Guest. But goe with speed,  
And what thy stores contain, bring forth and poure  
Abundance, fit to honour and receive  
Our Heav'nly stranger; well we may afford  
Our givers thir own gifts, and large bestow  
From large bestowd, where Nature multiplies  
Her fertil growth, and by disburd'ning grows  
More fruitful, which instructs us not to spare. 320

To whom thus *Eve*. *Adam*, earths hallowd mould,  
Of God inspir'd, small store will serve, where store,  
All seasons, ripe for use hangs on the stalk;  
Save what by frugal storing firmness gains  
To nourish, and superfluous moist consumes:  
But I will haste and from each bough and break,  
Each Plant & juciest Gourd will pluck such choice  
To entertain our Angel guest, as hee  
Beholding shall confess that here on Earth  
God hath dispenst his bounties as in Heav'n. 330

So saying, with dispatchful looks in haste  
She turns, on hospitable thoughts intent  
What choice to chuse for delicacie best,  
What order, so contriv'd as not to mix  
Tastes, not well joynd, inelegant, but bring  
Taste after taste upheld with kindest change,  
Bestirs her then, and from each tender stalk  
Whatever Earth all-bearing Mother yeilds  
In *India* East or West, or middle shoare  
In *Pontus* or the *Punic* Coast, or where 340  
*Alcinous* reign'd, fruit of all kindes, in coate,  
Rough, or smooth rin'd, or bearded husk, or shell  
She gathers, Tribute large, and on the board  
Heaps with unsparing hand; for drink the Grape  
She crushes, inoffensive moust, and meathes  
From many a berrie, and from sweet kernels prest  
She tempers dulcet creams, nor these to hold

Wants her fit vessels pure, then strews the ground  
 With Rose and Odours from the shrub unfum'd.  
 Mean while our Primitive great Sire, to meet 350  
 His god-like Guest, walks forth, without more train  
 Accompani'd then with his own compleat  
 Perfections, in himself was all his state,  
 More solemn then the tedious pomp that waits  
 On Princes, when thir rich Retinue long  
 Of Horses led, and Grooms besmeard with Gold  
 Dazles the croud, and sets them all agape.  
 Neerer his presence *Adam* though not awd,  
 Yet with submiss approach and reverence meek,  
 As to a superior Nature, bowing low, 360

Thus said. Native of Heav'n, for other place  
 None can then Heav'n such glorious shape contain;  
 Since by descending from the Thrones above,  
 Those happie places thou hast deign'd a while  
 To want, and honour these, voutsafe with us  
 Two onely, who yet by sov'ran gift possess  
 This spacious ground, in yonder shadie Bowre  
 To rest, and what the Garden choicest bears  
 To sit and taste, till this meridian heat  
 Be over, and the Sun more coole decline. 370

Whom thus the Angelic Vertue answerd milde.  
*Adam*, I therefore came, nor art thou such  
 Created, or such place hast here to dwell,  
 As may not oft invite, though Spirits of Heav'n  
 To visit thee; lead on then where thy Bowre  
 Oreshades; for these mid-hours, till Eevening rise  
 I have at will. So to the Silvan Lodge  
 They came, that like *Pomona's* Arbour smil'd  
 With flourets deck't and fragrant smells; but *Eve*  
 Undeck't, save with her self more lovely fair 380  
 Then Wood-Nymph, or the fairest Goddess feign'd  
 Of three that in Mount *Ida* naked strove,  
 Stood to entertain her guest from Heav'n; no vaile  
 Shee needed, Vertue-proof, no thought infirme  
 Alterd her cheek. On whom the Angel *Haile*  
 Bestowd, the holy salutation us'd  
 Long after to blest *Marie*, second *Eve*.

Haile Mother of Mankind, whose fruitful Womb  
 Shall fill the World more numerous with thy Sons

Then with these various fruits the Trees of God 390  
 Have heap'd this Table. Rais'd of grassie terf  
 Thir Table was, and mossie seats had round,  
 And on her ample Square from side to side  
 All *Autumn* pil'd, though *Spring* and *Autumn* here  
 Danc'd hand in hand. A while discourse they hold ;  
 No fear lest Dinner coole ; when thus began  
 Our Authour. Heav'nly stranger, please to taste  
 These bounties which our Nourisher, from whom  
 All perfet good unmeasur'd out, descends,  
 To us for food and for delight hath caus'd 400  
 The Earth to yeild ; unsavourie food perhaps  
 To spiritual Natures ; only this I know,  
 That one Celestial Father gives to all.

To whom the Angel. Therefore what he gives  
 (Whose praise be ever sung) to man in part  
 Spiritual, may of purest Spirits be found  
 No ingrateful food : and food alike those pure  
 Intelligential substances require  
 As doth your Rational ; and both contain 410  
 Within them every lower facultie  
 Of sense, whereby they hear, see, smell, touch, taste,  
 Tasting concoct, digest, assimilate,  
 And corporeal to incorporeal turn.  
 For know, whatever was created, needs  
 To be sustaind and fed ; of Elements  
 The grosser feeds the purer, earth the sea,  
 Earth and the Sea feed Air, the Air those Fires  
 Ethereal, and as lowest first the Moon ;  
 Whence in her visage round those spots, unpurg'd  
 Vapours not yet into her substance turn'd. 420  
 Nor doth the Moon no nourishment exhale  
 From her moist Continent to higher Orbes.  
 The Sun that light imparts to all, receives  
 From all his alimental recompence  
 In humid exhalations, and at Even  
 Sups with the Ocean : though in Heav'n the Trees  
 Of life ambrosial frutage bear, and vines  
 Yeild Nectar, though from off the boughs each Morn  
 We brush mellifluous Dewes, and find the ground  
 Cover'd with pearly grain : yet God hath here 430  
 Varied his bounty so with new delights,

As may compare with Heaven ; and to taste  
 Think not I shall be nice. So down they sat,  
 And to thir viands fell, nor seemingly  
 The Angel, nor in mist, the common gloss  
 Of Theologians, but with keen dispatch  
 Of real hunger, and concoctive heate  
 To transubstantiate ; what redounds, transpires  
 Through Spirits with ease ; nor wonder ; if by fire  
 Of sooty coal the Empiric Alchemist 440  
 Can turn, or holds it possible to turn  
 Metals of drossiest Ore to perfet Gold  
 As from the Mine. Mean while at Table *Eve*  
 Ministerd naked, and thir flowing cups  
 With pleasant liquors crown'd : O innocence  
 Deserving Paradise ! if ever, then,  
 Then had the Sons of God excuse to have bin  
 Enamour'd at that sight ; but in those hearts  
 Love unlibidinous reign'd, nor jealousy  
 Was understood, the injur'd Lovers Hell. 450

Thus when with meats & drinks they had suffic'd  
 Not burd'nd Nature, sudden mind arose  
 In *Adam*, not to let th' occasion pass  
 Given him by this great Conference to know  
 Of things above his World, and of thir being  
 Who dwell in Heav'n, whose excellence he saw  
 Transcend his own so farr, whose radiant forms  
 Divine effulgence, whose high Power so far  
 Exceeded human, and his wary speech  
 Thus to th' Empyrean Minister he fram'd. 460

Inhabitant with God, now know I well  
 Thy favour, in this honour done to man,  
 Under whose lowly roof thou hast voutsaft  
 To enter, and these earthly fruits to taste,  
 Food not of Angels, yet accepted so,  
 As that more willingly thou couldst not seem  
 At Heav'ns high feasts to have fed : yet what compare ?

To whom the winged Hierarch repli'd.  
 O *Adam*, one Almighty is, from whom  
 All things proceed, and up to him return, 470  
 If not deprav'd from good, created all  
 Such to perfection, one first matter all,  
 Indu'd with various forms, various degrees

Of substance, and in things that live, of life ;  
 But more refin'd, more spiritous, and pure,  
 As neerer to him plac't or neerer tending  
 Each in thir several active Sphears assignd,  
 Till body up to spirit work, in bounds  
 Proportiond to each kind. So from the root  
 Springs lighter the green stalk, from thence the leaves 480  
 More aerie, last the bright consummate floure  
 Spirits odorous breathes : flours and thir fruit  
 Mans nourishment, by gradual scale sublim'd  
 To vital Spirits aspire, to animal,  
 To intellectual, give both life and sense,  
 Fansie and understanding, whence the soule  
 Reason receives, and reason is her being,  
 Discursive, or Intuitive ; discourse  
 Is ofttest yours, the latter most is ours,  
 Differing but in degree, of kind the same. 490  
 Wonder not then, what God for you saw good  
 If I refuse not, but convert, as you,  
 To proper substance ; time may come when men  
 With Angels may participate, and find  
 No inconvenient Diet, nor too light Fare :  
 And from these corporal nutriments perhaps  
 Your bodies may at last turn all to Spirit,  
 Improv'd by tract of time, and wingd ascend  
 Ethereal, as wee, or may at choice  
 Here or in Heav'nly Paradises dwell ; 500  
 If ye be found obedient, and retain  
 Unalterably firm his love entire  
 Whose progenie you are. Mean while enjoy  
 Your fill what happiness this happie state  
 Can comprehend, incapable of more.

To whom the Patriarch of mankind repli'd.  
 O favourable spirit, propitious guest,  
 Well hast thou taught the way that might direct  
 Our knowledge, and the scale of Nature set  
 From center to circumference, whereon 510  
 In contemplation of created things  
 By steps we may ascend to God. But say,  
 What meant that caution joind, *if ye be found*  
*Obedient* ? can wee want obedience then  
 To him, or possibly his love desert

*Paradise Lost.*

Who form'd us from the dust, and plac'd us here  
 Full to the utmost measure of what bliss  
 Human desires can seek or apprehend?

To whom the Angel. Son of Heav'n and Earth,  
 Attend: That thou art happie, owe to God ;  
 That thou continu'st such, owe to thy self,  
 That is, to thy obedience ; therein stand.

520

This was that caution giv'n thee ; be advis'd.  
 God made thee perfect, not immutable ;  
 And good he made thee, but to persevere  
 He left it in thy power, ordain'd thy will  
 By nature free, not over-rul'd by Fate  
 Inextricable, or strict necessity ;

Our voluntarie service he requires,  
 Not our necessitated, such with him  
 Findes no acceptance, nor can find, for how  
 Can hearts, not free, be tri'd whether they serve  
 Willing or no, who will but what they must  
 By Destinie, and can no other choose?

530

My self and all th' Angelic Host that stand  
 In sight of God enthron'd, our happie state  
 Hold, as you yours, while our obedience holds ;  
 On other surety none ; freely we serve.

Because wee freely love, as in our will  
 To love or not ; in this we stand or fall :

540

And som are fall'n, to disobedience fall'n,  
 And so from Heav'n to deepest Hell ; O fall  
 From what high state of bliss into what woe !

To whom our great Progenitor. Thy words  
 Attentive, and with more delighted eare  
 Divine instructor, I have heard, then when  
 Cherubic Songs by night from neighbouring Hills  
 Aereal Music send : nor knew I not  
 To be both will and deed created free ;

Yet that we never shall forget to love  
 Our maker, and obey him whose command  
 Single, is yet so just, my constant thoughts

550

Assur'd me and still assure : though what thou tellst  
 Hath past in Heav'n, som doubt within me move,  
 But more desire to hear, if thou consent,  
 The full relation, which must needs be strange,  
 Worthy of Sacred silence to be heard ;



And we have yet large day, for scarce the Sun  
Hath finish't half his journey, and scarce begins  
His other half in the great Zone of Heav'n.

560

Thus *Adam* made request, and *Raphael*  
After short pause assenting, thus began.

High matter thou injoinst me, O prime of men,  
Sad task and hard, for how shall I relate  
To human sense th' invisible exploits  
Of warring Spirits; how without remorse  
The ruin of so many glorious once  
And perfet while they stood; how last unfould  
The secrets of another world, perhaps  
Not lawful to reveal? yet for thy good

570

This is dispenc't, and what surmounts the reach  
Of human sense, I shall delineate so,  
By lik'ning spiritual to corporal forms,  
As may express them best, though what if Earth  
Be but the shaddow of Heav'n, and things therein  
Each to other like, more then on earth is thought?

As yet this world was not, and *Chaos* wilde  
Reign'd where these Heav'ns now rowl, where Earth now rests  
Upon her Center pois'd, when on a day

580

(For Time, though in Eternitie, appli'd  
To motion, measures all things durable  
By present, past, and future) on such day  
As Heav'ns great Year brings forth, th' Emphyreal Host  
Of Angels by Imperial summons call'd,

Innumerable before th' Almightyes Throne  
Forthwith from all the ends of Heav'n appeerd  
Under thir Hierarchs in orders bright  
Ten thousand thousand Ensignes high advanc'd,  
Standards, and Gonfalons twixt Van and Reare  
Streame in the Aire, and for distinction serve

590

Of Hierarchies, of Orders, and Degrees;  
Or in thir glittering Tissues bear imblaz'd  
Holy Memorials, acts of Zeale and Love  
Recorded eminent. Thus when in Orbes  
Of circuit inexpressible they stood,  
Orb within Orb, the Father infinite,  
By whom in bliss imbosom'd sat the Son,  
A midst as from a flaming Mount, whose top  
Brightness had made invisible, thus spake.



Hear all ye Angels, Progenie of Light,  
Thrones, Dominations, Princedoms, Vertues, Powers,  
Hear my Decree, which unrevok't shall stand.

600

This day I have begot whom I declare  
My onely Son, and on this holy Hill  
Him have anointed, whom ye now behold  
At my right hand; your Head I him appoint;  
And by my Self have sworn to him shall bow  
All knees in Heav'n, and shall confess him Lord:  
Under his great Vice-gerent Reign abide  
United as one individual Soule

610

For ever happie: him who disobeyes  
Mee disobeyes, breaks union, and that day  
Cast out from God and blessed vision, falls  
Into utter darkness, deep ingulft, his place  
Ordaind without redemption, without end.

So spake th' Omnipotent, and with his words  
All seemd well pleas'd, all seem'd but were not all.

That day, as other solem dayes, they spent  
In song and dance about the sacred Hill,  
Mystical dance, which yonder starrie Spheare  
Of Planets and of fixt in all her Wheelles  
Resembles nearest, mazes intricate,  
Eccentric, intervold, yet regular

620

Then most, when most irregular they seem:  
And in thir motions harmonie Divine  
So smooths her charming tones, that Gods own ear  
Listens delighted. Eevning approachd

(For we have also our Eevning and our Morn,  
We ours for change delectable, not need)

Forthwith from dance to sweet repast they turn  
Desirous, all in Circles as they stood,  
Tables are set, and on a sudden pil'd

630

With Angels Food, and rubied Nectar flows:  
In Pearl, in Diamond, and massie Gold,  
Fruit of delicious Vines, the growth of Heav'n.  
They eat, they drink, and with refection sweet

627 Eevning approachd] Eevning now approachd 1674

636-9 On flours repos'd. and with fresh flourets crown'd,

They eate, they drink, and in communion sweet

Quaff immortalitie and joy, secure

Of surfet where full measure onely bounds

Excess, before th' all bounteous King, who showrd 1674

Are fill'd before th' all bounteous King, who showrd  
 With copious hand, rejoycing in thir joy.  
 Now when ambrosial Night with Clouds exhal'd  
 From that high mount of God, whence light & shade 640  
 Spring both, the face of brightest Heav'n had changd  
 To grateful Twilight (for Night comes not there  
 In darker veile) and roseat Dews dispos'd  
 All but the unsleeping eyes of God to rest,  
 Wide over all the Plain, and wider farr  
 Then all this globous Earth in Plain outspred,  
 (Such are the Courts of God) Th' Angelic throng  
 Disperst in Bands and Files thir Camp extend  
 By living Streams among the Trees of Life,  
 Pavilions numberless, and sudden reard, 650  
 Celestial Tabernacles, where they slept  
 Fannd with coole Winds, save those who in thir course  
 Melodious Hymns about the sovran Throne  
 Alternate all night long: but not so wak'd  
*Satan*, so call him now, his former name  
 Is heard no more in Heav'n; he of the first,  
 If not the first Arch-Angel, great in Power,  
 In favour and præeminence, yet fraught  
 With envie against the Son of God, that day  
 Honour'd by his great Father, and proclaim'd 660  
*Messiah* King anointed, could not beare  
 Through pride that sight, and thought himself impaird.  
 Deep malice thence conceiving & disdain,  
 Soon as midnight brought on the duskie houre  
 Friendliest to sleep and silence, he resolv'd  
 With all his Legions to dislodge, and leave  
 Unworshipt, unobey'd the Throne supream  
 Contemptuous, and his next subordinate  
 Awak'ning, thus to him in secret spake.

Sleepst thou, Companion dear, what sleep can close 670  
 Thy eye-lids? and remembrest what Decree  
 Of yesterday, so late hath past the lips  
 Of Heav'n's Almighty. Thou to me thy thoughts  
 Wast wont, I mine to thee was wont to impart;  
 Both waking we were one; how then can now  
 Thy sleep dissent? new Laws thou seest impos'd;  
 New Laws from him who reigns, new minds may  
 raise

In us who serve, new Counsels, to debate  
 What doubtful may ensue, more in this place  
 To utter is not safe. Assemble thou  
 Of all those Myriads which we lead the chief;  
 Tell them that by command, ere yet dim Night  
 Her shadowie Cloud withdraws, I am to haste,  
 And all who under me thir Banners wave,  
 Homeward with flying march where we possess  
 The Quarters of the North, there to prepare  
 Fit entertainment to receive our King  
 The great *Messiah*, and his new commands,  
 Who speedily through all the Hierarchies  
 Intends to pass triumphant, and give Laws.

680

690

So spake the false Arch-Angel, and infus'd  
 Bad influence into th' unwarie brest  
 Of his Associate; hee together calls,  
 Or several one by one, the Regent Powers,  
 Under him Regent, tells, as he was taught,  
 That the most High commanding, now ere Night,  
 Now ere dim Night had disincumberd Heav'n,  
 The great Hierarchal Standard was to move;  
 Tells the suggested cause, and casts between  
 Ambiguous words and jealousies, to sound  
 Or taint integritie; but all obey'd  
 The wonted signal, and superior voice  
 Of thir great Potentate; for great indeed  
 His name, and high was his degree in Heav'n;  
 His count'nance, as the Morning Starr that guides  
 The starrie flock, allur'd them, and with lyes  
 Drew after him the third part of Heav'ns Host:  
 Mean while th' Eternal eye, whose sight discernes  
 Abstrusest thoughts, from forth his holy Mount  
 And from within the golden Lamps that burne  
 Nightly before him, saw without thir light  
 Rebellion rising, saw in whom, how spread  
 Among the sons of Morn, what multitudes  
 Were banded to oppose his high Decree;  
 And smiling to his onely Son thus said.

700

710

Son, thou in whom my glory I behold  
 In full resplendence, Heir of all my might,  
 Neerly it now concernes us to be sure  
 Of our Omnipotence, and with what Arms

We mean to hold what anciently we claim 720  
 Of Deitie or Empire, such a foe  
 Is rising, who intends to erect his Throne  
 Equal to ours, throughout the spacious North ;  
 Nor so content, hath in his thought to trie  
 In battel, what our Power is, or our right.  
 Let us advise, and to this hazard draw  
 With speed what force is left, and all imploy  
 In our defence, lest unawares we lose  
 This our high place, our Sanctuarie, our Hill.

To whom the Son with calm aspect and cleer 730  
 Light'ning Divine, ineffable, serene,  
 Made answer. Mightie Father, thou thy foes  
 Justly hast in derision, and secure  
 Laugh'st at thir vain designs and tumults vain,  
 Matter to mee of Glory, whom thir hate  
 Illustrates, when they see all Regal Power  
 Giv'n me to quell thir pride, and in event  
 Know whether I be dextrous to subdue  
 Thy Rebels, or be found the worst in Heav'n.

So spake the Son, but *Satan* with his Powers 740  
 Farr was advanc't on winged speed, an Host  
 Innumerable as the Starrs of Night,  
 Or Starrs of Morning, Dew-drops, which the Sun  
 Impearls on every leaf and every flouer.  
 Regions they pass'd, the mightie Regencies  
 Of Seraphim and Potentates and Thrones  
 In thir triple Degrees, Regions to which  
 All thy Dominion, *Adam*, is no more  
 Then what this Garden is to all the Earth,  
 And all the Sea, from one entire globose 750  
 Stretcht into Longitude ; which having pass'd  
 At length into the limits of the North  
 They came, and *Satan* to his Royal seat  
 High on a Hill, far blazing, as a Mount  
 Rais'd on a Mount, with Pyramids and Towrs  
 From Diamond Quarries hew'n, & Rocks of Gold,  
 The Palace of great *Lucifer*, (so call  
 That Structure in the Dialect of men  
 Interpreted) which not long after, hee  
 Affecting all equality with God, 760  
 In imitation of that Mount whereon

*Messiah* was declar'd in sight of Heav'n,  
 The Mountain of the Congregation call'd ;  
 For thither he assembl'd all his Train,  
 Pretending so commanded to consult  
 About the great reception of thir King,  
 Thither to come, and with calumnious Art  
 Of counterfeted truth thus held thir ears.

Thrones, Dominations, Princedomes, Vertues, Powers,  
 If these magnific Titles yet remain 770  
 Not meerly titular, since by Decree  
 Another now hath to himself ingross't  
 All Power, and us eclips'd under the name  
 Of King anointed, for whom all this haste  
 Of midnight march, and hurried meeting here,  
 This onely to consult how we may best  
 With what may be devis'd of honours new  
 Receive him coming to receive from us  
 Knee-tribute yet unpaid, prostration vile,  
 Too much to one, but double how endur'd, 780  
 To one and to his image now proclaim'd?  
 But what if better counsels might erect  
 Our minds and teach us to cast off this Yoke?  
 Will ye submit your necks, and chuse to bend  
 The supple knee? ye will not, if I trust  
 To know ye right, or if ye know your selves  
 Natives and Sons of Heav'n possess before  
 By none, and if not equal all, yet free,  
 Equally free; for Orders and Degrees  
 Jarr not with liberty, but well consist. 790  
 Who can in reason then or right assume  
 Monarchie over such as live by right  
 His equals, if in power and splendor less,  
 In freedome equal? or can introduce  
 Law and Edict on us, who without law  
 Erre not, much less for this to be our Lord,  
 And look for adoration to th' abuse  
 Of those Imperial Titles which assert  
 Our being ordain'd to govern, not to serve?

Thus farr his bold discourse without controule 800  
 Had audience, when among the Seraphim  
*Abdiel*, then whom none with more zeale ador'd  
 The Deitie, and divine commands obei'd,

Stood up, and in a flame of zeale severe  
The current of his fury thus oppos'd.

O argument blasphemous, false and proud !  
Words which no eare ever to hear in Heav'n  
Expected, least of all from thee, ingrate  
In place thy self so high above thy Peeres.  
Canst thou with impious obloquie condemne 810  
The just Decree of God, pronounc't and sworn,  
That to his only Son by right endu'd  
With Regal Scepter, every Soule in Heav'n  
Shall bend the knee, and in that honour due  
Confess him rightful King? unjust thou saist  
Flatly unjust, to binde with Laws the free,  
And equal over equals to let Reigne,  
One over all with unsucceeded power.  
Shalt thou give Law to God, shalt thou dispute  
With him the points of libertie, who made 820  
Thee what thou art, & formd the Pow'rs of Heav'n  
Such as he pleasd, and circumscrib'd thir being?  
Yet by experience taught we know how good,  
And of our good, and of our dignitie  
How provident he is, how farr from thought  
To make us less, bent rather to exalt  
Our happie state under one Head more neer  
United. But to grant it thee unjust,  
That equal over equals Monarch Reigne :  
Thy self though great & glorious dost thou count, 830  
Or all Angelic Nature joind in one,  
Equal to him begotten Son, by whom  
As by his Word the mighty Father made  
All things, ev'n thee, and all the Spirits of Heav'n  
By him created in thir bright degrees,  
Crownd them with Glory, & to thir Glory nam'd  
Thrones, Dominations, Princedoms, Vertues, Powers,  
Essential Powers, nor by his Reign obscur'd,  
But more illustrious made, since he the Head  
One of our number thus reduc't becomes, 840  
His Laws our Laws, all honour to him done  
Returns our own. Cease then this impious rage,  
And tempt not these ; but hast'n to appease  
Th' incensed Father, and th' incensed Son,  
While Pardon may be found in time besought.

So spake the fervent Angel, but his zeale  
 None seconded, as out of season judg'd,  
 Or singular and rash, whereat rejoic'd  
 Th' Apostat, and more haughty thus repli'd.  
 That we were formd then saist thou? & the work 850  
 Of secondarie hands, by task transferd  
 From Father to his Son? strange point and new!  
 Doctrin which we would know whence learnt: who saw  
 When this creation was? rememberst thou  
 Thy making, while the Maker gave thee being?  
 We know no time when we were not as now;  
 Know none before us, self-begot, self-raisd  
 By our own quick'ning power, when fatal course  
 Had circl'd his full Orbe, the birth mature  
 Of this our native Heav'n, Ethereal Sons. 860  
 Our puissance is our own, our own right hand  
 Shall teach us highest deeds, by proof to try  
 Who is our equal: then thou shalt behold  
 Whether by supplication we intend  
 Address, and to begirt th' Almighty Throne  
 Beseeching or besieging. This report,  
 These tidings carrie to th' anointed King;  
 And fly, ere evil intercept thy flight.

He said, and as the sound of waters deep  
 Hoarce murmur echo'd to his words applause 870  
 Through the infinite Host, nor less for that  
 The flaming Seraph fearless, though alone  
 Encompass'd round with foes, thus answerd bold.

O alienate from God, O spirit accurst,  
 Forsak'n of all good; I see thy fall  
 Determind, and thy hapless crew involv'd  
 In this perfidious fraud, contagion spread  
 Both of thy crime and punishment: henceforth  
 No more be troubl'd how to quit the yoke  
 Of Gods *Messiah*: those indulgent Laws 880  
 Will not now be voutsaf't, other Decrees  
 Against thee are gon forth without recall;  
 That Golden Scepter which thou didst reject  
 Is now an Iron Rod to bruise and breake  
 Thy disobedience. Well thou didst advise,  
 Yet not for thy advise or threats I fly  
 These wicked Tents devoted, least the wrauth



# *Paradise Lost.*

[BK. V.]

Impendent, raging into sudden flame  
Distinguish not: for soon expect to feel  
His Thunder on thy head, devouring fire. 890  
Then who created thee lamenting learne,  
When who can uncreate thee thou shalt know.

So spake the Seraph *Abdiel* faithful found,  
Among the faithless, faithful only hee;  
Among innumerable false, unmov'd,  
Unshak'n, unseduc'd, untterrifi'd  
His Loyaltie he kept, his Love, his Zeale;  
Nor number, nor example with him wrought  
To swerve from truth, or change his constant mind 900  
Though single. From amidst them forth he passd,  
Long way through hostile scorn, which he susteind  
Superior, nor of violence fear'd aught;  
And with retorted scorn his back he turn'd  
On those proud Towrs to swift destruction doom'd.

*The End of the Fifth Book.*



# PARADISE LOST.

## BOOK VI.

### THE ARGUMENT.

*Raphael continues to relate how Michael and Gabriel were sent forth to Battel against Satan and his Angels. The first Fight describ'd: Satan and his Powers retire under Night: He calls a Council, invents devilish Engines, which in the second dayes Fight put Michael and his Angels to some disorder; But they at length pulling up Mountains overwhelm'd both the force and Machins of Satan: Yet the Tumult not so ending, God on the third day sends Messiah his Son, for whom he had reserv'd the glory of that Victory: Hee in the Power of his Father coming to the place, and causing all his Legions to stand still on either side, with his Chariot and Thunder driving into the midst of his Enemies, pursues them unable to resist towards the wall of Heaven; which opening, they leap down with horror and confusion into the place of punishment prepar'd for them in the Deep: Messiah returns with triumph to his Father.*

ALL night the dreadless Angel unpursu'd  
Through Heav'ns wide Champain held his way till Morn,  
Wak't by the circling Hours, with rosie hand  
Unbarr'd the gates of Light. There is a Cave  
Within the Mount of God, fast by his Throne,  
Where light and darkness in perpetual round  
Lodge and dislodge by turns, which makes through Heav'n  
Grateful vicissitude, like Day and Night;  
Light issues forth, and at the other dore  
Obsequious darkness enters, till her houre  
To veile the Heav'n, though darkness there might well  
Seem twilight here; and now went forth the Morn  
Such as in highest Heav'n, arrayd in Gold

10

Empyrean, from before her vanisht Night,  
 Shot through with orient Beams: when all the Plain  
 Coverd with thick embatteld Squadrons bright,  
 Chariots and flaming Armes, and fierie Steeds  
 Reflecting blaze on blaze, first met his view:  
 Warr he perceav'd, warr in procinct, and found  
 Already known what he for news had thought 20  
 To have reported: gladly then he mixt  
 Among those friendly Powers who him receav'd  
 With joy and acclamations loud, that one  
 That of so many Myriads fall'n, yet one  
 Returnd not lost: On to the sacred hill  
 They led him high applauded, and present  
 Before the seat supream; from whence a voice  
 From midst a Golden Cloud thus milde was heard.

Servant of God, well done, well hast thou fought  
 The better fight, who single hast maintaind 30  
 Against revolted multitudes the Cause  
 Of Truth, in word mightier then they in Armes;  
 And for the testimonie of Truth hast born  
 Universal reproach, far worse to beare  
 Then violence: for this was all thy care  
 To stand approv'd in sight of God, though Worlds  
 Judg'd thee perverse: the easier conquest now  
 Remains thee, aided by this host of friends,  
 Back on thy foes more glorious to return  
 Then scornd thou didst depart, and to subdue 40  
 By force, who reason for thir Law refuse,  
 Right reason for thir Law, and for thir King  
*Messiah*, who by right of merit Reigns.  
 Goe *Michael* of Celestial Armies Prince,  
 And thou in Military prowess next  
*Gabriel*, lead forth to Battel these my Sons  
 Invincible, lead forth my armed Saints  
 By Thousands and by Millions rang'd for fight;  
 Equal in number to that Godless crew  
 Rebellious, them with Fire and hostile Arms 50  
 Fearless assault, and to the brow of Heav'n  
 Pursuing drive them out from God and bliss,  
 Into thir place of punishment, the Gulf  
 Of *Tartarus*, which ready opens wide  
 His fiery *Chaos* to receive thir fall.

So spake the Sovran voice, and Clouds began  
 To darken all the Hill, and smoak to rowl  
 In duskie wreathes, reluctant flames, the signe  
 Of wrauth awak't: nor with less dread the loud  
 Ethereal Trumpet from on high gan blow: 60  
 At which command the Powers Militant,  
 That stood for Heav'n, in mighty Quadrate joyn'd  
 Of Union irresistible, mov'd on  
 In silence thir bright Legions, to the sound  
 Of instrumental Harmonie that breath'd  
 Heroic Ardor to advent'rous deeds  
 Under thir God-like Leaders, in the Cause  
 Of God and his *Messiah*. On they move  
 Indissolubly firm; nor obvious Hill,  
 Nor streit'ning Vale, nor Wood, nor Stream divides 70  
 Thir perfet ranks; for high above the ground  
 Thir march was, and the passive Air upbore  
 Thir nimble tread; as when the total kind  
 Of Birds in orderly array on wing  
 Came summond over *Eden* to receive  
 Thir names of thee; so over many a tract  
 Of Heav'n they march'd, and many a Province wide  
 Tenfold the length of this terrene: at last  
 Farr in th' Horizon to the North appeer'd  
 From skirt to skirt a fierie Region, stretcht 80  
 In battailous aspect, and neerer view  
 Bristl'd with upright beams innumerable  
 Of rigid Spears, and Helmets throng'd, and Shields  
 Various, with boastful Argument portraid,  
 The banded Powers of *Satan* hasting on  
 With furious expedition; for they weend  
 That self same day by fight, or by surprize  
 To win the Mount of God, and on his Throne  
 To set the envier of his State, the proud  
 Aspirer, but thir thoughts prov'd fond and vain 90  
 In the mid way: though strange to us it seemd  
 At first, that Angel should with Angel warr,  
 And in fierce hosting meet, who wont to meet  
 So oft in Festivals of joy and love  
 Unanimous, as sons of one great Sire  
 Hymning th' Eternal Father: but the shout  
 Of Battel now began, and rushing sound

Of onset ended soon each milder thought.  
 High in the midst exalted as a God  
 Th' Apostat in his Sun-bright Chariot sate 100  
 Idol of Majestie Divine, enclos'd  
 With Flaming Cherubim, and golden Shields;  
 Then lighted from his gorgeous Throne, for now  
 'Twixt Host and Host but narrow space was left,  
 A dreadful interval, and Front to Front  
 Presented stood in terrible array  
 Of hideous length: before the cloudie Van,  
 On the rough edge of battel ere it joyn'd,  
*Satan* with vast and haughtie strides advanc't,  
 Came trowing, arm'd in Adamant and Gold; 110  
*Abdiel* that sight endur'd not, where he stood  
 Among the mightiest, bent on highest deeds,  
 And thus his own undaunted heart explores.

O Heav'n! that such resemblance of the Highest  
 Should yet remain, where faith and realtie  
 Remain not; wherefore should not strength & might  
 There fail where Vertue fails, or weakest prove  
 Where boldest; though to sight unconquerable?  
 His puissance, trusting in th' Almighty's aide,  
 I mean to try, whose Reason I have tri'd 120  
 Unsound and false; nor is it aught but just,  
 That he who in debate of Truth hath won,  
 Should win in Arms, in both disputes alike  
 Victor; though brutish that contest and foule,  
 When Reason hath to deal with force, yet so  
 Most reason is that Reason overcome.

So pondering, and from his armed Peers  
 Forth stepping opposite, half way he met  
 His daring foe, at this prevention more  
 Incens't, and thus securely him defid. 130

Proud, art thou met? thy hope was to have reacht  
 The highth of thy aspiring unoppos'd,  
 The Throne of God unguarded, and his side  
 Abandon'd at the terror of thy Power  
 Or potent tongue; fool, not to think how vain  
 Against th' Omnipotent to rise in Arms;  
 Who out of smallest things could without end  
 Have rais'd incessant Armies to defeat  
 Thy folly; or with solitarie hand

Reaching beyond all limit, at one blow  
 Unaided could have finisht thee, and whelmd  
 Thy Legions under darkness; but thou seest  
 All are not of thy Train; there be who Faith  
 Prefer, and Pietie to God, though then  
 To thee not visible, when I alone  
 Seemed in thy World erroneous to dissent  
 From all: my Sect thou seest, now learn too late  
 How few somtimes may know, when thousands err.

140

Whom the grand foe with scornful eye askance  
 Thus answerd. Ill for thee, but in wisht houre  
 Of my revenge, first sought for thou returnst  
 From flight, seditious Angel, to receive  
 Thy merited reward, the first assay  
 Of this right hand provok't, since first that tongue  
 Inspir'd with contradiction durst oppose  
 A third part of the Gods, in Synod met  
 Thir Deities to assert, who while they feel  
 Vigour Divine within them, can allow

150

Omnipotence to none. But well thou comst  
 Before thy fellows, ambitious to win  
 From me som Plume, that thy success may show  
 Destruction to the rest: this pause between  
 (Unanswerd least thou boast) to let thee know;  
 At first I thought that Libertie and Heav'n  
 To heav'nly Soules had bin all one; but now  
 I see that most through sloth had rather serve,  
 Ministring Spirits, trained up in Feast and Song;  
 Such hast thou arm'd, the Minstrelsie of Heav'n,  
 Servilitie with freedom to contend,

160

As both thir deeds compar'd this day shall prove.

170

To whom in brief thus *Abdiel* stern repli'd.  
 Apostat still thou errst, nor end wilt find  
 Of erring, from the path of truth remote:  
 Unjustly thou deprav'st it with the name  
 Of *Servitude* to serve whom God ordains,  
 Or Nature; God and Nature bid the same,  
 When he who rules is worthiest, and excells  
 Them whom he governs. This is servitude,  
 To serve th' unwise, or him who hath rebelld  
 Against his worthier, as thine now serve thee,  
 Thy self not free, but to thy self enthrall'd;

180

Yet leudly dar'st our ministring upbraid.  
 Reign thou in Hell thy Kingdom, let mee serve  
 In Heav'n God ever blest, and his Divine  
 Behests obey, worthiest to be obey'd,  
 Yet Chains in Hell, not Realms expect: mean while  
 From mee returnd, as erst thou saidst, from flight,  
 This greeting on thy impious Crest receive.

So saying, a noble stroke he lifted high,  
 Which hung not, but so swift with tempest fell 190  
 On the proud Crest of *Satan*, that no sight,  
 Nor motion of swift thought, less could his Shield  
 Such ruin intercept: ten paces huge  
 He back recoild; the tenth on bended knee  
 His massie Spear upstaid; as if on Earth  
 Winds under ground or waters forcing way  
 Sidelong, had push't a Mountain from his seat  
 Half sunk with all his Pines. Amazeiment seis'd  
 The Rebel Thrones, but greater rage to see  
 Thus foil'd thir mightiest, ours joy filld, and shout, 200  
 Presage of Victorie and fierce desire  
 Of Battel: whereat *Michael* bid sound  
 Th' Arch-angel trumpet; through the vast of Heav'n  
 It sounded, and the faithful Armies rung  
*Hosanna* to the Highest: nor stood at gaze  
 The adverse Legions, nor less hideous joyn'd  
 The horrid shock: now storming furie rose,  
 And clamour such as heard in Heav'n till now  
 Was never, Arms on Armour clashing bray'd  
 Horrible discord, and the madding Wheelles 210  
 Of brazen Chariots rag'd; dire was the noise  
 Of conflict; over head the dismal hiss  
 Of fiery Darts in flaming volies flew,  
 And flying vaulted either Host with fire.  
 So under fierie Cope together rush'd  
 Both Battels maine, with ruinous assault  
 And inextinguishable rage; all Heav'n  
 Resounded, and had Earth bin then, all Earth  
 Had to her Center shook. What wonder? when  
 Millions of fierce encountring Angels fought 220  
 On either side, the least of whom could weild  
 These Elements, and arm him with the force  
 Of all thir Regions: how much more of Power

Armie against Armie numberless to raise  
 Dreadful combustion warring, and disturb,  
 Though not destroy, thir happie Native seat ;  
 Had not th' Eternal King Omnipotent  
 From his strong hold of Heav'n high over-rul'd  
 And limited thir might ; though numberd such  
 As each divided Legion might have seemd 230  
 A numerous Host, in strength each armed hand  
 A Legion ; led in fight, yet Leader seemd  
 Each Warriour single as in Chief, expert  
 When to advance, or stand, or turn the sway  
 Of Battel, open when, and when to close  
 The ridges of grim Warr ; no thought of flight,  
 None of retreat, no unbecoming deed  
 That argu'd fear ; each on himself reli'd,  
 As onely in his arm the moment lay  
 Of victorie ; deeds of eternal fame 240  
 Were don, but infinite : for wide was spread  
 That Warr and various ; somtimes on firm ground  
 A standing fight, then soaring on main wing  
 Tormented all the Air ; all Air seemd then  
 Conflicting Fire : long time in eeven scale  
 The Battel hung ; till *Satan*, who that day  
 Prodigious power had shewn, and met in Armes  
 No equal, raunging through the dire attack  
 Of fighting Seraphim confus'd, at length  
 Saw where the Sword of *Michael* smote, and fell'd 250  
 Squadrons at once, with huge two-handed sway  
 Brandisht aloft the horrid edge came down  
 Wide wasting ; such destruction to withstand  
 He hasted, and oppos'd the rockie Orb  
 Of tenfold Adamant, his ample Shield  
 A vast circumference : At his approach  
 The great Arch-Angel from his warlike toile  
 Surceas'd, and glad as hoping here to end  
 Intestine War in Heav'n, the arch foe subdu'd  
 Or Captive drag'd in Chains, with hostile frown 260  
 And visage all enflam'd first thus began.

Author of evil, unknown till thy revolt,  
 Unnam'd in Heav'n, now plenteous, as thou seest  
 These Acts of hateful strife, hateful to all,  
 Though heaviest by just measure on thy self



And thy adherents: how hast thou disturb'd  
 Heav'n's blessed peace, and into Nature brought  
 Miserie, uncreated till the crime  
 Of thy Rebellion? how hast thou instill'd  
 Thy malice into thousands, once upright 270  
 And faithful, now prov'd false. But think not here  
 To trouble Holy Rest; Heav'n casts thee out  
 From all her Confines. Heav'n the seat of bliss  
 Brooks not the works of violence and Warr.  
 Hence then, and evil go with thee along  
 Thy ofspring, to the place of evil, Hell,  
 Thou and thy wicked crew; there mingle broiles,  
 Ere this avenging Sword begin thy doome,  
 Or som more sudden vengeance wing'd from God  
 Precipitate thee with augmented paine. 280

So spake the Prince of Angels; to whom thus  
 The Adversarie. Nor think thou with wind  
 Of airie threats to aw whom yet with deeds  
 Thou canst not. Hast thou turnd the least of these  
 To flight, or if to fall, but that they rise  
 Unvanquisht, easier to transact with mee  
 That thou shouldst hope, imperious, & with threats  
 To chase me hence? erre not that so shall end  
 The strife which thou call'st evil, but wee style  
 The strife of Glorie: which we mean to win, 290  
 Or turn this Heav'n it self into the Hell  
 Thou fablest, here however to dwell free,  
 If not to reign: mean while thy utmost force,  
 And join him nam'd *Almightie* to thy aid,  
 I flie not, but have sought thee farr and nigh.

They ended parle, and both addrest for fight  
 Unspeakable; for who, though with the tongue  
 Of Angels, can relate, or to what things  
 Liken on Earth conspicuous, that may lift  
 Human imagination to such highth 300  
 Of Godlike Power: for likest Gods they seemd,  
 Stood they or mov'd, in stature, motion arms  
 Fit to decide the Empire of great Heav'n.  
 Now wav'd thir fierie Swords, and in the Aire  
 Made horrid Circles; two broad Suns thir Shields  
 Blaz'd opposite, while expectation stood  
 In horror; from each hand with speed retir'd



*Paradise Lost.*

Where erst was thickest fight, th' Angelic throng,  
 And left large field, unsafe within the wind  
 Of such commotion, such as to set forth 310  
 Great things by small, if Natures concord broke,  
 Among the Constellations warr were sprung,  
 Two Planets rushing from aspect maligne  
 Of fiercest opposition in mid Skie,  
 Should combat, and thir jarring Sphears confound.  
 Together both with next to Almightye Arme,  
 Uplifted imminent one stroke they aim'd  
 That might determine, and not need repeate,  
 As not of power, at once; nor odds appeerd  
 In might or swift prevention; but the sword 320  
 Of *Michael* from the Armorie of God  
 Was giv'n him temperd so, that neither keen  
 Nor solid might resist that edge: it met  
 The sword of *Satan* with steep force to smite  
 Descending, and in half cut sheere, nor staid,  
 But with swift wheele reverse, deep entring shar'd  
 All his right side; then *Satan* first knew pain,  
 And writh'd him to and fro convolv'd; so sore  
 The griding sword with discontinuous wound  
 Pass'd through him, but th' Ethereal substance clos'd 330  
 Not long divisible, and from the gash  
 A stream of Nectarous humor issuing flow'd  
 Sanguin, such as Celestial Spirits may bleed,  
 And all his Armour staind ere while so bright.  
 Forthwith on all sides to his aide was run  
 By Angels many and strong, who interpos'd  
 Defence, while others bore him on thir Shields  
 Back to his Chariot; where it stood retir'd  
 From off the files of warr: there they him laid  
 Gnashing for anguish and despite and shame 340  
 To find himself not matchless, and his pride  
 Humbl'd by such rebuke, so farr beneath  
 His confidence to equal God in power.  
 Yet soon he heal'd; for Spirits that live throughout  
 Vital in every part, not as frail man  
 In Entrailles, Heart or Head, Liver or Reines,  
 Cannot but by annihilating die;  
 Nor in thir liquid texture mortal wound  
 Receive, no more then can the fluid Aire:

All Heart they live, all Head, all Eye, all Eare, 350  
All Intellect, all Sense, and as they please,  
They Limb themselves, and colour, shape or size  
Assume, as likes them best, condense or rare.

Mean while in other parts like deeds deservd  
Memorial, where the might of *Gabriel* fought,  
And with fierce Ensignes pierc'd the deep array  
Of *Moloc* furious King, who him defi'd,  
And at his Chariot wheelles to drag him bound  
Threatn'd, nor from the Holie One of Heav'n  
Refrein'd his tongue blasphemous; but anon 360  
Down clov'n to the waste, with shatterd Armes  
And uncouth paine fled bellowing. On each wing  
*Uriel* and *Raphael* his vaunting foe,  
Though huge, and in a Rock of Diamond Armd,  
Vanquish'd *Adramelec*, and *Asmadai*,  
Two potent Thrones, that to be less then Gods  
Disdain'd, but meaner thoughts learnd in thir flight,  
Mangl'd with gastly wounds through Plate and Maile.  
Nor stood unmindful *Abdiel* to annoy  
The Atheist crew, but with redoubl'd blow 370  
*Ariel* and *Arioc*, and the violence  
Of *Ramiel* scorcht and blasted overthrew.

I might relate of thousands, and thir names  
Eternize here on Earth; but those elect  
Angels contented with thir fame in Heav'n  
Seek not the praise of men; the other sort  
In might though wondrous and in Acts of Warr,  
Nor of Renown less eager, yet by doome  
Cancel'd from Heav'n and sacred memorie,  
Nameless in dark oblivion let them dwell. 380  
For strength from Truth divided and from Just,  
Illaudable, naught merits but dispraise  
And ignominie, yet to glorie aspires  
Vain glorious, and through infamie seeks fame:  
Therefore Eternal silence be thir doome.

And now thir mightiest quell'd, the battel swerv'd,  
With many an inrode gor'd; deformed rout  
Enter'd, and foul disorder; all the ground  
With shiverd armour strow'n, and on a heap  
Chariot and Charioter lay overturn'd 390  
And ferie foaming Steeds; what stood, recoyld

Orewearied, through the faint Satanic Host  
 Defensive scarce, or with pale fear surpris'd,  
 Then first with fear surpris'd and sense of paine  
 Fled ignominious, to such evil brought  
 By sinne of disobedience, till that hour  
 Not liable to fear or flight or paine.  
 Far otherwise th' inviolable Saints  
 In Cubic Phalanx firm advanc't entire,  
 Invulnerable, impenitrably arm'd :  
 Such high advantages thir innocence  
 Gave them above thir foes, not to have sinnd,  
 Not to have disobei'd ; in fight they stood  
 Unwearied, unobnoxious to be pain'd  
 By wound, though from thir place by violence mov'd.

400

Now Night her course began, and over Heav'n  
 Inducing darkness, grateful truce impos'd,  
 And silence on the odious din of Warr :  
 Under her Cloudie covert both retir'd,  
 Victor and Vanquisht : on the foughten field  
*Michael* and his Angels prevalent  
 Encamping, plac'd in Guard thir Watches round,  
 Cherubic waving fires : on th' other part  
*Satan* with his rebellious disappeerd,  
 Far in the dark dislodg'd, and void of rest,  
 His Potentates to Councel call'd by night ;  
 And in the midst thus undismay'd began.

410

O now in danger tri'd, now known in Armes  
 Not to be overpowerd, Companions deare,  
 Found worthy not of Libertie alone,  
 Too mean pretense, but what we more affect,  
 Honour, Dominion, Glorie, and renowne,  
 Who have sustaind one day in doubtful fight,  
 (And if one day, why not Eternal dayes ?)  
 What Heavens Lord had powerfullest to send  
 Against us from about his Throne, and judg'd  
 Sufficient to subdue us to his will,  
 But proves not so : then fallible, it seems,  
 Of future we may deem him, though till now  
 Omniscient thought. True is, less firmly arm'd,  
 Some disadvantage we endur'd and paine,  
 Till now not known, but known as soon contemnd,  
 Since now we find this our Emphyreal forme

420

430

Incapable of mortal injurie  
 Imperishable, and though peirc'd with wound,  
 Soon closing, and by native vigour heal'd.  
 Of evil then so small as easie think  
 The remedie ; perhaps more valid Armes,  
 Weapons more violent, when next we meet,  
 May serve to better us, and worse our foes,  
 Or equal what between us made the odds,  
 In Nature none : if other hidden cause  
 Left them Superiour, while we can preserve  
 Unhurt our mindes, and understanding sound,  
 Due search and consultation will disclose.

440

He sat ; and in th' assembly next upstood  
*Nisroc*, of Principalities the prime ;  
 As one he stood escap't from cruel fight,  
 Sore toild, his riv'n Armes to havoc hewn,  
 And cloudie in aspect thus answering spake.  
 Deliverer from new Lords, leader to free  
 Enjoyment of our right as Gods ; yet hard  
 For Gods, and too unequal work we find  
 Against unequal armes to fight in paine,  
 Against unpaind, impassive ; from which evil  
 Ruin must needs ensue ; for what avails  
 Valour or strength, though matchless, quell'd with pain  
 Which all subdues, and makes remiss the hands  
 Of Mightiest. Sense of pleasure we may well  
 Spare out of life perhaps, and not repine,  
 But live content, which is the calmest life :  
 But pain is perfet miserie, the worst  
 Of evils, and excessive, overturnes  
 All patience. He who therefore can invent  
 With what more forcible we may offend  
 Our yet unwounded Enemies, or arme  
 Our selves with like defence, to mee deserves  
 No less then for deliverance what we owe.

450

460

Whereto with look compos'd *Satan* repli'd.  
 Not uninvented that, which thou aright  
 Beleivst so main to our success, I bring ;  
 Which of us who beholds the bright surface  
 Of this Ethereous mould whereon we stand,  
 This continent of spacious Heav'n, adorn'd  
 With Plant, Fruit, Flour Ambrosial, Gemms & Gold,

470

Whose Eye so superficially surveyes  
 These things, as not to mind from whence they grow  
 Deep under ground, materials dark and crude,  
 Of spiritous and fierie spume, till toucht  
 With Heav'ns ray, and temperd they shoot forth 480  
 So beauteous, op'ning to the ambient light.  
 These in thir dark Nativitie the Deep  
 Shall yeild us, pregnant with infernal flame,  
 Which into hollow Engins long and round  
 Thick-rammd, at th' other bore with touch of fire  
 Dilated and infuriate shall send forth  
 From far with thundring noise among our foes  
 Such implements of mischief as shall dash  
 To pieces, and orewhelm whatever stands  
 Adverse, that they shall fear we have disarmd 490  
 The Thunderer of his only dreaded bolt.  
 Nor long shall be our labour, yet ere dawne,  
 Effect shall end our wish. Mean while revive ;  
 Abandon fear ; to strength and counsel joind  
 Think nothing hard, much less to be despaird.  
 He ended, and his words thir drooping chere  
 Enlightn'd, and thir languisht hope reviv'd.  
 Th' invention all admir'd, and each, how hee  
 To be th' inventer miss'd, so easie it seemd  
 Once found, which yet unfound most would have thought  
 Impossible : yet haply of thy Race 501  
 In future dayes, if Malice should abound,  
 Some one intent on mischief, or inspir'd  
 With dev'lish machination might devise  
 Like instrument to plague the Sons of men  
 For sin, on warr and mutual slaughter bent.  
 Forthwith from Councel to the work they flew,  
 None arguing stood, innumerable hands  
 Were ready, in a moment up they turnd  
 Wide the Celestial soile, and saw beneath 510  
 Th' originals of Nature in thir crude  
 Conception ; Sulphurous and Nitrous Foame  
 They found, they mingl'd, and with suttile Art,  
 Concocted and adusted they reduc'd  
 To blackest grain, and into store conveyd :  
 Part hidd'n veins diggd up (nor hath this Earth  
 Entrails unlike) of Mineral and Stone,

Whereof to found thir Engins and thir Balls  
 Of missive ruin ; part incentive reed  
 Provide, pernicious with one touch to fire. 520  
 So all ere day-spring, under conscious Night  
 Secret they finish'd, and in order set,  
 With silent circumspection unesp'd.  
 Now when fair Morn Orient in Heav'n appeerd  
 Up rose the Victor Angels, and to Arms  
 The matin Trumpet Sung : in Arms they stood  
 Of Golden Panoplie, refulgent Host,  
 Soon banded ; others from the dawning Hills  
 Lookd round, and Scouts each Coast light-armed scoure,  
 Each quarter, to descrie the distant foe, 530  
 Where lodg'd, or whither fled, or if for fight,  
 In motion or in alt : him soon they met  
 Under spred Ensignes moving nigh, in slow  
 But firm Battalion ; back with speediest Sail  
*Zophiel*, of Cherubim the swiftest wing,  
 Came flying, and in mid Aire aloud thus cri'd.

Arme, Warriours, Arme for fight, the foe at hand,  
 Whom fled we thought, will save us long pursuit  
 This day, fear not his flight ; so thick a Cloud  
 He comes, and settl'd in his face I see 540  
 Sad resolution and secure : let each  
 His Adamantine coat gird well, and each  
 Fit well his Helme, gripe fast his orbed Shield,  
 Born eevn or high, for this day will pour down,  
 If I conjecture aught, no drizzling showr,  
 But ratling storm of Arrows barbd with fire.  
 So warnd he them aware themselves, and soon  
 In order, quit of all impediment ;  
 Instant without disturb they took Allarm,  
 And onward move Embattelld ; when behold 550  
 Not distant far with heavie pace the Foe  
 Approaching gross and huge ; in hollow Cube  
 Training his devilish Enginrie, impal'd  
 On every side with shaddowing Squadrons Deep,  
 To hide the fraud. At interview both stood  
 A while, but suddenly at head appeerd  
*Satan* : And thus was heard Commanding loud.

Vangard, to Right and Left the Front unfould ;  
 That all may see who hate us, how we seek

Peace and composure, and with open brest  
 Stand readie to receive them, if they like  
 Our overture, and turn not back perverse ;  
 But that I doubt, however witness Heaven,  
 Heav'n witness thou anon, while we discharge  
 Freely our part : yee who appointed stand  
 Do as you have in charge, and briefly touch  
 What we propound, and loud that all may hear.

So scoffing in ambiguous words, he scarce  
 Had ended ; when to Right and Left the Front  
 Divided, and to either Flank retir'd.

Which to our eyes discoverd new and strange,  
 A triple-mounted row of Pillars laid  
 On Wheels (for like to Pillars most they seem'd  
 Or hollow'd bodies made of Oak or Firr  
 With branches lopt, in Wood or Mountain fell'd)  
 Brass, Iron, Stonie mould, had not thir mouthes  
 With hideous orifice gap't on us wide,

Portending hollow truce ; at each behind  
 A Seraph stood, and in his hand a Reed  
 Stood waving tipt with fire ; while we suspense,  
 Collected stood within our thoughts amus'd,  
 Not long, for sudden all at once thir Reeds  
 Put forth, and to a narrow vent appli'd

With nicest touch. Immediate in a flame,  
 But soon obscurd with smoak, all Heav'n appeerd,  
 From those deep-throated Engins belcht, whose roar  
 Emboweld with outrageous noise the Air,  
 And all her entrails tore, disgorging foule

Thir devillish glut, chaind Thunderbolts and Hail  
 Of Iron Globes, which on the Victor Host  
 Level'd, with such impetuous furie smote,

That whom they hit, none on thir feet might stand,  
 Though standing else as Rocks, but down they fell  
 By thousands, Angel on Arch-Angel rowl'd ;  
 The sooner for thir Arms, unarm'd they might  
 Have easily as Spirits evaded swift

By quick contraction or remove ; but now  
 Foule dissipation follow'd and forc't rout ;  
 Nor serv'd it to relax thir serried files.

What should they do ? if on they rusht, repulse  
 Repeated, and indecent overthrow



Doubl'd, would render them yet more despis'd,  
And to thir foes a laughter; for in view  
Stood rankt of Seraphim another row  
In posture to displode thir second tire  
Of Thunder: back defeated to return  
They worse abhorr'd. *Satan* beheld thir plight,  
And to his Mates thus in derision call'd.

O Friends, why come not on these Victors proud?  
Ere while they fierce were coming, and when wee, 610  
To entertain them fair with open Front  
And Brest, (what could we more?) propounded terms  
Of composition, strait they chang'd thir minds,  
Flew off, and into strange vagaries fell,  
As they would dance, yet for a dance they seemd  
Somwhat extravagant and wilde, perhaps  
For joy of offerd peace: but I suppose  
If our proposals once again were heard  
We should compel them to a quick result.

To whom thus *Belial* in like gamesom mood. 620  
Leader, the terms we sent were terms of weight,  
Of hard contents, and full of force urg'd home,  
Such as we might perceive amus'd them all,  
And stumbl'd many, who receives them right,  
Had need from head to foot well understand;  
Not understood, this gift they have besides,  
They shew us when our foes walk not upright.

So they among themselves in pleasant veine  
Stood scoffing, highthn'd in thir thoughts beyond 630  
All doubt of Victorie, eternal might  
To match with thir inventions they presum'd  
So easie, and of his Thunder made a scorn,  
And all his Host derided, while they stood  
A while in trouble; but they stood not long,  
Rage prompted them at length, & found them arms  
Against such hellish mischief fit to oppose.  
Forthwith (behold the excellence, the power  
Which God hath in his mighty Angels plac'd)  
Thir Arms away they threw, and to the Hills 640  
(For Earth hath this variety from Heav'n  
Of pleasure situate in Hill and Dale)  
Light as the Lightning glimps they ran, they flew,  
From thir foundations loosning to and fro



They pluckt the seated Hills with all thir load,  
 Rocks, Waters, Woods, and by the shaggie tops  
 Up lifting bore them in thir hands: Amaze,  
 Be sure, and terroure seisd the rebel Host,  
 When coming towards them so dread they saw  
 The bottom of the Mountains upward turn'd,  
 Till on those cursed Engins triple-row  
 They saw them whelmd, and all thir confidence  
 Under the weight of Mountains buried deep,  
 Themselves invaded next, and on thir heads  
 Main Promontories flung, which in the Air  
 Came shadowing, and opprest whole Legions arm'd,  
 Thir armor help'd their harm, crush't in and brus'd  
 Into thir substance pent, which wrought them pain  
 Implacable, and many a dolorous groan,  
 Long struggling underneath, ere they could wind  
 Out of such prison, though Spirits of purest light,  
 Purest at first, now gross by sinning grown.  
 The rest in imitation to like Armes  
 Betook them, and the neighbouring Hills uptore;  
 So Hills amid the Air encountered Hills  
 Hurl'd to and fro with jaculation dire,  
 That under ground they fought in dismal shade;  
 Infernal noise; Warr seem'd a civil Game  
 To this uproar; horrid confusion heapt  
 Upon confusion rose: and now all Heav'n  
 Had gone to wrack, with ruin overspred,  
 Had not th' Almighty Father where he sits  
 Shrin'd in his Sanctuarie of Heav'n secure,  
 Consulting on the sum of things, foreseen  
 This tumult, and permitted all, advis'd:  
 That his great purpose he might so fulfill,  
 To honour his Anointed Son aveng'd  
 Upon his enemies, and to declare  
 All power on him transferr'd: whence to his Son  
 Th' Assessor of his Throne he thus began.

Effulgence of my Glorie, Son belov'd,  
 Son in whose face invisible is beheld  
 Visibly, what by Deitie I am,  
 And in whose hand what by Decree I doe,  
 Second Omnipotence, two dayes are past,  
 Two dayes, as we compute the dayes of Heav'n,

Since *Michael* and his Powers went forth to tame  
 These disobedient ; sore hath been thir fight,  
 As likeliest was, when two such Foes met arm'd ;  
 For to themselves I left them, and thou knowst,  
 Equal in their Creation they were form'd, 690  
 Save what sin hath impair'd, which yet hath wrought  
 Insensibly, for I suspend thir doom ;  
 Whence in perpetual fight they needs must last  
 Endless, and no solution will be found :  
 Warr wearied hath perform'd what Warr can do,  
 And to disorder'd rage let loose the reins,  
 With Mountains as with Weapons arm'd, which makes  
 Wild work in Heav'n, and dangerous to the maine.  
 Two dayes are therefore past, the third is thine ;  
 For thee I have ordain'd it, and thus farr 700  
 Have sufferd, that the Glorie may be thine  
 Of ending this great Warr, since none but Thou  
 Can end it. Into thee such Vertue and Grace  
 Immense I have transfus'd, that all may know  
 In Heav'n and Hell thy Power above compare,  
 And this perverse Commotion governd thus,  
 To manifest thee worthiest to be Heir  
 Of all things, to be Heir and to be King  
 By Sacred Unction, thy deserved right.  
 Go then thou Mightiest in thy Fathers might, 710  
 Ascend my Chariot, guide the rapid Wheelles  
 That shake Heav'ns basis, bring forth all my Warr,  
 My Bow and Thunder, my Almighty Arms  
 Gird on, and Sword upon thy puissant Thigh ;  
 Pursue these sons of Darkness, drive them out  
 From all Heav'ns bounds into the utter Deep :  
 There let them learn, as likes them, to despise  
 God and *Messiah* his anointed King.

He said, and on his Son with Rayes direct  
 Shon full, he all his Father full exprest 720  
 Ineffably into his face receiv'd,  
 And thus the filial Godhead answering spake.

O Father, O Supream of heav'nly Thrones,  
 First, Highest, Holiest, Best, thou alwayes seekst  
 To glorifie thy Son, I alwayes thee,  
 As is most just ; this I my Glorie account,  
 My exaltation, and my whole delight,

That thou in me well pleas'd declarst thy will  
 Fulfill'd, which to fulfil is all my bliss.  
 Scepter and Power, thy giving, I assume, 730  
 And gladlier shall resign, when in the end  
 Thou shalt be All in All, and I in thee  
 For ever, and in mee all whom thou lov'st;  
 But whom thou hat'st, I hate, and can put on  
 Thy terrors, as I put thy mildness on,  
 Image of thee in all things; and shall soon,  
 Arm'd with thy might, rid heav'n of these rebell'd,  
 To thir prepar'd ill Mansion driven down  
 To chains of Darkness, and th' undying Worm,  
 That from thy just obedience could revolt, 740  
 Whom to obey is happiness entire.  
 Then shall thy Saints unmixt, and from th' impure  
 Farr separate, circling thy holy Mount  
 Unfained *Halleluiahs* to thee sing,  
 Hymns of high praise, and I among them chief.  
 So said, he o're his Scepter bowing, rose  
 From the right hand of Glorie where he sate,  
 And the third sacred Morn began to shine  
 Dawning through Heav'n: forth rush'd with whirl-wind sound  
 The Chariot of Paternal Deitie, 750  
 Flashing thick flames, Wheele within Wheele undrawn,  
 It self instinct with Spirit, but convoyd  
 By four Cherubic shapes, four Faces each  
 Had wondrous, as with Starrs thir bodies all  
 And Wings were set with Eyes, with Eyes the Wheels  
 Of Beril, and careering Fires between;  
 Over thir heads a chrystal Firmament,  
 Whereon a Saphir Throne, inlaid with pure  
 Amber, and colours of the showrie Arch.  
 Hee in Celestial Panoplie all arm'd 760  
 Of radiant *Urim*, work divinely wrought,  
 Ascended, at his right hand Victorie  
 Sate Eagle-wing'd, beside him hung his Bow  
 And Quiver with three-bolted Thunder stor'd,  
 And from about him fierce Effusion rowld  
 Of smoak and bickering flame, and sparkles dire;  
 Attended with ten thousand thousand Saints,  
 He onward came, farr off his coming shon,  
 And twentie thousand (I thir number heard)

Chariots of God, half on each hand were seen : 770  
 Hee on the wings of Cherub rode sublime  
 On the Crystallin Skie, in Saphir Thron'd.  
 Illustrious farr and wide, but by his own  
 First seen, them unexpected joy surpriz'd,  
 When the great Ensign of *Messiah* blaz'd  
 Aloft by Angels born, his Sign in Heav'n :  
 Under whose Conduct *Michael* soon reduc'd  
 His Armie, circumfus'd on either Wing,  
 Under thir Head imbody'd all in one.  
 Before him Power Divine his way prepar'd ; 780  
 At his command the uprooted Hills retir'd  
 Each to his place, they heard his voice and went  
 Obsequious, Heav'n his wonted face renewed,  
 And with fresh Flourets Hill and Valley smil'd.  
 This saw his hapless Foes, but stood obdur'd,  
 And to rebellious fight rallied thir Powers  
 Insensate, hope conceiving from despair.  
 In heav'nly Spirits could such perverseness dwell?  
 But to convince the proud what Signs avail,  
 Or Wonders move th' obdurate to relent ? 790  
 They hard'nd more by what might most reclame,  
 Grieving to see his Glorie, at the sight  
 Took envie, and aspiring to his highth,  
 Stood reimbattell'd fierce, by force or fraud  
 Weening to prosper, and at length prevaile  
 Against God and *Messiah*, or to fall  
 In universal ruin last, and now  
 To final Battel drew, disdaining flight,  
 Or faint retreat ; when the great Son of God  
 To all his Host on either hand thus spake. 800  
 Stand still in bright array ye Saints, here stand  
 Ye Angels arm'd, this day from Battel rest ;  
 Faithful hath been your Warfare, and of God  
 Accepted, fearless in his righteous Cause,  
 And as ye have receivd, so have ye don  
 Invincibly : but of this cursed crew  
 The punishment to other hand belongs,  
 Vengeance is his, or whose he sole appoints ;  
 Number to this dayes work is not ordain'd  
 Nor multitude, stand onely and behold 810  
 Gods indignation on these Godless pourd

By mee ; not you but mee they have despis'd,  
 Yet envied ; against mee is all thir rage,  
 Because the Father, t'whom in Heav'n supream  
 Kingdom and Power and Glorie appertains,  
 Hath honourd me according to his will.  
 Therefore to mee thir doom he hath assign'd ;  
 That they may have thir wish, to trie with mee  
 In Battel which the stronger proves, they all,  
 Or I alone against them, since by strength  
 They measure all, of other excellence  
 Not emulous, nor care who them excells ;  
 Nor other strife with them do I voutsafe.

820

So spake the Son, and into terrour chang'd  
 His count'nance too severe to be beheld  
 And full of wrauth bent on his Enemies.  
 At once the Four spred out thir Starrie wings  
 With dreadful shade contiguous, and the Orbes  
 Of his fierce Chariot rowld, as with the sound  
 Of torrent Floods, or of a numerous Host.  
 Hee on his impious Foes right onward drove,  
 Gloomie as Night ; under his burning Wheelles  
 The stedfast Empyrean shook throughout,  
 All but the Throne it self of God. Full soon  
 Among them he arriv'd ; in his right hand  
 Grasping ten thousand Thunders, which he sent  
 Before him, such as in thir Soules infix'd  
 Plagues ; they astonisht all resistance lost,  
 All courage ; down thir idle weapons drop'd ;  
 O're Shields and Helmes, and helmed heads he rode 840  
 Of Thrones and mighty Seraphim prostrate,  
 That wish'd the Mountains now might be again  
 Thrown on them as a shelter from his ire.  
 Nor less on either side tempestuous fell  
 His arrows, from the fourfold-visag'd Foure,  
 Distinct with eyes, and from the living Wheels,  
 Distinct alike with multitude of eyes,  
 One Spirit in them rul'd, and every eye  
 Glar'd lightning, and shot forth pernicious fire  
 Among th' accurst, that witherd all thir strength, 850  
 And of thir wonted vigour left them draind,  
 Exhausted, spiritless, afflicted, fall'n.  
 Yet half his strength he put not forth, but check'd

His Thunder in mid Volie, for he meant  
 Not to destroy, but root them out of Heav'n:  
 The overthrown he rais'd, and as a Heard  
 Of Goats or timorous flock together throngd  
 Drove them before him Thunder-struck, pursu'd  
 With terrors and with furies to the bounds  
 And Chrystall wall of Heav'n, which op'ning wide, 860  
 Rowld inward, and a spacious Gap disclos'd  
 Into the wastful Deep; the monstrous sight  
 Strook them with horror backward, but far worse  
 Urg'd them behind; headlong themselvs they threw  
 Down from the verge of Heav'n, Eternal wrauth  
 Burnt after them to the bottomless pit.

Hell heard th' unsufferable noise, Hell saw  
 Heav'n ruining from Heav'n, and would have fled  
 Affrighted; but strict Fate had cast too deep  
 Her dark foundations, and too fast had bound. 870  
 Nine dayes they fell; confounded *Chaos* roard,  
 And felt tenfold confusion in thir fall  
 Through his wilde Anarchie, so huge a rout  
 Incumberd him with ruin: Hell at last  
 Yawning receavd them whole, and on them clos'd,  
 Hell thir fit habitation fraught with fire  
 Unquenchable, the house of woe and paine.  
 Disburd'nd Heav'n rejoic'd, and soon repaired  
 Her mural breach, returning whence it rowld.  
 Sole Victor from th' expulsion of his Foes 880  
*Messiah* his triumphal Chariot turnd:  
 To meet him all his Saints, who silent stood  
 Eye witnesses of his Almighty Acts,  
 With Jubilie advanc'd; and as they went,  
 Shaded with branching Palme, each order bright,  
 Sung Triumph, and him sung Victorious King,  
 Son, Heire, and Lord, to him Dominion giv'n,  
 Worthiest to Reign: he celebrated rode  
 Triumphant through mid Heav'n, into the Courts  
 And Temple of his mightie Father Thron'd 890  
 On high; who into Glorie him receav'd,  
 Where now he sits at the right hand of bliss.

Thus measuring things in Heav'n by things on Earth  
 At thy request, and that thou maist beware  
 By what is past, to thee I have reveal'd

What might have else to human Race bin hid :  
 The discord which befel, and Warr in Heav'n  
 Among th' Angelic Powers, and the deep fall  
 Of those too high aspiring, who rebelld  
 With *Satan*, hee who envies now thy state,  
 Who now is plotting how he may seduce  
 Thee also from obedience, that with him  
 Bereavd of happiness thou maist partake  
 His punishment, Eternal miserie ;  
 Which would be all his solace and revenge,  
 As a despite don against the most High,  
 Thee once to gaine Companion of his woe.  
 But list'n not to his Temptations, warne  
 Thy weaker ; let it profit thee to have heard  
 By terrible Example the reward  
 Of disobedience ; firm they might have stood,  
 Yet fell ; remember, and fear to transgress.

900

910

*The End of the Sixth Book.*



# PARADISE LOST.

## BOOK VII.

### THE ARGUMENT.

*Raphael at the request of Adam relates how and wherefore this world was first created; that God, after the expelling of Satan and his Angels out of Heaven, declar'd his pleasure to create another World and other Creatures to dwell therein; sends his Son with Glory and attendance of Angels to perform the work of Creation in six dayes: the Angels celebrate with Hymns the performance thereof, and his reascention into Heaven.*

DESCEND from Heav'n *Urania*, by that name  
If rightly thou art call'd, whose Voice divine  
Following, above th' *Olympian* Hill I soare,  
Above the flight of *Pegasean* wing.  
The meaning, not the Name I call: for thou  
Nor of the Muses nine, nor on the top  
Of old *Olympus* dwell'st, but Heav'nlie borne,  
Before the Hills appeerd, or Fountain flow'd,  
Thou with Eternal wisdom didst converse,  
Wisdom thy Sister, and with her didst play  
In presence of th' Almighty Father, pleas'd  
With thy Celestial Song. Up led by thee  
Into the Heav'n of Heav'ns I have presum'd,  
An Earthlie Guest, and drawn Empyrean Aire,  
Thy tempring; with like safetie guided down  
Return me to my Native Element:  
Least from this flying Steed unrein'd, (as once  
*Bellerophon*, though from a lower Clime)  
Dismounted, on th' *Aleian* Field I fall



Erroneous, there to wander and forlorne.  
 Half yet remains unsung, but narrower bound  
 Within the visible Diurnal Spheare;  
 Standing on Earth, not rapt above the Pole,  
 More safe I Sing with mortal voice, unchang'd  
 To hoarse or mute, though fall'n on evil dayes,  
 On evil dayes though fall'n, and evil tongues;  
 In darkness, and with dangers compast round,  
 And solitude; yet not alone, while thou  
 Visit'st my slumbers Nightly, or when Morn  
 Purples the East: still govern thou my Song,  
*Urania*, and fit audience find, though few.  
 But drive farr off the barbarous dissonance  
 Of *Bacchus* and his Revellers, the Race  
 Of that wilde Rout that tore the *Thracian* Bard  
 In *Rhodope*, where Woods and Rocks had Eares  
 To rapture, till the savage clamor dround  
 Both Harp and Voice; nor could the Muse defend  
 Her Son. So fail not thou, who thee implores:  
 For thou art Heav'nlie, shee an empty dreame.

20

30

40

Say Goddess, what ensu'd when *Raphael*,  
 The affable Arch-angel, had forewarn'd  
*Adam* by dire example to beware  
 Apostasie, by what befell in Heaven  
 To those Apostates, least the like befall  
 In Paradise to *Adam* or his Race,  
 Charg'd not to touch the interdicted Tree,  
 If they transgress, and slight that sole command,  
 So easily obeyd amid the choice  
 Of all tast else to please thir appetite.  
 Though wandring. He with his consorted *Eve*  
 The storie heard attentive, and was fill'd  
 With admiration, and deep Muse to heare  
 Of things so high and strange, things to thir thought  
 So unimaginable as hate in Heav'n,  
 And Warr so neer the Peace of God in bliss  
 With such confusion: but the evil soon  
 Driv'n back redounded as a flood on those  
 From whom it sprung, impossible to mix  
 With Blessedness. Whence *Adam* soon repeal'd  
 The doubts that in his heart arose: and now  
 Led on, yet sinless, with desire to know

50

60

What neerer might concern him, how this World  
Of Heav'n and Earth conspicuous first began,  
When, and whereof created, for what cause,  
What within *Eden* or without was done  
Before his memorie, as one whose drouth  
Yet scarce allay'd still eyes the current streame,  
Whose liquid murmur heard new thirst excites,  
Proceeded thus to ask his Heav'nly Guest.

Great things, and full of wonder in our eares,  
Farr differing from this World, thou hast reveal'd  
Divine Interpreter, by favour sent  
Down from the Empyrean to forewarne  
Us timely of what might else have bin our loss,  
Unknown, which human knowledg could not reach :  
For which to the infinitely Good we owe  
Immortal thanks, and his admonishment  
Receave with solemne purpose to observe  
Immutably his sovran will, the end  
Of what we are. But since thou hast voutsaft

70

Gently for our instruction to impart  
Things above Earthly thought, which yet concern'd  
Our knowing, as to highest wisdom seemd,  
Deign to descend now lower, and relate  
What may no less perhaps availe us known,  
How first began this Heav'n which we behold  
Distant so high, with moving Fires adorn'd  
Innumerable, and this which yeelds or fills  
All space, the ambient Aire wide interfus'd  
Imbracing round this florid Earth, what cause

80

90

Mov'd the Creator in his holy Rest  
Through all Eternitie so late to build  
In *Chaos*, and the work begun, how soon  
Absolv'd, if unforbid thou maist unfould  
What wee, not to explore the secrets aske  
Of his Eternal Empire, but the more  
To magnifie his works, the more we know.  
And the great Light of Day yet wants to run  
Much of his Race though steep, suspens in Heav'n  
Held by thy voice, thy potent voice he heares,  
And longer will delay to heare thee tell  
His Generation, and the rising Birth  
Of Nature from the unapparent Deep :

100

Or if the Starr of Eevning and the Moon  
 Haste to thy audience, Night with her will bring  
 Silence, and Sleep listning to thee will watch,  
 Or we can bid his absence, till thy Song  
 End, and dismiss thee ere the Morning shine.

Thus *Adam* his illustrious Guest besought:  
 And thus the Godlike Angel answerd milde. 110  
 This also thy request with caution askt  
 Obtaine: though to recount Almightye works  
 What words or tongue of Seraph can suffice,  
 Or heart of man suffice to comprehend?  
 Yet what thou canst attain, which best may serve  
 To glorifie the Maker, and inferr  
 Thee also happier, shall not be withheld  
 Thy hearing, such Commission from above  
 I have receav'd, to answer thy desire  
 Of knowledge within bounds; beyond abstain 120  
 To ask, nor let thine own inventions hope  
 Things not reveal'd which th' invisible King,  
 Onely Omniscient hath suppress in Night,  
 To none communicable in Earth or Heaven:  
 Anough is left besides to search and know.  
 But Knowledge is as food, and needs no less  
 Her Temperance over Appetite, to know  
 In measure what the mind may well contain,  
 Oppresses else with Surfet, and soon turns  
 Wisdom to Folly, as Nourishment to Winde. 130

Know then, that after *Lucifer* from Heav'n  
 (So call him, brighter once amidst the Host  
 Of Angels, then that Starr the Starrs among)  
 Fell with his flaming Legions through the Deep  
 Into his place, and the great Son returnd  
 Victorious with his Saints, th' Omnipotent  
 Eternal Father from his Throne beheld  
 Thir multitude, and to his Son thus spake.

At least our envious Foe hath fail'd, who thought  
 All like himself rebellious, by whose aid 140  
 This inaccessible high strength, the seat  
 Of Deitie supream, us dispossess,  
 He trusted to have seis'd, and into fraud  
 Drew many, whom thir place knows here no more;  
 Yet farr the greater part have kept, I see,

Thir station, Heav'n yet populous retaines  
Number sufficient to possess her Realmes  
Though wide, and this high Temple to frequent  
With Ministeries due and solemn Rites:  
But least his heart exalt him in the harme 150  
Already done, to have dispeopl'd Heav'n,  
My damage fondly deem'd, I can repaire  
That detriment, if such it be to lose  
Self-lost, and in a moment will create  
Another World, out of one man a Race  
Of men innumerable, there to dwell,  
Not here, till by degrees of merit rais'd  
They open to themselves at length the way  
Up hither, under long obedience tri'd,  
And Earth be chang'd to Heav'n, & Heav'n to Earth, 160  
One Kingdom, Joy and Union without end.  
Mean while inhabit lax, ye Powers of Heav'n,  
And thou my Word, begotten Son, by thee  
This I perform, speak thou, and be it don:  
My overshadowing Spirit and might with thee  
I send along, ride forth, and bid the Deep  
Within appointed bounds be Heav'n and Earth,  
Boundless the Deep, because I am who fill  
Infinitude, nor vacuous the space.  
Though I uncircumscrib'd my self retire, 170  
And put not forth my goodness, which is free  
To act or not, Necessitie and Chance  
Approach not mee, and what I will is Fate.

So spake th' Almighty, and to what he spake  
His Word, the Filial Godhead, gave effect.  
Immediate are the Acts of God, more swift  
Then time or motion, but to human ears  
Cannot without process of speech be told,  
So told as earthly notion can receive.  
Great triumph and rejoycing was in Heav'n 180  
When such was heard declar'd the Almighty's will;  
Glorie they sung to the most High, good will  
To future men, and in thir dwellings peace:  
Glorie to him whose just avenging ire  
Had driven out th' ungodly from his sight  
And th' habitations of the just; to him  
Glorie and praise, whose wisdom had ordain'd

Good out of evil to create, in stead  
 Of Spirits maligne a better Race to bring  
 Into thir vacant room, and thence diffuse 190  
 His good to Worlds and Ages infinite.  
 So sang the Hierarchies: Mean while the Son  
 On his great Expedition now appeer'd,  
 Girt with Omnipotence, with Radiance crown'd  
 Of Majestie Divine, Sapience and Love  
 Immense, and all his Father in him shon.  
 About his Chariot numberless were pour'd  
 Cherub and Seraph, Potentates and Thrones,  
 And Vertues, winged Spirits, and Chariots wing'd,  
 From the Armoury of God, where stand of old 200  
 Myriads between two brazen Mountains lodg'd  
 Against a solemn day, harnest at hand,  
 Celestial Equipage; and now came forth  
 Spontaneous, for within them Spirit livd,  
 Attendant on thir Lord: Heav'n op'nd wide  
 Her ever during Gates, Harmonious sound  
 On golden Hinges moving, to let forth  
 The King of Glorie in his powerful Word  
 And Spirit coming to create new Worlds.  
 On heav'nly ground they stood, and from the shore 210  
 They view'd the vast immeasurable Abyss  
 Outrageous as a Sea, dark, wasteful, wilde,  
 Up from the bottom turn'd by furious windes  
 And surging waves, as Mountains to assault  
 Heav'ns highth, and with the Center mix the Pole.  
 Silence, ye troubl'd waves, and thou Deep, peace,  
 Said then th' Omnific Word, your discord end:  
 Nor staid, but on the Wings of Cherubim  
 Uplifted, in Paternal Glorie rode  
 Farr into *Chaos*, and the World unborn; 220  
 For *Chaos* heard his voice: him all his Train  
 Follow'd in bright procession to behold  
 Creation, and the wonders of his might.  
 Then staid the fervid Wheelles, and in his hand  
 He took the golden Compasses, prepar'd  
 In Gods Eternal store, to circumscribe  
 This Universe, and all created things:  
 One foot he center'd, and the other turn'd  
 Round through the vast profunditie obscure,

And said, thus farr extend, thus farr thy bounds, 230  
This be thy just Circumference, O World.  
Thus God the Heav'n created, thus the Earth,  
Matter uniform'd and void: Darkness profound  
Cover'd th' Abyss: but on the watrie calme  
His brooding wings the Spirit of God outspred,  
And vital vertue infus'd, and vital warmth  
Throughout the fluid Mass, but downward purg'd  
The black tartareous cold infernal dregs  
Adverse to life; then founded, then conglob'd  
Like things to like, the rest to several place 240  
Disparted, and between spun out the Air,  
And Earth self-ballanc't on her Center hung.

Let ther be Light, said God, and forthwith Light  
Ethereal, first of things, quintessence pure  
Sprung from the Deep, and from her Native East  
To journie through the airie gloom began,  
Sphear'd in a radiant Cloud, for yet the Sun  
Was not; shee in a cloudie Tabernacle  
Sojourn'd the while. God saw the Light was good;  
And light from darkness by the Hemisphere 250  
Divided: Light the Day, and Darkness Night  
He nam'd. Thus was the first Day Eev'n and Morn:  
Nor past uncelebrated, nor unsung  
By the Celestial Quires, when Orient Light  
Exhaling first from Darkness they beheld:  
Birth-day of Heav'n and Earth; with joy and shout  
The hollow Universal Orb they fill'd,  
And touch't thir Golden Harps, & hymning prais'd  
God and his works, Creatour him they sung,  
Both when first Eevning was, and when first Morn. 260

Again, God said, let ther be Firmament  
Amid the Waters, and let it divide  
The Waters from the Waters: and God made  
The Firmament, expanse of liquid, pure,  
Transparent, Elemental Air, diffus'd  
In circuit to the uttermost convex  
Of this great Round: partition firm and sure,  
The Waters underneath from those above  
Dividing: for as Earth, so hee the World  
Built on circumfluous Waters calme, in wide 270  
Crystallin Ocean, and the loud misrule

Of *Chaos* farr remov'd, least fierce extreames  
 Contiguous might distemper the whole frame :  
 And Heav'n he nam'd the Firmament : So Eev'n  
 And Morning *Chorus* sung the second Day.

The Earth was form'd, but in the Womb as yet  
 Of Waters, Embryon immature involv'd,  
 Appeer'd not : over all the face of Earth  
 Main Ocean flow'd, not idle, but with warme  
 Prolific humour soft'ning all her Globe,  
 Fermented the great Mother to conceave,  
 Sate with genial moisture, when God said  
 Be gather'd now ye Waters under Heav'n  
 Into one place, and let dry Land appeer.  
 Immediately the Mountains huge appeer  
 Emergent, and thir broad bare backs upheave  
 Into the Clouds, thir tops ascend the Skie :  
 So high as heav'd the tumid Hills, so low  
 Down sunk a hollow bottom broad and deep,  
 Capacious bed of Waters : thither they  
 Hasted with glad precipitance, uprowld  
 As drops on dust conglobing from the drie ;  
 Part rise in crystal Wall, or ridge direct,  
 For haste ; such flight the great command impress'd  
 On the swift flouds : as Armies at the call  
 Of Trumpet (for of Armies thou hast heard)  
 Troop to thir Standard, so the watrie throng,  
 Wave rowling after Wave, where way they found,  
 If steep, with torrent rapture, if through Plaine,  
 Soft-ebbing ; nor withstood them Rock or Hill,  
 But they, or under ground, or circuit wide  
 With Serpent errour wandring, found thir way,  
 And on the washie Oose deep Channels wore ;  
 Easie, e're God had bid the ground be drie,  
 All but within those banks, where Rivers now  
 Stream, and perpetual draw thir humid traine.  
 The dry Land, Earth, and the great receptacle  
 Of congregated Waters he call'd Seas :  
 And saw that it was good, and said, Let th' Earth  
 Put forth the verdant Grass, Herb yeilding Seed,  
 And Fruit Tree yeilding Fruit after her kind ;  
 Whose Seed is in her self upon the Earth.  
 He scarce had said, when the bare Earth, till then

280

290

300

310



Desert and bare, unsightly, unadorn'd,  
Brought forth the tender Grass, whose verdure clad  
Her Universal Face with pleasant green,  
Then Herbs of every leaf, that sudden flour'd  
Op'ning thir various colours, and made gay  
Her bosom smelling sweet: and these scarce blown,  
Forth flourish't thick the clustring Vine, forth crept 320  
The smelling Gourd, up stood the cornie Reed  
Embattell'd in her field: add the humble Shrub,  
And Bush with frizl'd hair implicit: last  
Rose as in Dance the stately Trees, and spread  
Thir branches hung with copious Fruit: or gemm'd  
Thir Blossoms: with high Woods the Hills were crown'd,  
With tufts the vallies & each fountain side,  
With borders long the Rivers. That Earth now  
Seemd like to Heav'n, a seat where Gods might dwell,  
Or wander with delight, and love to haunt 330  
Her sacred shades: though God had yet not rain'd  
Upon the Earth, and man to till the ground  
None was, but from the Earth a dewie Mist  
Went up and waterd all the ground, and each  
Plant of the field, which e're it was in the Earth  
God made, and every Herb, before it grew  
On the green stemm; God saw that it was good:  
So Eev'n and Morn recorded the Third Day.

Again th' Almightye spake: Let there be Lights  
High in th' expanse of Heaven to divide 340  
The Day from Night; and let them be for Signes,  
For Seasons, and for Dayes, and circling Years,  
And let them be for Lights as I ordaine  
Thir Office in the Firmament of Heav'n  
To give Light on the Earth; and it was so.  
And God made two great Lights, great for thir use  
To Man, the greater to have rule by Day,  
The less by Night alterne: and made the Starrs,  
And set them in the Firmament of Heav'n  
To illuminate the Earth, and rule the Day 350  
In thir vicissitude, and rule the Night,  
And Light from Darkness to divide. God saw,  
Surveying his great Work, that it was good:  
For of Celestial Bodies first the Sun  
A mightie Spheare he fram'd, unlightsom first,



*Paradise Lost.*

'Though of Ethereal Mould: then form'd the Moon  
 Globose, and everie magnitude of Starrs,  
 And sowd with Starrs the Heav'n thick as a field:  
 Of Light by farr the greater part he took,  
 'Transplanted from her cloudie Shrine, and plac'd 360  
 In the Suns Orb, made porous to receive  
 And drink the liquid Light, firm to retaine  
 Her gather'd beams, great Palace now of Light.  
 Hither as to thir Fountain other Starrs  
 Repairing, in thir gold'n Urns draw Light,  
 And hence the Morning Planet guilds his horns;  
 By tincture or reflection they augment  
 Thir small peculiar, though from human sight  
 So farr remote, with diminution seen.  
 First in his East the glorious Lamp was seen, 370  
 Regent of Day, and all th' Horizon round  
 Invested with bright Rayes, jocond to run  
 His Longitude through Heav'ns high rode: the gray  
 Dawn, and the *Pleiades* before him danc'd  
 Shedding sweet influence: less bright the Moon,  
 But opposite in leveld West was set  
 His mirror with full face borrowing her Light  
 From him, for other light she needed none  
 In that aspect, and still that distance keeps 380  
 Till night, then in the East her turn she shines,  
 Revolv'd on Heav'ns great Axle, and her Reign  
 With thousand lesser Lights dividual holds,  
 With thousand thousand Starres, that then appeer'd  
 Spangling the Hemisphere: then first adorn'd  
 With thir bright Luminaries that Set and Rose,  
 Glad Eevning & glad Morn crownd the fourth day.

And God said, let the Waters generate  
 Reptil with Spawn abundant, living Soule:  
 And let Fowle flie above the Earth, with wings 390  
 Displayd on the op'n Firmament of Heav'n.  
 And God created the great Whales, and each  
 Soul living, each that crept, which plenteously  
 The waters generated by thir kindes,  
 And every Bird of wing after his kinde;  
 And saw that it was good, and bless'd them, saying,  
 Be fruitful, multiply, and in the Seas

And Lakes and running Streams the waters fill;  
And let the Fowle be multiply'd on the Earth.  
Forthwith the Sounds and Seas, each Creek & Bay  
With Frie innumerable swarme, and Shoales 400  
Of Fish that with thir Finns & shining Scales  
Glide under the green Wave, in Sculles that oft  
Bank the mid Sea: part single or with mate  
Graze the Sea weed thir pasture, & through Groves  
Of Coral stray, or sporting with quick glance  
Show to the Sun thir wav'd coats dropt with Gold,  
Or in thir Pearlie shells at ease, attend  
Moist nutriment, or under Rocks thir food  
In jointed Armour watch: on smooth the Seale,  
And bended Dolphins play: part huge of bulk 410  
Wallowing unweildie, enormous in thir Gate  
Tempest the Ocean: there Leviathan  
Hugest of living Creatures, on the Deep  
Stretcht like a Promontorie sleeps or swimmes,  
And seems a moving Land, and at his Gilles  
Draws in, and at his Trunck spouts out a Sea.  
Mean while the tepid Caves, and Fens and shoares  
Thir Brood as numerous hatch, from the Egg that soon  
Bursting with kindly rupture forth disclos'd  
Thir callow young, but featherd soon and fledg'd 420  
They summ'd thir Penns, and soaring th' air sublime  
With clang despis'd the ground, under a cloud  
In prospect; there the Eagle and the Stork  
On Cliffs and Cedar tops thir Eyries build:  
Part loosly wing the Region, part more wise  
In common, rang'd in figure wedge thir way,  
Intelligent of seasons, and set forth  
Thir Aierie Caravan high over Sea's  
Flying, and over Lands with mutual wing  
Easing thir flight; so steers the prudent Crane 430  
Her annual Voiage, born on Windes; the Aire  
Floats, as they pass, fann'd with unnumber'd plumes:  
From Branch to Branch the smaller Birds with song  
Solac'd the Woods, and spread thir painted wings  
Till Ev'n, nor then the solemn Nightingal  
Ceas'd warbling, but all night tun'd her soft layes:  
Others on Silver Lakes and Rivers Bath'd  
Thir downie Brest; the Swan with Arched neck

Between her white wings mantling proudly, Rowes  
 Her state with Oarie feet: yet oft they quit 440  
 The Dank, and rising on stiff Pennons, towre  
 The mid Aereal Skie: Others on ground  
 Walk'd firm; the crested Cock whose clarion sounds  
 'The silent hours, and th' other whose gay Train  
 Adorns him, colour'd with the Florid hue  
 Of Rainbows and Starrie Eyes. The Waters thus  
 With Fish replenisht, and the Aire with Fowle,  
 Ev'ning and Morn solemniz'd the Fift day.

The Sixt, and of Creation last arose  
 With Eevning Harps and Mattin, when God said, 450  
 Let th' Earth bring forth Fowle living in her kinde,  
 Cattel and Creeping things, and Beast of the Earth,  
 Each in thir kinde. The Earth obey'd, and strait  
 Op'ning her fertil Woomb teem'd at a Birth

Innumerable living Creatures, perfet formes,  
 Limb'd and full grown: out of the ground up rose  
 As from his Laire the wilde Beast where he wonns  
 In Forrest wilde, in Thicket, Brake, or Den;  
 Among the Trees in Pairs they rose, they walk'd:  
 The Cattel in the Fields and Meddowes green: 460  
 Those rare and solitarie, these in flocks

Pasturing at once, and in broad Herds upsprung.  
 The grassie Clods now Calv'd, now half appeer'd  
 The Tawnie Lion, pawing to get free  
 His hinder parts, then springs as broke from Bonds,  
 And Rampant shakes his Brinded main; the Ounce,  
 The Libbard, and the Tyger, as the Moale  
 Rising, the crumbl'd Earth above them threw  
 In Hillocks; the swift Stag from under ground  
 Bore up his branching head: scarce from his mould 470  
*Behemoth* biggest born of Earth upheav'd

His vastness: Fleec't the Flocks and bleating rose,  
 As Plants: ambiguous between Sea and Land  
 The River Horse and scalie Crocodile.

At once came forth whatever creeps the ground,  
 Insect or Worme; those wav'd thir limber fans  
 For wings, and smallest Lineaments exact  
 In all the Liveries dect of Summers pride  
 With spots of Gold and Purple, azure and green:  
 These as a line thir long dimension drew, 480

Streaking the ground with sinuous trace ; not all  
Minims of Nature ; some of Serpent kinde  
Wondrous in length and corpulence involv'd  
Thir Snakie foulds, and added wings. First crept  
The Parsimonious Emmet, provident  
Of future, in small room large heart enclos'd,  
Pattern of just equalitie perhaps  
Hereafter, join'd in her popular Tribes  
Of Commonaltie : swarming next appeer'd  
The Femal Bee that feeds her Husband Drone 490  
Deliciously, and builds her waxen Cells  
With Honey stor'd : the rest are numberless,  
And thou thir Natures know'st, and gav'st them Names,  
Needless to thee repeated ; nor unknown  
The Serpent suttl'st Beast of all the field,  
Of huge extent sometimes, with brazen Eyes  
And hairie Main terrific, though to thee  
Not noxious, but obedient at thy call.  
Now Heav'n in all her Glorie shon, and rowld  
Her motions, as the great first-Movers hand 500  
First wheeld thir course ; Earth in her rich attire  
Consummate lovly smil'd ; Aire, Water, Earth,  
By Fowl, Fish, Beast, was flown, was swum, was walkt  
Frequent ; and of the Sixt day yet remain'd ;  
There wanted yet the Master work, the end  
Of all yet don ; a Creature who not prone  
And Brute as other Creatures, but endu'd  
With Sanctitie of Reason, might erect  
His Stature, and upright with Front serene  
Govern the rest, self-knowing, and from thence 510  
Magnanimous to correspond with Heav'n,  
But grateful to acknowledge whence his good  
Descends, thither with heart and voice and eyes  
Directed in Devotion, to adore  
And worship God Supream, who made him chief  
Of all his works : therefore the Omnipotent  
Eternal Father (For where is not hee  
Present) thus to his Son audibly spake.

Let us make now Man in our image, Man  
In our similitude, and let them rule 520  
Over the Fish and Fowle of Sea and Aire,  
Beast of the Field, and over all the Earth,

And every creeping thing that creeps the ground.  
 This said, he form'd thee, *Adam*, thee O Man  
 Dust of the ground, and in thy nostrils breath'd  
 The breath of Life; in his own Image hee  
 Created thee, in the Image of God  
 Express, and thou becam'st a living Soul.  
 Male he created thee, but thy consort  
 Femal for Race; then bless'd Mankind, and said, 530  
 Be fruitful, multiplie, and fill the Earth,  
 Subdue it, and throughout Dominion hold  
 Over Fish of the Sea, and Fowle of the Aire,  
 And every living thing that moves on the Earth.  
 Wherever thus created, for no place  
 Is yet distinct by name, thence, as thou know'st  
 He brought thee into this delicious Grove,  
 This Garden, planted with the Trees of God,  
 Delectable both to behold and taste;  
 And freely all thir pleasant fruit for food 540  
 Gave thee, all sorts are here that all th' Earth yeelds,  
 Varietie without end; but of the Tree  
 Which tasted works knowledge of Good and Evil,  
 Thou mai'st not; in the day thou eat'st, thou di'st;  
 Death is the penaltie impos'd, beware,  
 And govern well thy appetite, least sin  
 Surprise thee, and her black attendant Death.  
 Here finish'd hee, and all that he had made  
 View'd, and behold all was entirely good;  
 So Ev'n and Morn accomplish't the Sixt day: 550  
 Yet not till the Creator from his work  
 Desisting, though unwearied, up return'd  
 Up to the Heav'n of Heav'ns his high abode,  
 Thence to behold this new created World  
 Th' addition of his Empire, how it shew'd  
 In prospect from his Throne, how good, how faire,  
 Answering his great Idea. Up he rode  
 Follow'd with acclamation and the sound  
 Symphonious of ten thousand Harpes that tun'd  
 Angelic harmonies: the Earth, the Aire 560  
 Resounded, (thou remember'st for thou heardst)  
 The Heav'ns and all the Constellations rung,  
 The Planets in thir stations list'ning stood,

While the bright Pomp ascended jubilant.  
 Open, ye everlasting Gates, they sung,  
 Open, ye Heav'ns, your living dores; let in  
 The great Creator from his work returnd  
 Magnificent, his Six days work, a World;  
 Open, and henceforth oft; for God will deigne  
 To visit oft the dwellings of just Men 570  
 Delighted, and with frequent intercourse  
 Thither will send his winged Messengers  
 On errands of supernal Grace. So sung  
 The glorious Train ascending: He through Heav'n,  
 That open'd wide her blazing Portals, led  
 To Gods Eternal house direct the way,  
 A broad and ample rode, whose dust is Gold  
 And pavement Starrs, as Starrs to thee appeer,  
 Seen in the Galaxie, that Milkie way  
 Which nightly as a circling Zone thou seest 580  
 Pouderd with Starrs. And now on Earth the Scaventh  
 Eev'ning arose in *Eden*, for the Sun  
 Was set, and twilight from the East came on,  
 Forerunning Night; when at the holy mount  
 Of Heav'ns high-seated top, th' Impereal Throne  
 Of Godhead, fixt for ever firm and sure,  
 The Filial Power arriv'd, and sate him down  
 With his great Father, for he also went  
 Invisible, yet staid (such priviledge  
 Hath Omnipresence) and the work ordain'd, 590  
 Author and end of all things, and from work  
 Now resting, bless'd and hallowd the Séav'nth day,  
 As resting on that day from all his work,  
 But not in silence holy kept; the Harp  
 Had work and rested not, the solemn Pipe,  
 And Dulcimer, all Organs of sweet stop,  
 All sounds on Fret by String or Golden Wire  
 Temper'd soft Tunings, intermixt with Voice  
 Choral or Unison; of incense Clouds  
 Fuming from Golden Censers hid the Mount. 600  
 Creation and the Six dayes acts they sung,  
 Great are thy works, *Jehovah*, infinite  
 Thy power; what thought can measure thee or tongue  
 Relate thee; greater now in thy return  
 Then from the Giant Angels; thee that day

Thy Thunders magnifi'd; but to create  
 Is greater then created to destroy.  
 Who can impair thee, mighty King, or bound  
 Thy Empire? easily the proud attempt  
 Of Spirits apostat and thir Counsels vaine 610  
 Thou hast repeld, while impiously they thought  
 Thee to diminish, and from thee withdraw  
 The number of thy worshippers. Who seekes  
 To lessen thee, against his purpose serves  
 To manifest the more thy might: his evil  
 Thou usest, and from thence creat'st more good.  
 Witness this new-made World, another Heav'n  
 From Heaven Gate not farr, founded in view  
 On the cleer *Hyaline*, the Glassie Sea;  
 Of amplitude almost immense, with Starr's 620  
 Numerous, and every Starr perhaps a World  
 Of destind habitation; but thou know'st  
 Thir seasons: among these the seat of men,  
 Earth with her nether Ocean circumfus'd,  
 Thir pleasant dwelling place. Thrice happie men,  
 And sons of men, whom God hath thus advanc't,  
 Created in his Image, there to dwell  
 And worship him, and in reward to rule  
 Over his Works, on Earth, in Sea, or Air,  
 And multiply a Race of Worshippers 630  
 Holy and just: thrice happie if they know  
 Thir happiness, and persevere upright.  
 So sung they, and the Emyrean rung,  
 With *Halleluiahs*: Thus was Sabbath kept.  
 And thy request think now fulfill'd, that ask'd  
 How first this World and face of things began,  
 And what before thy memorie was don  
 From the beginning, that posteritie  
 Informd by thee might know; if else thou seek'st  
 Aught, not surpassing human measure, say. 640

*The End of the Seventh Book.*



# PARADISE LOST.

## BOOK VIII.

### THE ARGUMENT.

*Adam inquires concerning celestial Motions, is doubtfully answer'd, and exhorted to search rather things more worthy of knowledg: Adam assents, and still desirous to detain Raphael, relates to him what he remember'd since his own Creation, his placing in Paradise, his talk with God concerning solitude and fit society, his first meeting and Nuptials with Eve, his discourse with the Angel thereupon; who after admonitions repeated departs.*

[THE Angel ended, and in *Adams* Eare  
So Charming left his voice, that he a while  
Thought him still speaking, still stood fixt to hear;  
Then as new wak't thus gratefully repli'd.]  
What thanks sufficient, or what recompence  
Equal have I to render thee, Divine  
Hystorian, who thus largely hast allayd  
The thirst I had of knowledge, and voutsaf't  
This friendly condescention to relate  
Things else by me unsearchable, now heard  
With wonder, but delight, and, as is due,  
With glorie attributed to the high  
Creator; some thing yet of doubt remaines,  
Which onely thy solution can resolve.  
When I behold this goodly Frame, this World  
Of Heav'n and Earth consisting, and compute,  
Thir magnitudes, this Earth a spot, a graine,

10

1-4 These lines were added in the second edition, (1674), when Book VII was divided into two at line 640. Line 641 had read: 'To whom thus *Adam* gratefully repli'd.'



An Atom, with the Firmament compar'd  
 And all her numberd Starrs, that seem to rowle  
 Spaces incomprehensible (for such  
 Thir distance argues and thir swift return  
 Diurnal) meerly to officiate light  
 Round this opacous Earth, this punctual spot,  
 One day and night; in all thir vast survey  
 Useless besides, reasoning I oft admire,  
 How Nature wise and frugal could commit  
 Such disproportions, with superfluous hand  
 So many nobler Bodies to create,  
 Greater so manifold to this one use,  
 For aught appeers, and on thir Orbs impose  
 Such restless revolution day by day  
 Repeated, while the sedentarie Earth,  
 That better might with farr less compass move,  
 Serv'd by more noble then her self, attaines  
 Her end without least motion, and receaves,  
 As Tribute such a sumless journey brought  
 Of incorporeal speed, her warmth and light;  
 Speed, to describe whose swiftness Number failes.

25

30

40

50

So spake our Sire, and by his count'nance seemd  
 Entring on studious thoughts abstruse, which *Eve*  
 Perceaving where she sat retir'd in sight,  
 With lowliness Majestic from her seat,  
 And Grace that won who saw to wish her stay,  
 Rose, and went forth among her Fruits and Flours,  
 To visit how they prosper'd, bud and bloom,  
 Her Nurserie; they at her coming sprung  
 And toucht by her fair tendance gladlier grew.  
 Yet went she not, as not with such discourse  
 Delighted, or not capable her eare  
 Of what was high: such pleasure she reserv'd,  
*Adam* relating, she sole Auditress;  
 Her Husband the Relater she preferr'd  
 Before the Angel, and of him to ask  
 Chose rather: hee, she knew would intermix  
 Grateful digressions, and solve high dispute  
 With conjugal Caresses, from his Lip  
 Not Words alone pleas'd her. O when meet now  
 Such pairs, in Love and mutual Honour joyn'd?  
 With Goddess-like demeanour forth she went;

Not unattended, for on her as Queen 60  
A pomp of winning Graces waited still,  
And from about her shot Darts of desire  
Into all Eyes to wish her still in sight.  
And *Raphael* now to *Adam's* doubt propos'd  
Benevolent and facil thus repli'd.

To ask or search I blame thee not, for Heav'n  
Is as the Book of God before thee set,  
Wherein to read his wondrous Works, and learne  
His Seasons, Hours, or Days, or Months, or Yeares ;  
This to attain, whether Heav'n move or Earth, 70  
Imports not, if thou reck'n right, the rest  
From Man or Angel the great Architect  
Did wisely to conceal, and not divulge  
His secrets to be scann'd by them who ought  
Rather admire ; or if they list to try  
Conjecture, he his Fabric of the Heav'ns  
Hath left to thir disputes, perhaps to move  
His laughter at thir quaint Opinions wide  
Hereafter, when they come to model Heav'n  
And calculate the Starrs, how they will weild 80  
The mightie frame, how build, unbuild, contrive  
To save appeerances, how gird the Sphear  
With Centric and Eccentric scribl'd o're,  
Cycle and Epicycle, Orb in Orb :  
Alreadie by thy reasoning this I guess,  
Who art to lead thy ofspring, and supposest  
That Bodies bright and greater should not serve  
The less not bright, nor Heav'n such journies run,  
Earth sitting still, when she alone receaves  
The benefit : consider first, that Great 90  
Or Bright inferrs not Excellence : the Earth  
Though, in comparison of Heav'n so small,  
Nor glistening, may of solid good containe  
More plenty then the Sun that barren shines,  
Whose vertue on it self workes no effect,  
But in the fruitful Earth ; there first receavd  
His beams, unactive else, thir vigor find.  
Yet not to Earth are those bright Luminaries  
Officious, but to thee Earths habitant.  
And for the Heav'ns wide Circuit, let it speak 100  
The Makers high magnificence, who built

So spacious, and his Line stretcht out so farr;  
 That Man may know he dwells not in his own;  
 An Edifice too large for him to fill,  
 Lodg'd in a small partition, and the rest  
 Ordain'd for uses to his Lord best known.  
 The swiftness of those Circles attribute,  
 Though numberless, to his Omnipotence,  
 That to corporeal substances could adde  
 Speed almost Spiritual; mee thou thinkst not slow, 110  
 Who since the Morning hour set out from Heav'n  
 Where God resides, and ere mid-day arriv'd  
 In *Eden*, distance inexpressible  
 By Numbers that have name. But this I urge,  
 Admitting Motion in the Heav'ns, to shew  
 Invalid that which thee to doubt it mov'd;  
 Not that I so affirm, though so it seem  
 To thee who hast thy dwelling here on Earth.  
 God to remove his wayes from human sense,  
 Plac'd Heav'n from Earth so farr, that earthly sight, 120  
 If it presume, might erre in things too high,  
 And no advantage gaine. What if the Sun  
 Be Center to the World, and other Starrs  
 By his attractive vertue and thir own  
 Incited, dance about him various rounds?  
 Thir wandring course now high, now low, then hid,  
 Progressive, retrograde, or standing still,  
 In six thou seest, and what if sev'nth to these  
 The Planet Earth, so stedfast though she seem,  
 Insensibly three different Motions move? 130  
 Which else to several Sphears thou must ascribe,  
 Mov'd contrarie with thwart obliquities,  
 Or save the Sun his labour, and that swift  
 Nocturnal and Diurnal rhomb suppos'd,  
 Invisible else above all Starrs, the Wheele  
 Of Day and Night; which needs not thy beleefe,  
 If Earth industrious of her self fetch Day  
 Travelling East, and with her part averse  
 From the Suns beam meet Night, her other part  
 Still luminous by his ray. What if that light 140  
 Sent from her through the wide transpicious aire,  
 To the terrestrial Moon be as a Starr  
 Enlightning her by Day, as she by Night

This Earth? reciprocal, if Land be there,  
 Feilds and Inhabitants: Her spots thou seest  
 As Clouds, and Clouds may rain, and Rain produce  
 Fruits in her soft'nd Soile, for some to eate  
 Allotted there; and other Suns perhaps  
 With thir attendant Moons thou wilt descrie  
 Communicating Male and Female Light, 150  
 Which two great Sexes animate the World,  
 Stor'd in each Orb perhaps with some that live.  
 For such vast room in Nature unpossest  
 By living Soule, desert and desolate,  
 Onely to shine, yet scarce to contribute  
 Each Orb a glimps of Light, conveyd so farr  
 Down to this habitable, which returnes  
 Light back to them, is obvious to dispute.  
 But whether thus these things, or whether not,  
 Whether the Sun predominant in Heav'n 160  
 Rise on the Earth, or Earth rise on the Sun,  
 Hee from the East his flaming rode begin,  
 Or Shee from West her silent course advance  
 With inoffensive pace that spinning sleeps  
 On her soft Axle, while she paces Eev'n,  
 And bears thee soft with the smooth Air along,  
 Sollicit not thy thoughts with matters hid,  
 Leave them to God above, him serve and feare;  
 Of other Creatures, as him pleases best,  
 Wherever plac't, let him dispose: joy thou 170  
 In what he gives to thee, this Paradise  
 And thy fair *Eve*: Heav'n is for thee too high  
 To know what passes there; be lowlie wise:  
 Think onely what concernes thee and thy being;  
 Dream not of other Worlds, what Creatures there  
 Live, in what state, condition or degree,  
 Contented that thus farr hath been reveal'd  
 Not of Earth onely but of highest Heav'n.  
 To whom thus *Adam* cleerd of doubt, repli'd.  
 How fully hast thou satisfi'd mee, pure 180  
 Intelligence of Heav'n, Angel serene,  
 And freed from intricacies, taught to live,  
 The easiest way, nor with perplexing thoughts  
 To interrupt the sweet of Life, from which  
 God hath bid dwell farr off all anxious cares,  
 ( 338 )

*Paradise Lost.*

And not molest us, unless we our selves  
 Seek them with wandering thoughts, and notions vaine.  
 But apte the Mind or Fancie is to roave  
 Uncheckt, and of her roaving is no end;  
 Till warn'd, or by experience taught, she learn 190  
 That not to know at large of things remote  
 From use, obscure and suttel, but to know  
 That which before us lies in daily life,  
 Is the prime Wisdom, what is more, is fume,  
 Or emptiness, or fond impertinence,  
 And renders us in things that most concerne  
 Unpractis'd, unprepar'd, and still to seek.  
 Therefore from this high pitch let us descend  
 A lower flight, and speak of things at hand  
 Useful, whence haply mention may arise 200  
 Of something not unseasonable to ask  
 By sufferance, and thy wonted favour deign'd.  
 Thee I have heard relating what was don  
 Ere my remembrance: now hear mee relate  
 My Storie, which perhaps thou hast not heard;  
 And Day is yet not spent; till then thou seest  
 How suttly to detaine thee I devise,  
 Inviting thee to hear while I relate,  
 Fond, were it not in hope of thy reply:  
 For while I sit with thee, I seem in Heav'n,  
 And sweeter thy discourse is to my eare 210  
 Then Fruits of Palm-tree pleasantest to thirst  
 And hunger both, from labour, at the houre  
 Of sweet repast; they satiate, and soon fill,  
 Though pleasant, but thy words with Grace Divine  
 Imbu'd, bring to thir sweetness no satietie.

To whom thus *Raphael* answer'd heav'nly meek.  
 Nor are thy lips ungraceful, Sire of men,  
 Nor tongue ineloquent; for God on thee  
 Abundantly his gifts hath also pour'd 220  
 Inward and outward both, his image faire:  
 Speaking or mute all comliness and grace  
 Attends thee, and each word, each motion formes  
 Nor less think wee in Heav'n of thee on Earth  
 Then of our fellow servant, and inquire  
 Gladly into the wayes of God with Man:  
 For God we see hath honour'd thee, and set

On Man his equal Love: say therefore on;  
For I that Day was absent, as befell,  
Bound on a voyage uncouth and obscure, 230  
Farr on excursion toward the Gates of Hell;  
Squar'd in full Legion (such command we had)  
To see that none thence issu'd forth a spie,  
Or enemie, while God was in his work,  
Least hee incenst at such eruption bold,  
Destruction with Creation might have mixt.  
Not that they durst without his leave attempt,  
But us he sends upon his high behests  
For state, as Sovran King, and to enure  
Our prompt obedience. Fast we found, fast shut 240  
The dismal Gates, and barricado'd strong;  
But long ere our approaching heard within  
Noise, other then the sound of Dance or Song,  
Torment, and lowd lament, and furious rage.  
Glad we return'd up to the coasts of Light  
Ere Sabbath Eev'ning: so we had in charge.  
But thy relation now; for I attend,  
Pleas'd with thy words no less then thou with mine.

So spake the Godlike Power, and thus our Sire.  
For Man to tell how human Life began 250  
Is hard: for who himself beginning knew?  
Desire with thee still longer to converse  
Induc'd me. As new wak't from soundest sleep  
Soft on the flourie herb I found me laid  
In Balmie Sweat, which with his Beames the Sun  
Soon dri'd, and on the reaking moisture fed.  
Strait toward Heav'n my wondring Eyes I turnd,  
And gaz'd a while the ample Skie, till rais'd  
By quick instinctive motion up I sprung,  
As thitherward endeavoring, and upright 260  
Stood on my feet; about me round I saw  
Hill, Dale, and shadie Woods, and sunnie Plaines,  
And liquid Lapse of murmuring Streams; by these,  
Creatures that livd, and movd, and walk'd, or flew,  
Birds on the branches warbling; all things smil'd,  
With fragrance and with joy my heart oreflow'd.  
My self I then perus'd, and Limb by Limb  
Survey'd, and sometimes went, and sometimes ran  
With supple joints, as lively vigour led:

But who I was, or where, or from what cause, 270  
 Knew not; to speak I tri'd, and forthwith spake,  
 My Tongue obey'd and readily could name  
 What e're I saw. Thou Sun, said I, faire Light,  
 And thou enlight'nd Earth, so fresh and gay,  
 Ye Hills and Dales, ye Rivers, Woods, and Plaines  
 And ye that live and move, fair Creatures, tell,  
 Tell, if ye saw, how came I thus, how here?  
 Not of my self; by some great Maker then,  
 In goodness and in power præeminent;  
 Tell me, how may I know him, how adore, 280  
 From whom I have that thus I move and live,  
 And feel that I am happier then I know.  
 While thus I call'd, and stray'd I knew not whither,  
 From where I first drew Aire, and first beheld  
 This happie Light, when answer none return'd,  
 On a green shadie Bank profuse of Flours  
 Pensive I sate me down; there gentle sleep  
 First found me, and with soft oppression seis'd  
 My droused sense, untroubl'd, though I thought  
 I then was passing to my former state 290  
 Insensible, and forthwith to dissolve:  
 When suddenly stood at my Head a dream,  
 Whose inward apparition gently mov'd  
 My Fancy to believe I yet had being,  
 And livd: One came, methought, of shape Divine,  
 And said, thy Mansion wants thee, *Adam*, rise,  
 First Man, of Men innumerable ordain'd  
 First Father, call'd by thee I come thy Guide  
 To the Garden of bliss, thy seat prepar'd.  
 So saying, by the hand he took me rais'd, 300  
 And over Fields and Waters, as in Aire  
 Smooth sliding without step, last led me up  
 A woodie Mountain; whose high top was plaine,  
 A Circuit wide, enclos'd, with goodliest Trees  
 Planted, with Walks, and Bowers, that what I saw  
 Of Earth before scarce pleasant seemd. Each Tree  
 Load'n with fairest Fruit, that hung to the Eye  
 Tempting, stirr'd in me sudden appetite  
 To pluck and eate; whereat I wak'd, and found  
 Before mine Eyes all real, as the dream  
 Had lively shadowd: Here had new begun



My wandering, had not hee who was my Guide  
Up hither, from among the Trees appeer'd,  
Presence Divine. Rejoycing, but with aw  
In adoration at his feet I fell  
Submit: he rear'd me, & Whom thou soughtst I am,  
Said mildely, Author of all this thou seest  
Above, or round about thee or beneath.  
This Paradise I give thee, count it thine  
To Till and keep, and of the Fruit to eate: 320  
Of every Tree that in the Garden growes  
Eate freely with glad heart; fear here no dearth:  
But of the Tree whose operation brings  
Knowledg of good and ill, which I have set  
The Pledge of thy Obedience and thy Faith,  
Amid the Garden by the Tree of Life,  
Remember what I warne thee, shun to taste,  
And shun the bitter consequence: for know,  
The day thou eat'st thereof, my sole command  
Transgrest, inevitably thou shalt dye; 330  
From that day mortal, and this happie State  
Shalt loose, expell'd from hence into a World  
Of woe and sorrow. Sternly he pronounc'd  
The rigid interdiction, which resounds  
Yet dreadful in mine eare, though in my choice  
Not to incur; but soon his cleer aspect  
Return'd and gracious purpose thus renew'd.  
Not onely these fair bounds, but all the Earth  
To thee and to thy Race I give; as Lords 340  
Possess it, and all things that therein live,  
Or live in Sea, or Aire, Beast, Fish, and Fowle  
In signe whereof each Bird and Beast behold  
After thir kindes; I bring them to receave  
From thee thir Names, and pay thee fealtie  
With low subjection; understand the same  
Of Fish within thir watry residence,  
Not hither summond, since they cannot change  
Thir Element to draw the thinner Aire.  
As thus he spake, each Bird and Beast behold  
Approaching two and two, These cowering low 350  
With blandishment, each Bird stoop'd on his wing.  
I nam'd them, as they pass'd, and understood  
Thir Nature, with such knowledg God endu'd



*Paradise Lost.*

My sudden apprehension : but in these  
 I found not what me thought I wanted still ;  
 And to the Heav'nly vision thus presum'd.

O by what Name, for thou above all these,  
 Above mankinde, or aught then mankinde higher,  
 Surpassest farr my naming, how may I  
 Adore thee, Author of this Universe, 360  
 And all this good to man, for whose well being  
 So amply, and with hands so liberal  
 Thou hast provided all things : but with mee  
 I see not who partakes. In solitude  
 What happiness, who can enjoy alone,  
 Or all enjoying, what contentment find ?  
 Thus I presumptuous ; and the vision bright,  
 As with a smile more bright'nd, thus repli'd.

What call'st thou solitude, is not the Earth  
 With various living creatures, and the Aire 370  
 Replenisht, and all these at thy command  
 To come and play before thee, know'st thou not  
 Thir language and thir wayes, they also know,  
 And reason not contemptibly ; with these  
 Find pastime, and beare rule ; thy Realm is large.  
 So spake the Universal Lord, and seem'd  
 So ordering. I with leave of speech implor'd,  
 And humble deprecation thus repli'd.

Let not my words offend thee, Heav'nly Power,  
 My Maker, be propitious while I speak. 380  
 Hast thou not made me here thy substitute,  
 And these inferiour farr beneath me set ?  
 Among unequals what societie

Can sort, what harmonie or true delight ?  
 Which must be mutual, in proportion due  
 Giv'n and receiv'd ; but in disparitie  
 The one intense, the other still remiss  
 Cannot well suite with either, but soon prove  
 Tedious alike : Of fellowship I speak  
 Such as I seek, fit to participate 390

All rational delight, wherein the brute  
 Cannot be human consort ; they rejoyce  
 Each with thir kinde, Lion with Lioness ;  
 So fitly them in pairs thou hast combin'd ;  
 Much less can Bird with Beast, or Fish with Fowle

So well converse, nor with the Ox the Ape ;  
Wors then can Man with Beast, and least of all.

Whereto th' Almighty answer'd, not displeas'd.  
A nice and suttile happiness I see  
Thou to thy self proposest, in the choice 420  
Of thy Associates, *Adam*, and wilt taste  
No pleasure, though in pleasure, solitarie.  
What thinkst thou then of mee, and this my State,  
Seem I to thee sufficiently possesst  
Of happiness, or not? who am alone  
From all Eternitie, for none I know  
Second to mee or like, equal much less.  
How have I then with whom to hold converse  
Save with the Creatures which I made, and those  
To me inferiour, infinite descents 410  
Beneath what other Creatures are to thee?

He ceas'd, I lowly answer'd. To attaine  
The highth and depth of thy Eternal wayes  
All human thoughts come short, Supream of things ;  
Thou in thy self art perfet, and in thee  
Is no deficiencie found ; not so is Man,  
But in degree, the cause of his desire  
By conversation with his like to help,  
Or solace his defects. No need that thou  
Shouldst propagat, already infinite ; 420  
And through all numbers absolute, though One ;  
But Man by number is to manifest  
His single imperfection, and beget  
Like of his like, his Image multipli'd,  
In unitie defective, which requires  
Collateral love, and deerest amitie.  
Thou in thy secresie although alone,  
Best with thy self accompanied, seek'st not  
Social communication, yet so pleas'd,  
Canst raise thy Creature to what highth thou wilt 430  
Of Union or Communion, deifi'd ;  
I by conversing cannot these erect  
From prone, nor in thir wayes complacence find.  
Thus I embold'nd spake, and freedom us'd  
Permissive, and acceptance found, which gain'd  
This answer from the gracious voice Divine.

Thus farr to try thee *Adam*, I was pleas'd,

And finde thee knowing not of Beasts alone,  
 Which thou hast rightly nam'd, but of thy self,  
 Expressing well the spirit within thee free, 440  
 My Image, not imparted to the Brute,  
 Whose fellowship therefore unmeet for thee  
 Good reason was thou freely shouldst dislike,  
 And be so minded still; I, ere thou spok'st,  
 Knew it not good for Man to be alone,  
 And no such companie as then thou saw'st  
 Intended thee, for trial onely brought,  
 To see how thou could'st judge of fit and meet :  
 What next I bring shall please thee, be assur'd,  
 Thy likeness, thy fit help, thy other self, 450  
 Thy wish, exactly to thy hearts desire.

Hee ended, or I heard no more, for now  
 My earthly by his Heav'nly overpowerd,  
 Which it had long stood under, streind to the highth  
 In that celestial Colloquie sublime,  
 As with an object that excels the sense,  
 Dazl'd and spent, sunk down, and sought repair  
 Of sleep, which instantly fell on me, call'd  
 By Nature as in aide, and clos'd mine eyes.  
 Mine eyes he clos'd, but op'n left the Cell 460  
 Of Fancie my internal sight, by which  
 Abstract as in a transe methought I saw,  
 Though sleeping, where I lay, and saw the shape  
 Still glorious before whom awake I stood ;  
 Who stooping op'nd my left side, and took  
 From thence a Rib, with cordial spirits warme,  
 And Life-blood streaming fresh ; wide was the wound,  
 But suddenly with flesh fill'd up & heal'd :  
 The Rib he formd and fashond with his hands ;  
 Under his forming hands a Creature grew, 470  
 Manlike, but different sex, so lovly faire,  
 That what seemd fair in all the World, seemd now  
 Mean, or in her summd up, in her containd  
 And in her looks, which from that time infus'd  
 Sweetness into my heart, unfelt before,  
 And into all things from her Aire inspir'd  
 The spirit of love and amorous delight.  
 She disappeerd, and left me dark, I wak'd  
 To find her, or for ever to deplore

Her loss, and other pleasures all abjure : 480  
When out of hope, behold her, not farr off,  
Such as I saw her in my dream, adorn'd  
With what all Earth or Heaven could bestow  
To make her amiable : On she came,  
Led by her Heav'nly Maker, though unseen,  
And guided by his voice, nor uninform'd  
Of nuptial Sanctitie and marriage Rites :  
Grace was in all her steps, Heav'n in her Eye,  
In every gesture dignitie and love.  
I overjoyd could not forbear aloud. 490

This turn hath made amends ; thou hast fulfill'd  
Thy words, Creator bounteous and benigne,  
Giver of all things faire, but fairest this  
Of all thy gifts, nor enviest. I now see  
Bone of my Bone, Flesh of my Flesh, my Self  
Before me ; Woman is her Name, of Man  
Extracted ; for this cause he shall forgoe  
Father and Mother, and to his Wife adhere ;  
And they shall be one Flesh, one Heart, one Soule.

She heard me thus, and though divinely brought, 500  
Yet Innocence and Virgin Modestie,  
Her vertue and the conscience of her worth,  
That would be woo'd, and not unsought be won,  
Not obvious, not obtrusive, but retir'd,  
The more desirable, or to say all,  
Nature her self, though pure of sinful thought,  
Wrought in her so, that seeing me, she turn'd ;  
I follow'd her, she what was Honour knew,  
And with obsequious Majestie approv'd  
My pleaded reason. To the Nuptial Bowre 510  
I led her blushing like the Morn : all Heav'n,  
And happie Constellations on that houre  
Shed thir selectest influence ; the Earth  
Gave sign of gratulation, and each Hill ;  
Joyous the Birds ; fresh Gales and gentle Aires  
Whisper'd it to the Woods, and from thir wings  
Flung Rose, flung Odours from the spicie Shrub,  
Disporting, till the amorous Bird of Night  
Sung Spousal, and bid haste the Eevning Starr  
On his Hill top, to light the bridal Lamp. 520  
Thus I have told thee all my State, and brought

My Storie to the sum of earthly bliss  
 Which I enjoy, and must confess to find  
 In all things else delight indeed, but such  
 As us'd or not, works in the mind no change,  
 Nor vehement desire, these delicacies  
 I mean of Taste, Sight, Smell, Herbs, Fruits, & Flours,  
 Walks, and the melodie of Birds; but here  
 Farr otherwise, transported I behold,  
 Transported touch; here passion first I felt, 530  
 Commotion strange, in all enjoyments else  
 Superiour and unmov'd, here onely weake  
 Against the charm of Beauties powerful glance.  
 Or Nature faild in mee, and left some part  
 Not proof enough such Object to sustain,  
 Or from my side subducting, took perhaps  
 More then enough; at least on her bestow'd  
 Too much of Ornament, in outward shew  
 Elaborate, of inward less exact.  
 For well I understand in the prime end 540  
 Of Nature her th' inferiour, in the mind  
 And inward Faculties, which most excell,  
 In outward also her resembling less  
 His Image who made both, and less expressing  
 The character of that Dominion giv'n  
 O're other Creatures; yet when I approach  
 Her loveliness, so absolute she seems  
 And in her self compleat, so well to know  
 Her own, that what she wills to do or say,  
 Seems wisest, vertuousest, discreetest, best; 550  
 All higher knowledge in her presence falls  
 Degraded, Wisdom in discourse with her  
 Looses discount'nanc't, and like folly shewes;  
 Authoritie and Reason on her waite,  
 As one intended first, not after made  
 Occasionally; and to consummate all,  
 Greatness of mind and nobleness thir seat  
 Build in her loveliest, and create an awe  
 About her, as a guard Angelic plac't.  
 To whom the Angel with contracted brow. 560  
 Accuse not Nature, she hath don her part;  
 Do thou but thine, and be not diffident  
 Of Wisdom, she deserts thee not, if thou

Dismiss not her, when most thou needst her nigh,  
 By attributing overmuch to things  
 Less excellent, as thou thy self perceav'st.  
 For what admir'st thou, what transports thee so,  
 An outside? fair no doubt, and worthy well  
 Thy cherishing, thy honouring, and thy love,  
 Not thy subjection: weigh with her thy self;  
 Then value: Oft times nothing profits more  
 Then self-esteem, grounded on just and right  
 Well manag'd; of that skill the more thou know'st,  
 The more she will acknowledge thee her Head,  
 And to realities yeild all her shows;  
 Made so adorn for thy delight the more,  
 So awful, that with honour thou maist love  
 Thy mate, who sees when thou art seen least wise.  
 But if the sense of touch whereby mankind  
 Is propagated seem such dear delight  
 Beyond all other, think the same voutsaft  
 To Cattel and each Beast; which would not be  
 To them made common & divulg'd, if aught  
 Therein enjoy'd were worthy to subdue  
 The Soule of Man, or passion in him move.  
 What higher in her societie thou findst  
 Attractive, human, rational, love still;  
 In loving thou dost well, in passion not,  
 Wherein true Love consists not; love refines  
 The thoughts, and heart enlarges, hath his seat  
 In Reason, and is judicious, is the scale  
 By which to heav'nly Love thou maist ascend,  
 Not sunk in carnal pleasure, for which cause  
 Among the Beasts no Mate for thee was found.

570

580

590

To whom thus half abash't *Adam* repli'd.  
 Neither her out-side form'd so fair, nor aught  
 In procreation common to all kindes  
 (Though higher of the genial Bed by far,  
 And with mysterious reverence I deem)  
 So much delights me, as those graceful acts,  
 Those thousand decencies that daily flow  
 From all her words and actions, mixt with Love  
 And sweet compliance, which declare unfeign'd  
 Union of Mind, or in us both one Soule:  
 Harmonie to behold in wedded pair

600

More grateful then harmonious sound to the care.  
 Yet these subject not; I to thee disclose  
 What inward thence I feel, not therefore foild,  
 Who meet with various objects, from the sense  
 Variously representing; yet still free  
 Approve the best, and follow what I approve.  
 To love thou blam'st me not, for love thou saist  
 Leads up to Heav'n, is both the way and guide;  
 Bear with me then, if lawful what I ask;  
 Love not the heav'nly Spirits, and how thir Love  
 Express they, by looks onely, or do they mix  
 Irradiance, virtual or immediate touch?

610

To whom the Angel with a smile that glow'd  
 Celestial rosie red, Loves proper hue,  
 Answer'd. Let it suffice thee that thou know'st  
 Us happie, and without Love no happiness.  
 Whatever pure thou in the body enjoy'st  
 (And pure thou wert created) we enjoy  
 In eminence, and obstacle find none  
 Of membrane, joynt, or limb, exclusive barrs:  
 Easier then Air with Air, if Spirits embrace,  
 Total they mix, Union of Pure with Pure  
 Desiring; nor restrain'd conveyance need  
 As Flesh to mix with Flesh, or Soul with Soul.  
 But I can now no more; the parting Sun  
 Beyond the Earths green Cape and verdant Isles  
*Hesperian* sets, my Signal to depart.  
 Be strong, live happie, and love, but first of all  
 Him whom to love is to obey, and keep  
 His great command; take heed least Passion sway  
 Thy Judgement to do aught, which else free Will  
 Would not admit; thine and of all thy Sons  
 The weal or woe in thee is plac't; beware.  
 I in thy persevering shall rejoyce,  
 And all the Blest: stand fast; to stand or fall  
 Free in thine own Arbitrement it lies.  
 Perfect within, no outward aid require;  
 And all temptation to transgress repel.

620

630

640

So saying, he arose; whom *Adam* thus  
 Follow'd with benediction. Since to part,  
 Go heavenly Guest, Ethereal Messenger,  
 Sent from whose sovran goodness I adore.

# *Paradise Lost.*

[BK. VIII.]

Gentle to me and affable hath been  
Thy condescension, and shall be honour'd ever  
With grateful Memorie: thou to mankind  
Be good and friendly still, and oft return.

650

So parted they, the Angel up to Heav'n  
From the thick shade, and *Adam* to his Bowre.

*The End of the Eighth Book.*



# PARADISE LOST.

## BOOK IX.

### THE ARGUMENT.

*Satan having compassed the Earth, with meditated guile returns as a mist by Night into Paradise, enters into the Serpent sleeping. Adam and Eve in the Morning go forth to thir labours, which Eve proposes to divide in several places, each labouring apart: Adam consents not, alledging the danger, lest that Enemy, of whom they were forewarn'd, should attempt her found alone: Eve loath to be thought not circumspect or firm enough, urges her going apart, the rather desirous to make tryal of her strength; Adam at last yields: The Serpent finds her alone; his subtle approach, first gazing, then speaking, with much flattery extolling Eve above all other Creatures. Eve wondring to hear the Serpent speak, asks how he attain'd to human speech and such understanding not till now; the Serpent answers, that by tasting of a certain Tree in the Garden he attain'd both to Speech and Reason, till then void of both: Eve requires him to bring her to that Tree, and finds it to be the Tree of Knowledge forbidden: The Serpent now grown bolder, with many wiles and arguments induces her at length to eat; she pleas'd with the taste deliberates awhile whether to impart thereof to Adam or not, at last brings him of the Fruit, relates what persuaded her to eat thereof: Adam at first amaz'd, but perceiving her lost, resolves through vehemence of love to perish with her; and extenuating the trespass, eats also of the Fruit: The effects thereof in them both; they seek to cover thir nakedness; then fall to variance and accusation of one another.*

No more of talk where God or Angel Guest  
With Man, as with his Friend, familiar us'd  
To sit indulgent, and with him partake  
Rural repast, permitting him the while

# Paradise Lost.

[BK. IX.

Venial discourse unblam'd: I now must change  
Those Notes to Tragic; foul distrust, and breach  
Disloyal on the part of Man, revolt,  
And disobedience: On the part of Heav'n  
Now alienated, distance and distaste,  
Anger and just rebuke, and judgement giv'n, 10  
That brought into this World a world of woe,  
Sinne and her shadow Death, and Miserie  
Deaths Harbinger: Sad task, yet argument  
Not less but more Heroic then the wrauth  
Of stern *Achilles* on his Foe pursu'd  
Thrice Fugitive about *Troy* Wall; or rage  
Of *Turnus* for *Lavinia* disespous'd,  
Or *Neptun's* ire or *Juno's*, that so long  
Perplex'd the *Greek* and *Cytherea's* Son;  
If answerable style I can obtaine 20  
Of my Celestial Patroness, who deignes  
Her nightly visitation unimplor'd,  
And dictates to me slumbring, or inspires  
Easie my unpremeditated Verse:  
Since first this Subject for Heroic Song  
Pleas'd me long choosing, and beginning late  
Not sedulous by Nature to indite  
Warrs, hitherto the onely Argument  
Heroic deem'd, chief maistrie to dissect  
With long and tedious havoc fabl'd Knights 30  
In Battels feign'd; the better fortitude  
Of Patience and Heroic Martyrdom  
Unsung; or to describe Races and Games,  
Or tilting Furniture, emblazon'd Shields,  
Impreses quaint, Caparisons and Steeds;  
Bases and tinsel Trappings, gorgious Knights  
At Joust and Torneament; then marshal'd Feast  
Serv'd up in Hall with Sewers, and Seneshals;  
The skill of Artifice or Office mean,  
Not that which justly gives Heroic name 40  
To Person or to Poem. Mee of these  
Nor skilld nor studious, higher Argument  
Remaines, sufficient of it self to raise  
That name, unless an age too late, or cold  
Climat, or Years damp my intended wing  
Deprest, and much they may, if all be mine,

*Paradise Lost.*

Not Hers who brings it nightly to my Ear.

The Sun was sunk, and after him the Starr

Of *Hesperus*, whose Office is to bring

Twilight upon the Earth, short Arbiter

50

Twixt Day and Night, and now from end to end

Nights Hemisphere had veild the Horizon round:

When *Satan* who late fled before the threats

Of *Gabriel* out of *Eden*, now improv'd

In meditated fraud and malice, bent

On mans destruction, maugre what might hap

Of heavier on himself, fearless return'd.

By Night he fled, and at Midnight return'd

From compassing the Earth, cautious of day,

Since *Uriel* Regent of the Sun descri'd

60

His entrance, and forewarnd the Cherubim

That kept thir watch; thence full of anguish driv'n,

The space of seven continu'd Nights he rode

With darkness, thrice the Equinoctial Line

He circl'd, four times cross'd the Carr of Night

From Pole to Pole, traversing each Colure;

On the eighth return'd, and on the Coast averse

From entrance or Cherubic Watch, by stealth

Found unsuspected way. There was a place,

Now not, though Sin, not Time, first wraught the change, 70

Where *Tigris* at the foot of Paradise

Into a Gulf shot under ground, till part

Rose up a Fountain by the Tree of Life;

In with the River sunk, and with it rose

Satan involv'd in rising Mist, then sought

Where to lie hid; Sea he had searcht and Land

From *Eden* over *Pontus*, and the Poole

*Mæotis*, up beyond the River *Ob*;

Downward as farr Antartic; and in length

West from *Orontes* to the Ocean barr'd

80

At *Darien*, thence to the Land where flowes

*Ganges* and *Indus*: thus the Orb he roam'd

With narrow search; and with inspection deep

Consider'd every Creature, which of all

Most opportune might serve his Wiles, and found

The Serpent suttlest Beast of all the Field.

Him after long debate, irresolute

Of thoughts revolv'd, his final sentence chose

Fit Vessel, fittest Imp of fraud, in whom  
To enter, and his dark suggestions hide 90  
From sharpest sight: for in the wilie Snake,  
Whatever sleights none would suspicious mark,  
As from his wit and native suttletie  
Proceeding, which in other Beasts observ'd  
Doubt might beget of Diabolic pow'r  
Active within beyond the sense of brute.  
Thus he resolv'd, but first from inward grieve  
His bursting passion into plaints thus pour'd:  
O Earth, how like to Heav'n, if not preferr'd  
More justly, Seat worthier of Gods, as built 100  
With second thoughts, reforming what was old!  
For what God after better worse would build?  
Terrestrial Heav'n, danc't round by other Heav'ns  
That shine, yet bear thir bright officious Lamps,  
Light above Light, for thee alone, as seems,  
In thee concentrating all thir precious beams  
Of sacred influence: As God in Heav'n  
Is Center, yet extends to all, so thou  
Centring receav'st from all those Orbs; in thee,  
Not in themselves, all thir known vertue appeers 110  
Productive in Herb, Plant, and nobler birth  
Of Creatures animate with gradual life  
Of Growth, Sense, Reason, all summ'd up in Man.  
With what delight could I have walk't thee round  
If I could joy in aught, sweet interchange  
Of Hill and Vallie, Rivers, Woods and Plaines,  
Now Land, now Sea, & Shores with Forrest crownd,  
Rocks, Dens, and Caves; but I in none of these  
Find place or refuge; and the more I see  
Pleasures about me, so much more I feel 120  
Torment within me, as from the hateful siege  
Of contraries; all good to me becomes  
Bane, and in Heav'n much worse would be my state.  
But neither here seek I, no nor in Heav'n  
To dwell, unless by maistring Heav'ns Supream;  
Nor hope to be my self less miserable  
By what I seek, but others to make such  
As I, though thereby worse to me redound:  
For onely in destroying I finde ease  
To my relentless thoughts; and him destroyd, 130

Or won to what may work his utter loss,  
 For whom all this was made, all this will soon  
 Follow, as to him linkt in weal or woe,  
 In wo then; that destruction wide may range:  
 To mee shall be the glorie sole among  
 The infernal Powers, in one day to have marr'd  
 What he *Almightie* styl'd, six Nights and Days  
 Continu'd making, and who knows how long  
 Before had bin contriving, though perhaps  
 Not longer then since I in one Night freed 140  
 From servitude inglorious welnigh half  
 Th' Angelic Name, and thinner left the throng  
 Of his adorers: hee to be aveng'd,  
 And to repaire his numbers thus impair'd,  
 Whether such vertue spent of old now faild  
 More Angels to Create, if they at least  
 Are his Created or to spite us more,  
 Determin'd to advance into our room  
 A Creature form'd of Earth, and him endow,  
 Exalted from so base original, 150  
 With Heav'nly spoils, our spoils; What he decreed  
 He effected; Man he made, and for him built  
 Magnificent this World, and Earth his seat,  
 Him Lord pronounc'd, and, O indignitie!  
 Subjected to his service Angel wings,  
 And flaming Ministers to watch and tend  
 Thir earthie Charge: Of these the vigilance  
 I dread, and to elude, thus wrapt in mist  
 Of midnight vapor glide obscure, and prie  
 In every Bush and Brake, where hap may finde 160  
 The Serpent sleeping, in whose mазie foulds  
 To hide me, and the dark intent I bring.  
 O foul descent! that I who erst contended  
 With Gods to sit the highest, am now constrained  
 Into a Beast, and mixt with bestial slime,  
 This essence to incarnate and imbrute,  
 That to the hight of Deitie aspir'd;  
 But what will not Ambition and Revenge  
 Descend to? who aspires must down as low  
 As high he soard, obnoxious first or last  
 To basest things. Revenge, at first though sweet,  
 Bitter ere long back on it self recoiles;

Let it ; I reck not, so it light well aim'd,  
 Since higher I fall short, on him who next  
 Provokes my envie, this new Favorite  
 Of Heav'n, this Man of Clay, Son of despite,  
 Whom us the more to spite his Maker rais'd  
 From dust: spite then with spite is best repaid.

So saying, through each Thicket Danck or Drie,  
 Like a black mist low creeping, he held on  
 His midnight search, where soonest he might finde  
 The Serpent: him fast sleeping soon he found  
 In Labyrinth of many a round self-rowld,  
 His head the midst, well stor'd with suttile wiles:  
 Not yet in horrid Shade or dismal Den,  
 Not nocent yet, but on the grassie Herbe  
 Fearless unfeard he slept: in at his Mouth  
 The Devil enterd, and his brutal sense,  
 In heart or head, possessing soon inspir'd  
 With act intelligential; but his sleep  
 Disturb'd not, waiting close th' approach of Morn.  
 Now whenas sacred Light began to dawne  
 In *Eden* on the humid Flours, that breathd  
 Thir morning Incense, when all things that breath,  
 From th' Earths great Altar send up silent praise  
 To the Creator, and his Nostrils fill  
 With gratefull Smell, forth came the human pair  
 And joynd thir vocal Worship to the Quire  
 Of Creatures wanting voice, that done, partake  
 The season, prime for sweetest Sents and Aires:  
 Then commune how that day they best may ply  
 Thir growing work: for much thir work outgrew  
 The hands dispatch of two Gardning so wide.  
 And *Eve* first to her Husband thus began.

*Adam*, well may we labour still to dress  
 This Garden, still to tend Plant, Herb and Flour.  
 Our pleasant task enjoyn'd, but till more hands  
 Aid us, the work under our labour grows,  
 Luxurious by restraint; what we by day  
 Lop overgrown, or prune, or prop, or bind,  
 One night or two with wanton growth derides  
 Tending to wilde. Thou therefore now advise  
 Or hear what to my mind first thoughts present,

186 not] nor 1674

213 hear] bear 1674

Let us divide our labours, thou where choice  
 Leads thee, or where most needs, whether to wind  
 The Woodbine round this Arbour, or direct  
 The clasping Ivie where to climb, while I  
 In yonder Spring of Roses intermixt  
 With Myrtle, find what to redress till Noon:  
 For while so near each other thus all day  
 Our task we choose, what wonder if so near 220  
 Looks intervene and smiles, or object new  
 Casual discourse draw on, which intermits  
 Our dayes work brought to little, though begun  
 Early, and th' hour of Supper comes unearn'd.

To whom mild answer *Adam* thus return'd.  
 Sole *Eve*, Associate sole, to me beyond  
 Compare above all living Creatures deare,  
 Well hast thou motion'd, wel thy thoughts imployd  
 How we might best fulfill the work which here 230  
 God hath assign'd us, nor of me shalt pass  
 Unprais'd: for nothing lovelier can be found  
 In woman, then to studie household good,  
 And good workes in her Husband to promote.  
 Yet not so strictly hath our Lord impos'd  
 Labour, as to debarr us when we need  
 Refreshment, whether food, or talk between,  
 Food of the mind, or this sweet intercourse  
 Of looks and smiles, for smiles from Reason flow,  
 To brute deni'd, and are of Love the food, 240  
 Love not the lowest end of human life.

For not to irksom toile, but to delight  
 He made us, and delight to Reason joyn'd.  
 These paths and Bowers doubt not but our joynt hands  
 Will keep from Wilderness with ease, as wide  
 As we need walk, till younger hands ere long  
 Assist us: But if much converse perhaps  
 Thee satiate, to short absence I could yeild.  
 For solitude somtimes is best societie,  
 And short retirement urges sweet returne. 250

But other doubt possesses me, least harm  
 Befall thee sever'd from me; for thou knowst  
 What hath bin warn'd us, what malicious Foe  
 Envyng our happiness, and of his own  
 Despairing, seeks to work us woe and shame



By sly assault; and somewhere nigh at hand  
 Watches, no doubt, with greedy hope to find  
 His wish and best advantage, us asunder,  
 Hopeless to circumvent us joynd, where each  
 To other speedie aide might lend at need;  
 Whether his first design be to withdraw  
 Our fealtie from God, or to disturb  
 Conjugal Love, then which perhaps no bliss  
 Enjoy'd by us excites his envie more;  
 Or this, or worse, leave not the faithful side  
 That gave thee being, stil shades thee and protects.  
 The Wife, where danger or dishonour lurks,  
 Safest and seemliest by her Husband staies,  
 Who guards her, or with her the worst endures.

260

To whom the Virgin Majestie of *Eve*,  
 As one who loves, and some unkindness meets,  
 With sweet austeer composure thus reply'd.

270

Ofspring of Heav'n and Earth, and all Earths Lord,  
 That such an Enemie we have, who seeks  
 Our ruin, both by thee informd I learne,  
 And from the parting Angel over-heard  
 As in a shadie nook I stood behind,  
 Just then returnd at shut of Evening Flours.

But that thou shouldst my firmness therfore doubt  
 To God or thee, because we have a foe  
 May tempt it, I expected not to hear.

280

His violence thou fearest not, being such,  
 As wee, not capable of death or paine,  
 Can either not receave, or can repell.  
 His fraud is then thy fear, which plain inferrs  
 Thy equal fear that my firm Faith and Love  
 Can by his fraud be shak'n or seduc't;  
 Thoughts, which how found they harbour in thy brest,  
*Adam*, misstthought of her to thee so dear?

To whom with healing words *Adam* reply'd.  
 Daughter of God and Man, immortal *Eve*,  
 For such thou art, from sin and blame entire:  
 Not diffident of thee do I dissuade

290

Thy absence from my sight, but to avoid  
 Th' attempt it self, intended by our Foe.  
 For hee who tempts, though in vain, at least asperses  
 The tempted with dishonour foul, suppos'd



Not incorruptible of Faith, not prooff  
 Against temptation: thou thy self with scorne  
 And anger wouldst resent the offer'd wrong, 300  
 Though ineffectual found: misdeem not then,  
 If such affront I labour to avert  
 From thee alone, which on us both at once  
 The Enemie, though bold, will hardly dare,  
 Or daring, first on mee th' assault shall light.  
 Nor thou his malice and false guile contemn;  
 Suttle he needs must be, who could seduce  
 Angels, nor think superfluous others aid.  
 I from the influence of thy looks receive  
 Access in every Vertue, in thy sight 310  
 More wise, more watchful, stronger, if need were  
 Of outward strength; while shame, thou looking on,  
 Shame to be overcome or over-reacht  
 Would utmost vigor raise, and rais'd unite.  
 Why shouldst not thou like sense within thee feel  
 When I am present, and thy trial choose  
 With me, best witness of thy Vertue tri'd.

So spake domestick *Adam* in his care  
 And Matrimonial Love, but *Eve*, who thought  
 Less attributed to her Faith sincere, 320  
 Thus her reply with accent sweet renewd.

If this be our condition, thus to dwell  
 In narrow circuit strait'nd by a Foe,  
 Suttle or violent, we not endu'd  
 Single with like defence, wherever met,  
 How are we happie, still in fear of harm?  
 But harm precedes not sin: onely our Foe  
 Tempting affronts us with his foul esteem  
 Of our integritie: his foul esteeme  
 Sticks no dishonor on our Front, but turns 330  
 Foul on himself; then wherfore shund or feard  
 By us? who rather double honour gaine  
 From his surmise prov'd false, finde peace within,  
 Favour from Heav'n, our witness from th' event.  
 And what is Faith, Love, Vertue unassaid  
 Alone, without exterior help sustaind?  
 Let us not then suspect our happie State  
 Left so imperfet by the Maker wise,  
 As not secure to single or combin'd.

Fraile is our happiness, if this be so,  
And *Eden* were no *Eden* thus expos'd. 340

To whom thus *Adam* fervently repli'd.  
O Woman, best are all things as the will  
Of God ordaind them, his creating hand  
Nothing imperfet or deficient left  
Of all that he Created, much less Man,  
Or ought that might his happie State secure,  
Secure from outward force; within himself  
The danger lies, yet lies within his power:  
Against his will he can receive no harme. 350

But God left free the Will, for what obeyes  
Reason, is free, and Reason he made right  
But bid her well beware, and still erect,  
Least by some faire appeering good surpris'd  
She dictate false, and misinforme the Will  
To do what God expressly hath forbid.

Not then mistrust, but tender love enjoynes,  
That I should mind thee oft, and mind thou me.  
Firm we subsist, yet possible to swerve,  
Since Reason not impossibly may meet 360  
Some specious object by the Foe suborn'd,  
And fall into deception unaware,

Not keeping strictest watch, as she was warnd  
Seek not temptation then, which to avoide  
Were better, and most likelie if from mee  
Thou sever not: Trial will come unsought.  
Wouldst thou approve thy constancie, approve  
First thy obedience; th' other who can know,  
Not seeing thee attempted, who attest?

But if thou think, trial unsought may finde 370  
Us both securer then thus warnd thou seemst,  
Go; for thy stay, not free, absents thee more;  
Go in thy native innocence, relie  
On what thou hast of vertue, summon all,  
For God towards thee hath done his part, do thine.

So spake the Patriarch of Mankinde, but *Eve*  
Persisted, yet submiss, though last, repli'd.

With thy permission then, and thus forewarnd  
Chiefly by what thy own last reasoning words  
Touchd onely, that our trial, when least sought, 380  
May finde us both perhaps farr less prepar'd,

The willinger I goe, nor much expect  
 A Foe so proud will first the weaker seek ;  
 So bent, the more shall shame him his repulse.  
 Thus saying, from her Husbands hand her hand  
 Soft she withdrew, and like a Wood-Nymph light  
*Oread* or *Dryad*, or of *Delia's* Traine,  
 Betook her to the Groves, but *Delia's* self  
 In gate surpass'd and Goddess-like deport,  
 Though not as shee with Bow and Quiver arm'd, 390  
 But with such Gardning Tools as Art yet rude,  
 Guiltless of fire had form'd, or Angels brought.  
 To *Pales*, or *Pomona*, thus adorn'd,  
 Likest she seem'd, *Pomona* when she fled  
*Vertumnus*, or to *Ceres* in her Prime,  
 Yet Virgin of *Proserpina* from *Jove*.  
 Her long with ardent look his Eye pursu'd  
 Delighted, but desiring more her stay.  
 Oft he to her his charge of quick returne  
 Repeated, shee to him as oft engag'd 400  
 To be return'd by Noon amid the Bowre,  
 And all things in best order to invite  
 Noontide repast, or Afternoons repose.  
 O much deceav'd, much failing, hapless *Eve*,  
 Of thy presum'd return ! event perverse !  
 Thou never from that houre in Paradise  
 Foundst either sweet repast, or sound repose ;  
 Such ambush hid among sweet Flours and Shades  
 Waited with hellish rancor imminent  
 To intercept thy way, or send thee back 410  
 Despoild of Innocence, of Faith, of Bliss.  
 For now, and since first break of dawne the Fiend.  
 Meer Serpent in appearance, forth was come,  
 And on his Quest, where likeliest he might finde  
 The onely two of Mankinde, but in them  
 The whole included Race, his purpos'd prey.  
 In Bowre and Field he sought, where any tuft  
 Of Grove or Garden-Plot more pleasant lay,  
 Thir tendance or Plantation for delight,  
 By Fountain or by shadie Rivulet  
 He sought them both, but wish'd his hap might find 420  
*Eve* separate, he wish'd, but not with hope

Of what so seldom chanc'd, when to his wish,  
 Beyond his hope, *Eve* separate he spies,  
 Veil'd in a Cloud of Fragrance, where she stood,  
 Half spi'd, so thick the Roses bushing round  
 About her glowd, oft stooping to support  
 Each Flour of slender stalk, whose head though gay  
 Carnation, Purple, Azure, or spect with Gold,  
 Hung drooping unsustained, them she upstaies 430  
 Gently with Mirtle band, mindless the while,  
 Her self, though fairest unsupported Flour,  
 From her best prop so farr, and storm so nigh.  
 Neerer he drew, and many a walk travers'd  
 Of stateliest Covert, Cedar, Pine, or Palme,  
 Then voluble and bold, now hid, now seen  
 Among thick-wov'n Arborets and Flours  
 Imborderd on each Bank, the hand of *Eve* :  
 Spot more delicious then those Gardens feign'd  
 Or of reviv'd *Adonis*, or renown'd 440  
*Alcinous*, host of old *Laertes* Son,  
 Or that, not Mystic, where the Sapiient King  
 Held dalliance with his faire *Egyptian* Spouse.  
 Much hee the Place admir'd, the Person more.  
 As one who long in populous City pent,  
 Where Houses thick and Sewers annoy the Aire,  
 Forth issuing on a Summers Morn to breathe  
 Among the pleasant Villages and Farmes  
 Adjoynd, from each thing met conceaves delight,  
 The smell of Grain, or tedded Grass, or Kine, 450  
 Or Dairie, each rural sight, each rural sound ;  
 If chance with Nymphlike step fair Virgin pass,  
 What pleasing seemd, for her now pleases more,  
 She most, and in her looks summs all Delight.  
 Such Pleasure took the Serpent to behold  
 This Flourie Plat, the sweet recess of *Eve*  
 Thus earlie, thus alone ; her Heav'nly forme  
 Angelic, but more soft, and Feminine,  
 Her graceful Innocence, her every Aire  
 Of gesture or lest action overawd 460  
 His Malice, and with rapine sweet bereav'd  
 His fierceness of the fierce intent it brought :  
 That space the Evil one abstracted stood  
 From his own evil, and for the time remaind

Stupidly good, of enmitie disarm'd,  
 Of guile, of hate, of envie, of revenge ;  
 But the hot Hell that alwayes in him burnes,  
 Though in mid Heav'n, soon ended his delight,  
 And tortures him now more, the more he sees  
 Of pleasure not for him ordain'd : then soon  
 Fierce hate he recollects, and all his thoughts  
 Of mischief, gratulating, thus excites.

470

Thoughts, whither have ye led me, with what sweet  
 Compulsion thus transported to forget  
 What hither brought us, hate, not love, nor hope  
 Of Paradise for Hell, hope here to taste  
 Of pleasure, but all pleasure to destroy,  
 Save what is in destroying, other joy  
 To me is lost. Then let me not let pass  
 Occasion which now smiles, behold alone  
 The Woman, opportune to all attempts,  
 Her Husband, for I view far round, not nigh,  
 Whose higher intellectual more I shun,  
 And strength, of courage hautie, and of limb  
 Heroic built, though of terrestrial mould,  
 Foe not formidable, exempt from wound,  
 I not ; so much hath Hell debas'd, and paine  
 Infeebld me, to what I was in Heav'n.  
 Shee fair, divinely fair, fit Love for Gods,  
 Not terrible, though terrour be in Love  
 And beautie, not approacht by stronger hate,  
 Hate stronger, under shew of Love well feign'd,  
 The way which to her ruin now I tend.

480

490

So spake the Enemie of Mankind, enclos'd  
 In Serpent, Inmate bad, and toward *Eve*  
 Address'd his way, not with indented wave,  
 Prone on the ground, as since, but on his reare,  
 Circular base of rising foulds, that tour'd  
 Fould above fould a surging Maze, his Head  
 Crested aloft, and Carbuncle his Eyes ;  
 With burnisht Neck of verdant Gold, erect  
 Amidst his circling Spires, that on the grass  
 Floted redundant : pleasing was his shape,  
 And lovely, never since of Serpent kind  
 Lovelier, not those that in *Illyria* chang'd  
*Hermione* and *Cadmus*, or the God

500

In *Epidaurus*; nor to which transformd  
*Ammonian Jove*, or *Capitoline* was seen,  
 Hee with *Olympias*, this with her who bore  
*Scipio* the highth of *Rome*. With tract oblique 510  
 At first, as one who sought access, but feard  
 To interrupt, side-long he works his way.  
 As when a Ship by skilful Stearsman wrought  
 Nigh Rivers mouth or Foreland, where the Wind  
 Veres oft, as oft so steers, and shifts her Saile;  
 So varied hee, and of his tortuous Train  
 Curld many a wanton wreath in sight of *Eve*,  
 To lure her Eye; shee busied heard the sound  
 Of rusling Leaves, but minded not, as us'd  
 To such disport before her through the Field, 520  
 From every Beast, more duteous at her call,  
 Then at *Circean* call the Herd disguis'd.  
 Hee boulder now, uncall'd before her stood;  
 But as in gaze admiring: Oft he bowd  
 His turret Crest, and sleek enamel'd Neck,  
 Fawning, and lick'd the ground whereon she trod.  
 His gentle dumb expression turn'd at length  
 The Eye of *Eve* to mark his play; he glad  
 Of her attention gaind, with Serpent Tongue  
 Organic, or impulse of vocal Air, 530  
 His fraudulent temptation thus began.

Wonder not, sovrان Mistress, if perhaps  
 Thou canst, who art sole Wonder, much less arm  
 Thy looks, the Heav'n of mildness, with disdain,  
 Displeas'd that I approach thee thus, and gaze  
 Insatiate, I thus single, nor have feard  
 Thy awful brow, more awful thus retir'd.  
 Fairest resemblance of thy Maker faire,  
 Thee all things living gaze on, all things thine  
 By gift, and thy Celestial Beautie adore 540  
 With ravishment beheld, there best beheld  
 Where universally admir'd: but here  
 In this enclosure wild, these Beasts among,  
 Beholders rude, and shallow to discern  
 Half what in thee is fair, one man except,  
 Who sees thee? (and what is one?) who shouldst be seen  
 A Goddess among Gods, ador'd and serv'd  
 By Angels numberless, thy daily Train.

So glöz'd the Tempter, and his Proem tun'd ;  
 Into the Heart of *Eve* his words made way, 550  
 Though at the voice much marveling ; at length  
 Not unamaz'd she thus in answer spake.  
 What may this mean ? Language of Man pronounc't  
 By Tongue of Brute, and human sense exprest ?  
 The first at lest of these I thought deni'd  
 To Beasts, whom God on thir Creation-Day  
 Created mute to all articulat sound ;  
 The latter I demurre, for in thir looks  
 Much reason, and in thir actions oft appeers.  
 Thee, Serpent, sottlest beast of all the field 560  
 I knew, but not with human voice endu'd ;  
 Redouble then this miracle, and say,  
 How cam'st thou speakable of mute, and how  
 To me so friendly grown above the rest  
 Of brutal kind, that daily are in sight ?  
 Say, for such wonder claims attention due.  
 To whom the guileful Tempter thus reply'd.  
 Empress of this fair World, resplendent *Eve*,  
 Easie to mee it is to tell thee all  
 What thou commandst and right thou shouldst be obeyd : 570  
 I was at first as other Beasts that graze  
 The trodden Herb, of abject thoughts and low,  
 As was my food, nor aught but food discern'd  
 Or Sex, and apprehended nothing high :  
 Till on a day roaving the field, I chanc'd  
 A goodly Tree farr distant to behold  
 Loaden with fruit of fairest colours mixt,  
 Ruddie and Gold : I nearer drew to gaze ;  
 When from the boughes a savorie odour blow'n,  
 Grateful to appetite, more pleas'd my sense 580  
 Then smell of sweetest Fenel, or the Teats  
 Of Ewe or Goat dropping with Milk at Eevn,  
 Unsuckt of Lamb or Kid, that tend thir play.  
 To satisfie the sharp desire I had  
 Of tasting those fair Apples, I resolv'd  
 Not to deferr ; hunger and thirst at once,  
 Powerful perswaders, quick'nd at the scent  
 Of that alluring fruit, urg'd me so keene.  
 About the Mossie Trunk I wound me soon,  
 For high from ground the branches would require 590



Thy utmost reach or *Adams*: Round the Tree  
 All other Beasts that saw, with like desire  
 Longing and envying stood, but could not reach.  
 Amid the Tree now got, where plentie hung  
 Tempting so nigh, to pluck and eat my fill  
 I spar'd not, for such pleasure till that hour  
 At Feed or Fountain never had I found.  
 Sated at length, ere long I might perceive  
 Strange alteration in me, to degree  
 Of Reason in my inward Powers, and Speech 600  
 Wanted not long, though to this shape retaind.  
 Thenceforth to Speculations high or deep  
 I turn'd my thoughts, and with capacious mind  
 Considerd all things visible in Heav'n,  
 Or Earth, or Middle, all things fair and good;  
 But all that fair and good in thy Divine  
 Semblance, and in thy Beauties heav'nly Ray  
 United I beheld; no Fair to thine  
 Equivalent or second, which compel'd  
 Mee thus, though importune perhaps, to come 610  
 And gaze, and worship thee of right declar'd  
 Sovran of Creatures, universal Dame.

So talk'd the spirited sly Snake; and *Eve*  
 Yet more amaz'd unwarie thus reply'd.

Serpent, thy overpraising leaves in doubt  
 The vertue of that Fruit, in thee first prov'd:  
 But say, where grows the Tree, from hence how far?  
 For many are the Trees of God that grow  
 In Paradise, and various, yet unknown  
 To us, in such abundance lies our choice, 620  
 As leaves a greater store of Fruit untoucht,  
 Still hanging incorruptible, till men  
 Grow up to thir provision, and more hands  
 Help to disburden Nature of her Bearth.

To whom the wilie Adder, blithe and glad.  
 Empress, the way is readie, and not long,  
 Beyond a row of Myrtles, on a Flat,  
 Fast by a Fountain, one small Thicket past  
 Of blowing Myrrh and Balme; if thou accept  
 My conduct, I can bring thee thither soon. 630

Lead then, said *Eve*. Hee leading swiftly rowld  
 In tangles, and made intricate seem strait,



To mischief swift. Hope elevates, and joy  
 Bright'ns his Crest, as when a wandring Fire  
 Compact of unctuous vapor, which the Night  
 Condenses, and the cold invirons round,  
 Kindl'd through agitation to a Flame,  
 Which oft, they say, some evil Spirit attends,  
 Hovering and blazing with delusive Light,  
 Misleads th' amaz'd Night-wanderer from his way 640  
 To Boggs and Mires, & oft through Pond or Poole,  
 There swallow'd up and lost, from succour farr.  
 So glister'd the dire Snake, and into fraud  
 Led *Eve* our credulous Mother, to the Tree  
 Of prohibition, root of all our woe;  
 Which when she saw, thus to her guide she spake.

Serpent, we might have spar'd our coming hither,  
 Fruitless to me, though Fruit be here to excess,  
 The credit of whose vertue rest with thee,  
 Wondrous indeed, if cause of such effects. 650  
 But of this Tree we may not taste nor touch;  
 God so commanded, and left that Command  
 Sole Daughter of his voice; the rest, we live  
 Law to our selves, our Reason is our Law.

To whom the 'Tempter guilefully repli'd.  
 Indeed? hath God then said that of the Fruit  
 Of all these Garden Trees ye shall not eate,  
 Yet Lords declar'd of all in Earth or Aire?

To whom thus *Eve* yet sinless. Of the Fruit  
 Of each Tree in the Garden we may eate, 660  
 But of the Fruit of this fair Tree amidst  
 The Garden, God hath said, Ye shall not eate  
 Thereof, nor shall ye touch it, least ye die.

She scarce had said, though brief, when now more bold  
 The Tempter, but with shew of Zeale and Love  
 To Man, and indignation at his wrong,  
 New part puts on, and as to passion mov'd,  
 Fluctuats disturbd, yet comely, and in act  
 Rais'd, as of som great matter to begin.  
 As when of old som Orator renound 670  
 In *Athens* or free *Rome*, where Eloquence  
 Flourishd, since mute, to som great cause address,  
 Stood in himself collected, while each part,  
 Motion, each act won audience ere the tongue,

Sometimes in highth began, as no delay  
Of Preface brooking through his Zeal of Right.  
So standing, moving, or to highth upgrown  
The Tempter all impassiond thus began.

O Sacred, Wise, and Wisdom-giving Plant,  
Mother of Science, Now I feel thy Power 680  
Within me cleere, not onely to discern  
Things in thir Causes, but to trace the wayes  
Of highest Agents, deemd however wise.

Queen of this Universe, doe not believe  
Those rigid threats of Death; ye shall not Die:  
How should ye? by the Fruit? it gives you Life  
To Knowledge: By the Threatner? look on mee,  
Mee who have touch'd and tasted, yet both live,  
And life more perfet have attaind then Fate 690  
Meant mee, by ventring higher then my Lot.

Shall that be shut to Man, which to the Beast  
Is open? or will God incense his ire  
For such a petty Trespass, and not praise  
Rather your dauntless vertue, whom the pain  
Of Death denounc't, whatever thing Death be,  
Deterred not from atchieving what might leade  
To happier life, knowledge of Good and Evil;  
Of good, how just? of evil, if what is evil  
Be real, why not known, since easier shunn'd?  
God therefore cannot hurt ye, and be just; 700  
Not just, not God; not feard then, nor obeid:

Your feare it self of Death removes the feare.  
Why then was this forbid? Why but to awe,  
Why but to keep ye low and ignorant,  
His worshippers; he knows that in the day  
Ye Eate thereof, your Eyes that seem so cleere,  
Yet are but dim, shall perfetly be then  
Op'nd and cleerd, and ye shall be as Gods,  
Knowing both Good and Evil as they know.  
That ye should be as Gods, since I as Man, 710  
Internal Man, is but proportion meet,  
I of brute human, yee of human Gods.

So ye shall die perhaps, by putting off  
Human, to put on Gods, death to be wisht,  
Though threat'nd, which no worse then this can bring.  
And what are Gods that Man may not become

As they, participating God-like food?  
 The Gods are first, and that advantage use  
 On our belief, that all from them proceeds;  
 I question it, for this fair Earth I see, 720  
 Warm'd by the Sun, producing every kind,  
 Them nothing: If they all things, who enclos'd  
 Knowledge of Good and Evil in this Tree,  
 That whoso eats thereof, forthwith attains  
 Wisdom without their leave? and wherein lies  
 Th' offence, that Man should thus attain to know?  
 What can your knowledge hurt him, or this Tree  
 Impart against his will if all be his?  
 Or is it envie, and can envie dwell  
 In heav'nly breasts? these, these and many more 730  
 Causes import your need of this fair Fruit.  
 Goddess humane, reach then, and freely taste.

He ended, and his words replete with guile  
 Into her heart too easie entrance won:  
 Fixt on the Fruit she gaz'd, which to behold  
 Might tempt alone, and in her ears the sound  
 Yet rung of his perswasive words, impregn'd  
 With Reason, to her seeming, and with Truth;  
 Meanwhile the hour of Noon drew on, and wak'd  
 An eager appetite, rais'd by the smell 740  
 So savorie of that Fruit, which with desire,  
 Inclinal now grown to touch or taste,  
 Solicited her longing eye; yet first  
 Pausing a while, thus to her self she mus'd.

Great are thy Vertues, doubtless, best of Fruits,  
 Though kept from Man, & worthy to be admir'd,  
 Whose taste, too long forborn, at first assay  
 Gave elocution to the mute, and taught  
 The Tongue not made for Speech to speak thy praise:  
 Thy praise hee also who forbids thy use, 750  
 Conceales not from us, naming thee the Tree  
 Of Knowledge, knowledge both of good and evil;  
 Forbids us then to taste, but his forbidding  
 Commends thee more, while it inferrs the good  
 By thee communicated, and our want:  
 For good unknown, sure is not had, or had  
 And yet unknown, is as not had at all.  
 In plain then, what forbids he but to know,

Forbids us good, forbids us to be wise?  
Such prohibitions binde not. But if Death 760  
Bind us with after-bands, what profits then  
Our inward freedom? In the day we eate  
Of this fair Fruit, our doom is, we shall die.

How dies the Serpent? hee hath eat'n and lives,  
And knows, and speaks, and reasons, and discernes,  
Irrational till then. For us alone

Was death invented? or to us deni'd

This intellectual food, for beasts reserv'd?

For Beasts it seems: yet that one Beast which first  
Hath tasted, envies not, but brings with joy 770

The good befall'n him, Author unsuspect,  
Friendly to man, farr from deceit or guile.

What fear I then, rather what know to feare

Under this ignorance of Good and Evil,

Of God or Death, of Law or Penaltie?

Here grows the Cure of all, this Fruit Divine,

Fair to the Eye, inviting to the Taste,

Of vertue to make wise: what hinders then

To reach, and feed at once both Bodie and Mind?

So saying, her rash hand in evil hour 780

Forth reaching to the Fruit, she pluck'd, she eat:

Earth felt the wound, and Nature from her seat

Sighing through all her Works gave signs of woe,

That all was lost. Back to the Thicket slunk

The guiltie Serpent, and well might, for *Eve*

Intent now wholly on her taste, naught else

Regarded, such delight till then, as seemd,

In Fruit she never tasted, whether true

Or fansied so, through expectation high

Of knowledg, nor was God-head from her thought. 790

Greedily she ingorg'd without restraint,

And knew not eating Death: Sate at length,

And hight'nd as with Wine, jocond and boon,

Thus to her self she pleasingly began.

O Sovran, vertuous, precious of all Trees

In Paradise, of operation blest

To Sapience, hitherto obscur'd, infam'd,

And thy fair Fruit let hang, as to no end

Created; but henceforth my early care,

Not without Song, each Morning, and due praise 800

Shall tend thee, and the fertil burden ease  
 Of thy full branches offer'd free to all;  
 Till dieted by thee I grow mature  
 In knowledge, as the Gods who all things know;  
 Though others envie what they cannot give;  
 For had the gift bin theirs, it had not here  
 Thus grown. Experience, next to thee I owe,  
 Best guide; not following thee, I had remaind  
 In ignorance, thou op'nst Wisdoms way,  
 And giv'st access, though secret she retire.

810

And I perhaps am secret; Heav'n is high,  
 High and remote to see from thence distinct  
 Each thing on Earth; and other care perhaps  
 May have diverted from continual watch  
 Our great Forbidder, safe with all his Spies  
 About him. But to *Adam* in what sort

Shall I appeer? shall I to him make known  
 As yet my change, and give him to partake  
 Full happiness with mee, or rather not,  
 But keep the odds of Knowledge in my power  
 Without Copartner? so to add what wants  
 In Femal Sex, the more to draw his Love,  
 And render me more equal, and perhaps,  
 A thing not undesireable, sometime  
 Superior: for inferior who is free?

820

This may be well: but what if God have seen  
 And Death ensue? then I shall be no more,  
 And *Adam* wedded to another *Eve*,  
 Shall live with her enjoying, I extinct;

A death to think. Confirm'd then I resolve,  
*Adam* shall share with me in bliss or woe:  
 So dear I love him, that with him all deaths  
 I could endure, without him live no life.

830

So saying, from the Tree her step she turnd,  
 But first low Reverence don, as to the power  
 That dwelt within, whose presence had infus'd  
 Into the plant sciential sap, deriv'd  
 From Nectar, drink of Gods. *Adam* the while  
 Waiting desirous her return, had wove  
 Of choicest Flours a Garland to adorne  
 Her Tresses, and her rural labours crown  
 As Reapers oft are wont thir Harvest Queen.

840

Great joy he promis'd to his thoughts, and new  
Solace in her return, so long delay'd;  
Yet oft his heart, divine of somthing ill,  
Misgave him; hee the faultring measure felt;  
And forth to meet her went, the way she took  
That Morn when first they parted; by the Tree  
Of Knowledge he must pass, there he her met,  
Scarse from the Tree returning; in her hand  
A bough of fairest fruit that downie smil'd,  
New gatherd, and ambrosial smell diffus'd.  
To him she hasted, in her face excuse  
Came Prologue, and Apologie to prompt,  
Which with bland words at will she thus address.

850

Hast thou not wonderd, *Adam*, at my stay?  
Thee I have misst, and thought it long, depriv'd  
Thy presence, agonie of love till now  
Not felt, nor shall be twice, for never more  
Mean I to trie, what rash untri'd I sought,  
The paine of absence from thy sight. But strange

860

Hath bin the cause, and wonderful to heare:  
This Tree is not as we are told, a Tree  
Of danger tasted, nor to evil unknown  
Op'ning the way, but of Divine effect  
To open Eyes, and make them Gods who taste;  
And hath bin tasted such: the Serpent wise,  
Or not restrain'd as wee, or not obeying,  
Hath eat'n of the fruit, and is become,  
Not dead, as we are threatn'd, but thenceforth  
Endu'd with human voice and human sense,  
Reasoning to admiration, and with mee  
Persuasively hath so prevaild, that I  
Have also tasted, and have also found  
Th' effects to correspond, opener mine Eyes  
Dimm erst, dilated Spirits, ampler Heart,  
And growing up to Godhead; which for thee  
Chiefly I sought, without thee can despise.  
For bliss, as thou hast part, to me is bliss,  
Tedious, unshar'd with thee, and odious soon.

870

Thou therfore also taste, that equal Lot  
May joyne us, equal Joy, as equal Love;  
Least thou not tasting, different degree  
Disjoyne us, and I then too late renounce

880

*Paradise Lost.*

Deitie for thee, when Fate will not permit.

Thus *Eve* with Countenance blithe her storie told ;  
 But in her Cheek distemper flushing glowd.  
 On th' other side, *Adam*, soon as he heard  
 The fatal Trespass done by *Eve*, amaz'd,  
 Astonied stood and Blank, while horror chill  
 Ran through his veins, and all his joynts relax'd ;  
 From his slack hand the Garland wreath'd for *Eve*  
 Down drop'd, and all the faded Roses shed :  
 Speechless he stood and pale, till thus at length  
 First to himself he inward silence broke.

890

O fairest of Creation, last and best  
 Of all Gods Works, Creature in whom excell'd  
 Whatever can to sight or thought be formd,  
 Holy, divine, good, amiable, or sweet !  
 How art thou lost, how on a sudden lost,  
 Defac't, deflourd, and now to Death devote ?  
 Rather how hast thou yeelded to transgress  
 The strict forbiddance, how to violate  
 The sacred Fruit forbidd'n ! som cursed fraud  
 Of Enemie hath beguil'd thee, yet unknown,  
 And mee with thee hath ruind, for with thee  
 Certain my resolution is to Die ;  
 How can I live without thee, how forgoe  
 Thy sweet Converse and Love so dearly joyn'd,  
 To live again in these wilde Woods forlorn ?  
 Should God create another *Eve*, and I  
 Another Rib afford, yet loss of thee  
 Would never from my heart ; no no, I feel  
 The Link of Nature draw me : Flesh of Flesh,  
 Bone of my Bone thou art, and from thy State  
 Mine never shall be parted, bliss or woe.

900

910

So having said, as one from sad dismay  
 Recomforted, and after thoughts disturbd  
 Submitting to what seemd remediless,  
 Thus in calme mood his Words to *Eve* he turnd.

920

Bold deed thou hast presum'd, adventurous *Eve*  
 And peril great provok't, who thus hast dar'd  
 Had it bin onely coveting to Eye  
 That sacred Fruit, sacred to abstinence,  
 Much more to taste it under banne to touch.



But past who can recall, or don undoe?  
 Not God Omnipotent, nor Fate, yet so  
 Perhaps thou shalt not Die, perhaps the Fact  
 Is not so hainous now, foretasted Fruit,  
 Profan'd first by the Serpent, by him first 930  
 Made common and unhallowd ere our taste;  
 Nor yet on him found deadly, he yet lives,  
 Lives, as thou saidst, and gaines to live as Man  
 Higher degree of Life, inducement strong  
 To us, as likely tasting to attaine  
 Proportional ascent, which cannot be  
 But to be Gods, or Angels Demi-gods.  
 Nor can I think that God, Creator wise,  
 Though threatning, will in earnest so destroy  
 Us his prime Creatures, dignifi'd so high, 940  
 Set over all his Works, which in our Fall,  
 For us created, needs with us must faile,  
 Dependent made; so God shall uncreate,  
 Be frustrate, do, undo, and labour loose,  
 Not well conceav'd of God, who though his Power  
 Creation could repeate, yet would be loath  
 Us to abolish, least the Adversary  
 Triumph and say; Fickle their State whom God  
 Most Favors, who can please him long? Mee first  
 He ruind, now Mankind; whom will he next? 950  
 Matter of scorne, not to be given the Foe.  
 However I with thee have fixt my Lot,  
 Certain to undergoe like doom, if Death  
 Consort with thee, Death is to mee as Life;  
 So forcible within my heart I feel  
 The Bond of Nature draw me to my owne,  
 My own in thee, for what thou art is mine;  
 Our State cannot be severd, we are one,  
 One Flesh; to loose thee were to loose my self.  
 So *Adam*, and thus *Eve* to him repli'd. 960  
 O glorious trial of exceeding Love,  
 Illustrious evidence, example high!  
 Ingaging me to emulate, but short  
 Of thy perfection, how shall I attaine,  
*Adam*, from whose deare side I boast me sprung,  
 And gladly of our Union heare thee speak,  
 One Heart, one Soul in both; whereof good proof



This day affords, declaring thee resolv'd,  
 Rather then Death or aught then Death more dread  
 Shall separate us, linkt in Love so deare,  
 To undergoe with mee one Guilt, one Crime,  
 If any be, of tasting this fair Fruit,  
 Whose vertue, for of good still good proceeds,  
 Direct, or by occasion hath presented  
 This happie trial of thy Love, which else  
 So eminently never had bin known.  
 Were it I thought Death menac't would ensue  
 This my attempt, I would sustain alone  
 The worst, and not perswade thee, rather die  
 Deserted, then oblige thee with a fact  
 Pernicious to thy Peace, chiefly assur'd  
 Remarkably so late of thy so true,  
 So faithful Love unequald; but I feel  
 Farr otherwise th' event, not Death, but Life  
 Augmented, op'nd Eyes, new Hopes, new Joyes,  
 Taste so Divine, that what of sweet before  
 Hath toucht my sense, flat seems to this, and harsh.  
 On my experience, *Adam*, freely taste,  
 And fear of Death deliver to the Windes.

970

980

So saying, she embrac'd him, and for joy  
 Tenderly wept, much won that he his Love  
 Had so enobl'd, as of choice to incurr  
 Divine displeasure for her sake, or Death.  
 In recompence (for such compliance bad  
 Such recompence best merits) from the bough  
 She gave him of that fair enticing Fruit  
 With liberal hand: he scrupl'd not to eat  
 Against his better knowledge, not deceav'd,  
 But fondly overcome with Femal charm.  
 Earth trembl'd from her entrails, as again  
 In pangs, and Nature gave a second groan,  
 Skie lowr'd, and muttering Thunder, som sad drops  
 Wept at compleating of the mortal Sin  
 Original; while *Adam* took no thought,  
 Eating his fill, nor *Eve* to iterate  
 Her former trespass fear'd, the more to soothe  
 Him with her lov'd societie, that now  
 As with new Wine intoxicated both  
 They swim in mirth, and fansie that they feel

990

1000

Divinitie within them breeding wings 1010  
 Wherewith to scorn the Earth: but that false Fruit  
 Farr other operation first displaid,  
 Carnal desire enflaming, hee on *Eve*  
 Began to cast lascivious Eyes, she him  
 As wantonly repaid; in Lust they burne:  
 Till *Adam* thus 'gan *Eve* to dalliance move.

*Eve*, now I see thou art exact of taste,  
 And elegant, of Sapience no small part,  
 Since to each meaning savour we apply,  
 And Palate call judicious; I the praise 1020  
 Yeild thee, so well this day thou hast purvey'd.  
 Much pleasure we have lost, while we abstain'd  
 From this delightful Fruit, nor known till now  
 True relish, tasting; if such pleasure be  
 In things to us forbidden, it might be wish'd,  
 For this one Tree had bin forbidden ten.  
 But come, so well refresh't, now let us play,  
 As meet is, after such delicious Fare;  
 For never did thy Beautie since the day  
 I saw thee first and wedded thee, adorn'd 1030  
 With all perfections, so enflame my sense  
 With ardor to enjoy thee, fairer now  
 Than ever, bountie of this vertuous Tree.

So said he, and forbore not glance or toy  
 Of amorous intent, well understood  
 Of *Eve*, whose Eye darted contagious Fire.  
 Her hand he seisd, and to a shadie bank,  
 Thick overhead with verdant roof imbowl'd  
 He led her nothing loath; Flours were the Couch,  
 Pansies, and Violets, and Asphodel, 1040  
 And Hyacinth, Earths freshest softest lap.  
 There they thir fill of Love and Loves disport  
 Took largely, of thir mutual guilt the Seale,  
 The solace of thir sin, till dewie sleep  
 Oppress'd them, wearied with thir amorous play.  
 Soon as the force of that fallacious Fruit,  
 That with exhilerating vapour bland  
 About thir spirits had plaid, and inmost powers  
 Made erre, was now exhal'd, and grosser sleep  
 Bred of unkindly fumes, with conscious dreams 1050  
 Encumberd, now had left them, up they rose

As from unrest, and each the other viewing,  
 Soon found thir Eyes how op'nd, and thir minds  
 How dark'nd ; innocence, that as a veile  
 Had shadow'd them from knowing ill, was gon,  
 Just confidence, and native righteousness,  
 And honour from about them, naked left  
 To guiltie shame hee cover'd, but his Robe  
 Uncover'd more. So rose the *Danite* strong  
*Herculean Samson* from the Harlot-lap  
 Of *Philistean Dalilah*, and wak'd  
 Shorn of his strength, They destitute and bare  
 Of all thir vertue : silent, and in face  
 Confounded long they sate, as struck'n mute,  
 Till *Adam*, though not less then *Eve* abasht,  
 At length gave utterance to these words constraind.

1060

O *Eve*, in evil hour thou didst give eare  
 To that false Worm, of whomsoever taught  
 To counterfet Mans voice, true in our Fall,  
 False in our promis'd Rising ; since our Eyes  
 Op'nd we find indeed, and find we know  
 Both Good and Evil, Good lost, and Evil got,  
 Bad Fruit of Knowledge, if this be to know,  
 Which leaves us naked thus, of Honour void,  
 Of Innocence, of Faith, of Puritie,  
 Our wonted Ornaments now soild and staind,  
 And in our Faces evident the signes  
 Of foul concupiscence ; whence evil store ;  
 Even shame, the last of evils ; of the first  
 Be sure then. How shall I behold the face  
 Henceforth of God or Angel, earst with joy  
 And rapture so oft beheld ? those heav'nly shapes  
 Will dazle now this earthly, with thir blaze  
 Insufferably bright. O might I here  
 In solitude live savage, in some glade  
 Obscur'd, where highest Woods impenetrable  
 To Starr or Sun-light, spread thir umbrage broad,  
 And brown as Evening : Cover me ye Pines,  
 Ye Cedars, with innumerable boughs  
 Hide me, where I may never see them more.  
 But let us now, as in bad plight, devise  
 What best may for the present serve to hide  
 The Parts of each from other, that seem most

1070

1080

1090

To shame obnoxious, and unseemliest seen,  
Some Tree whose broad smooth Leaves together sowd,  
And girded on our loyns, may cover round  
Those middle parts, that this new commer, Shame,  
There sit not, and reproach us as unclean.

So counsel'd hee, and both together went  
Into the thickest Wood, there soon they chose 1100  
The Figtree, not that kind for Fruit renown'd,  
But such as at this day to *Indians* known  
In *Malabar* or *Decan* spreads her Armes  
Braunching so broad and long, that in the ground  
The bended Twigs take root, and Daughters grow  
About the Mother Tree, a Pillard shade  
High overarch't, and echoing Walks between ;  
There oft the *Indian* Herdsman shunning heate  
Shelters in coole, and tends his pasturing Herds  
At Loopholes cut through thickest shade : Those Leaves 1110  
They gatherd, broad as *Amazonian* Targe,  
And with what skill they had, together sowd,  
To gird thir waste, vain Covering if to hide  
Thir guilt and dreaded shame ; O how unlike  
To that first naked Glorie. Such of late  
*Columbus* found th' *American* so girt  
With featherd Cincture, naked else and wilde  
Among the Trees on Iles and woodie Shores.  
Thus fenc't, and as they thought, thir shame in part  
Coverd, but not at rest or ease of Mind, 1120  
They sate them down to weep, nor onely Teares  
Raind at thir Eyes, but high Winds worse within  
Began to rise, high Passions, Anger, Hate,  
Mistrust, Suspicion, Discord, and shook sore  
Thir inward State of Mind, calme Region once  
And full of Peace, now tost and turbulent :  
For Understanding rul'd not, and the Will  
Heard not her lore, both in subjection now  
To sensual Appetite, who from beneath  
Usurping over sovran Reason claimd 1130  
Superior sway : From thus distemperd brest,  
*Adam*, estrang'd in look and alterd stile,  
Speech intermitted thus to *Eve* renewd.

Would thou hadst heark'nd to my words, & stai'd  
With me, as I besought thee, when that strange

*Paradise Lost.*

Desire of wandring this unhappie Morn,  
 I know not whence possessd thee ; we had then  
 Remaind still happie, not as now, despoild  
 Of all our good, sham'd, naked, miserable.  
 Let none henceforth seek needless cause to approve 1140  
 The Faith they owe ; when earnestly they seek  
 Such proof, conclude, they then begin to faile.

To whom soon mov'd with touch of blame thus *Eve*.  
 What words have past thy Lips, *Adam* severe,  
 Imput'st thou that to my default, or will  
 Of wandering, as thou call'st it, which who knows  
 But might as ill have happ'nd thou being by,  
 Or to thy self perhaps : hadst thou bin there,  
 Or here th' attempt, thou could'st not have discern'd  
 Fraud in the Serpent, speaking as he spake ; 1150  
 No ground of enmitie between us known,  
 Why hee should mean me ill, or seek to harme.  
 Was I to have never parted from thy side?  
 As good have grown there still a liveless Rib.  
 Being as I am, why didst not thou the Head  
 Command me absolutely not to go,  
 Going into such danger as thou saidst?  
 Too facil then thou didst not much gainsay,  
 Nay, didst permit, approve, and fair dismiss.  
 Hadst thou bin firm and fixt in thy dissent, 1160  
 Neither had I transgress'd, nor thou with mee.

To whom then first incenst *Adam* repli'd.  
 Is this the Love, is this the recompence  
 Of mine to thee, ingrateful *Eve*, exprest  
 Immutable when thou wert lost, not I,  
 Who might have liv'd and joyd immortal bliss,  
 Yet willingly chose rather Death with thee :  
 And am I now upbraided, as the cause  
 Of thy transgressing? not enough severe,  
 It seems, in thy restraint : what could I more? 1170  
 I warn'd thee, I admonish'd thee, foretold  
 The danger, and the lurking Enemy  
 That lay in wait ; beyond this had bin force,  
 And force upon free Will hath here no place.  
 But confidence then bore thee on, secure  
 Either to meet no danger, or to finde  
 Matter of glorious trial ; and perhaps

I also err'd in overmuch admiring  
What seemd in thee so perfect, that I thought  
No evil durst attempt thee, but I rue  
That errour now, which is become my crime,  
And thou th' accuser. 'Thus it shall befall  
Him who to worth in Women overtrusting  
Lets her Will rule; restraint she will not brook,  
And left to her self, if evil thence ensue,  
Shee first his weak indulgence will accuse.

1180

Thus they in mutual accusation spent  
The fruitless hours, but neither self-condemning,  
And of thir vain contest appeer'd no end.

*The End of the Ninth Book.*

# PARADISE LOST.

## BOOK X.

### THE ARGUMENT.

Mans transgression known, the Guardian Angels forsake Paradise, and return up to Heaven to approve thir vigilance, and are approv'd, God declaring that The entrance of Satan could not be by them prevented. He sends his Son to judge the Transgressors, who descends and gives Sentence accordingly; then in pity cloaths them both, and reascends. Sin and Death sitting till then at the Gates of Hell, by wondrous sympathie feeling the success of Satan in this new World, and the sin by Man there committed, resolve to sit no longer confin'd in Hell, but to follow Satan thir Sire up to the place of Man: To make the way easier from Hell to this World to and fro, they pave a broad Highway or Bridge over Chaos, according to the Track that Satan first made; then preparing for Earth, they meet him proud of his success returning to Hell; thir mutual gratulation. Satan arrives at Pandemonium, in full assembly relates with boasting his success against Man; instead of applause is entertained with a general hiss by all his audience, transform'd with himself also suddenly into Serpents, according to his doom giv'n in Paradise; then deluded with a shew of the forbidden Tree springing up before them, they greedily reaching to take of the Fruit, chew dust and bitter ashes. The proceedings of Sin and Death; God foretels the final Victory of his Son over them, and the renewing of all things; but for the present commands his Angels to make several alterations in the Heavens and Elements. Adam more and more perceiving his fall'n condition heavily bewailes, rejects the condolment of Eve; she persists and at length appeases him: then to evade the Curse likely to fall on thir Ofspring, proposes to Adam violent wayes, which he approves not, but conceiving better hope, puts her in mind of the late Promise made them, that her Seed should be reveng'd on the Serpent, and exhorts her with him to seek Peace of the offended Deity, by repentance and supplication.



MEANWHILE the hainous and despoightfull act  
 Of *Satan* done in Paradise, and how  
 Hee in the Serpent had perverted *Eve*,  
 Her Husband shee, to taste the fatall fruit,  
 Was known in Heav'n; for what can scape the Eye  
 Of God All-seeing, or deceave his Heart  
 Omniscient, who in all things wise and just,  
 Hinder'd not *Satan* to attempt the minde  
 Of Man, with strength entire, and free Will arm'd,  
 Complete t<sup>o</sup> have discover'd and repulst 10  
 Whatever wiles of Foe or seeming Friend.  
 For still they knew, and ought to have still remember'd  
 The high Injunction not to taste that Fruit,  
 Whoever tempted; which they not obeying,  
 Incurr'd, what could they less, the penaltie,  
 And manifold in sin, deserv'd to fall.  
 Up into Heav'n from Paradise in hast  
 Th' Angelic Guards ascended, mute and sad  
 For Man, for of his state by this they knew,  
 Much wondring how the suttle Fiend had stoln 20  
 Entrance unseen. Soon as th' unwelcome news  
 From Earth arriv'd at Heaven Gate, displeas'd  
 All were who heard, dim sadness did not spare  
 That time Celestial visages, yet mixt  
 With pitie, violated not thir bliss.  
 About the new-arriv'd, in multitudes  
 Th' ethereal People ran, to hear and know  
 How all befell: they towards the Throne Supream  
 Accountable made haste to make appear  
 With righteous plea, thir utmost vigilance, 30  
 And easily approv'd; when the most High  
 Eternal Father from his secret Cloud,  
 Amidst in Thunder utter'd thus his voice.

Assembl'd Angels, and ye Powers return'd  
 From unsuccessful charge, be not dismaid,  
 Nor troubl'd at these tidings from the Earth,  
 Which your sincerest care could not prevent,  
 Foretold so lately what would come to pass,  
 When first this Tempter cross'd the Gulf from Hell  
 I told ye then he should prevail and speed 40  
 On his bad Errand, Man should be seduc't  
 And flatter'd out of all, believing lies



Against his Maker ; no Decree of mine  
 Concurring to necessitate his Fall,  
 Or touch with lightest moment of impulse  
 His free Will, to her own inclining left  
 In even scale. But fall'n he is, and now  
 What rests, but that the mortal Sentence pass  
 On his transgression, Death denounc't that day,  
 Which he presumes already vain and void, 50  
 Because not yet inflicted, as he fear'd,  
 By some immediate stroak ; but soon shall find  
 Forbearance no acquittance ere day end.  
 Justice shall not return as bountie scorn'd.  
 But whom send I to judge them? whom but thee  
 Vicegerent Son, to thee I have transferr'd  
 All Judgement, whether in Heav'n, or Earth, or Hell.  
 Easie it may be seen that I intend  
 Mercie colleague with Justice, sending thee  
 Mans Friend, his Mediator, his design'd 60  
 Both Ransom and Redeemer voluntarie,  
 And destin'd Man himself to judge Man fall'n.

So spake the Father, and unfolding bright  
 Toward the right hand his Glorie, on the Son  
 Blaz'd forth unclouded Deitie ; he full  
 Resplendent all his Father manifest  
 Express'd, and thus divinely answer'd milde.

Father Eternal, thine is to decree,  
 Mine both in Heav'n and Earth to do thy will  
 Supream, that thou in mee thy Son belov'd 70  
 Mayst ever rest well pleas'd. I go to judge  
 On Earth these thy transgressors, but thou knowst,  
 Whoever judg'd, the worst on mee must light,  
 When time shall be, for so I undertook  
 Before thee ; and not repenting, this obtaine  
 Of right, that I may mitigate thir doom  
 On me deriv'd, yet I shall temper so  
 Justice with Mercie, as may illustrate most  
 Them fully satisfied, and thee appease.  
 Attendance none shall need, nor Train, where none 80  
 Are to behold the Judgement, but the judg'd,  
 Those two ; the third best absent is condemn'd,  
 Convict by flight, and Rebel to all Law

58 may] might 1674

Conviction to the Serpent none belongs.

Thus saying, from his radiant Seat he rose  
Of high collateral glorie: him Thrones and Powers,  
Princedom, and Dominations ministrant  
Accompanied to Heaven Gate, from whence  
*Eden* and all the Coast in prospect lay.  
Down he descended strait: the speed of Gods 90  
Time counts not, though with swiftest minutes wing'd.  
Now was the Sun in Western cadence low  
From Noon, and gentle Aires due at thir hour  
To fan the Earth now wak'd, and usher in  
The Eevning coole when he from wrauth more coole  
Came the mild Judge and Intercessor both  
To sentence Man: the voice of God they heard  
Now walking in the Garden, by soft windes  
Brought to thir Ears, while day declin'd, they heard  
And from his presence hid themselves among 100  
The thickest Trees, both Man and Wife, till God  
Approaching, thus to *Adam* call'd aloud.

Where art thou *Adam*, wont with joy to meet  
My coming seen far off? I miss thee here,  
Not pleas'd, thus entertaind with solitude,  
Where obvious dutie erewhile appear'd unsaught:  
Or come I less conspicuous, or what change  
Absents thee, or what chance detains? Come forth.  
He came, and with him *Eve*, more loth, though first  
To offend, discount'nanc't both, and discompos'd; 110  
Love was not in thir looks, either to God  
Or to each other, but apparent guilt,  
And shame, and perturbation, and despaire,  
Anger, and obstinacie, and hate, and guile.  
Whence *Adam* faultring long, thus answer'd brief.

I heard thee in the Garden, and of thy voice  
Affraid, being naked, hid my self. To whom  
The gracious Judge without revile repli'd.

My voice thou oft hast heard, and hast not fear'd,  
But still rejoyc't, how is it now become 120  
So dreadful to thee? that thou art naked, who  
Hath told thee? hast thou eaten of the Tree  
Whereof I gave thee charge thou shouldst not eat?

To whom thus *Adam* sore beset repli'd.  
O Heav'n! in evil strait this day I stand

Before my Judge, either to undergoe  
 My self the total Crime, or to accuse  
 My other self, the partner of my life;  
 Whose failing, while her Faith to me remaines,  
 I should conceal, and not expose to blame 130  
 By my complaint; but strict necessitie  
 Subdues me, and calamitous constraint,  
 Least on my head both sin and punishment,  
 However insupportable, be all  
 Devolv'd; though should I hold my peace, yet thou  
 Wouldst easily detect what I conceale.  
 This Woman whom thou mad'st to be my help,  
 And gav'st me as thy perfect gift, so good,  
 So fit, so acceptable, so Divine,  
 That from her hand I could suspect no ill, 140  
 And what she did, whatever in it self,  
 Her doing seem'd to justifie the deed;  
 Shee gave me of the Tree, and I did eate.

To whom the sovran Presence thus repli'd.  
 Was shee thy God, that her thou didst obey  
 Before his voice, or was shee made thy guide,  
 Superior, or but equal, that to her  
 Thou did'st resigne thy Manhood, and the Place  
 Wherein God set thee above her made of thee,  
 And for thee, whose perfection farr excell'd 150  
 Hers in all real dignitie: Adorn'd  
 She was indeed, and lovely to attract  
 Thy Love, not thy Subjection, and her Gifts  
 Were such as under Government well seem'd,  
 Unseemly to beare rule, which was thy part  
 And person, had'st thou known thy self aright.

So having said, he thus to *Eve* in few:  
 Say Woman, what is this which thou hast done?  
 To whom sad *Eve* with shame nigh overwhelm'd,  
 Confessing soon, yet not before her Judge 160  
 Bold or loquacious, thus abasht repli'd.

The Serpent me beguil'd and I did eate.  
 Which when the Lord God heard, without delay  
 To Judgement he proceeded on th' accus'd  
 Serpent though brute, unable to transerre  
 The Guilt on him who made him instrument  
 Of mischief, and polluted from the end

Of his Creation ; justly then accurst,  
As vitiated in Nature : more to know  
Concern'd not Man (since he no further knew) 170  
Nor alter'd his offence ; yet God at last  
To Satan first in sin his doom apply'd  
Though in mysterious terms, judg'd as then best :  
And on the Serpent thus his curse let fall.

Because thou hast done this, thou art accurst  
Above all Cattel, each Beast of the Field ;  
Upon thy Belly groveling thou shalt goe,  
And dust shalt eat all the days of thy Life.  
Between Thee and the Woman I will put  
Enmitie, and between thine and her Seed ; 180  
Her Seed shall bruise thy head, thou bruise his heel.

So spake this Oracle, then verifi'd  
When *Jesus* son of *Mary* second *Eve*,  
Saw Satan fall like Lightning down from Heav'n,  
Prince of the Aire ; then rising from his Grave  
Spoild Principalities and Powers, triumpht  
In open shew, and with ascention bright  
Captivity led captive through the Aire,  
The Realme it self of Satan long usurpt,  
Whom he shall tread at last under our feet ; 190  
Eevn hee who now foretold his fatal bruise,  
And to the Woman thus his Sentence turn'd.

Thy sorrow I will greatly multiplie  
By thy Conception ; Childern thou shalt bring  
In sorrow forth, and to thy Husbands will  
Thine shall submit, hee over thee shall rule.

On *Adam* last thus judgement he pronounc'd.  
Because thou hast heark'nd to the voice of thy Wife,  
And eaten of the Tree concerning which  
I charg'd thee, saying : Thou shalt not eate thereof, 200  
Curs'd is the ground for thy sake, thou in sorrow  
Shalt eate thereof all the days of thy Life ;  
Thornes also and Thistles it shall bring thee forth  
Unbid, and thou shalt eate th' Herb of th' Field,  
In the sweat of thy Face shalt thou eate Bread,  
Till thou return unto the ground, for thou  
Out of the ground wast taken, know thy Birth,  
For dust thou art, and shalt to dust returne.

So judg'd he Man, both Judge and Saviour sent,

*Paradise Lost.*

And th' instant stroke of Death denounc't that day 210  
 Remov'd farr off; then pitting how they stood  
 Before him naked to the aire, that now  
 Must suffer change, disdain'd not to begin  
 Thenceforth the forme of servant to assume,  
 As when he wash'd his servants feet, so now  
 As Father of his Familie he clad  
 Thir nakedness with Skins of Beasts, or slain,  
 Or as the Snake with youthful Coate repaid;  
 And thought not much to cloath his Enemies:  
 Nor hee thir outward onely with the Skins 220  
 Of Beasts, but inward nakedness, much more  
 Opprobrious, with his Robe of righteousness,  
 Araying cover'd from his Fathers sight.  
 To him with swift ascent he up return'd,  
 Into his blissful bosom reassum'd  
 In glory as of old, to him appeas'd  
 All, though all-knowing, what had past with Man  
 Recounted, mixing intercession sweet.  
 Meanwhile ere thus was sin'd and judg'd on Earth,  
 Within the Gates of Hell sate Sin and Death, 230  
 In counterview within the Gates, that now  
 Stood open wide, belching outrageous flame  
 Farr into *Chaos*, since the Fiend pass'd through,  
 Sin opening, who thus now to Death began.

O Son, why sit we here each other viewing  
 Idly, while Satan our great Author thrives  
 In other Worlds, and happier Seat provides  
 For us his ofspring deare? It cannot be  
 But that success attends him; if mishap,  
 Ere this he had return'd, with fury driv'n 240  
 By his Avenger, since no place like this  
 Can fit his punishment, or their revenge.  
 Methinks I feel new strength within me rise,  
 Wings growing, and Dominion giv'n me large  
 Beyond this Deep; whatever drawes me on,  
 Or sympathie, or som connatural force  
 Powerful at greatest distance to unite  
 With secret amity things of like kinde  
 By secretest conveyance. Thou my Shade  
 Inseparable must with mee along: 250

241 Avenger] Avengers 1674

For Death from Sin no power can separate.  
 But least the difficultie of passing back  
 Stay his retorne perhaps over this Gulfe  
 Impassable, impervious, let us try  
 Adventrous work, yet to thy power and mine  
 Not unagreeable, to found a path  
 Over this Maine from Hell to that new World  
 Where Satan now prevailes, a Monument  
 Of merit high to all th' infernal Host,  
 Easing thir passage hence, for intercourse,  
 Or transmigration, as thir lot shall lead.  
 Nor can I miss the way, so strongly drawn  
 By this new felt attraction and instinct.

260

Whom thus the meager Shadow answerd soon.  
 Goe whither Fate and inclination strong  
 Leads thee, I shall not lag behinde, nor erre  
 The way, thou leading, such a sent I draw  
 Of carnage, prey innumerable, and taste  
 The savour of Death from all things there that live :  
 Nor shall I to the work thou enterprisest  
 Be wanting, but afford thee equal aid.

270

So saying, with delight he snuff'd the smell  
 Of mortal change on Earth. As when a flock  
 Of ravenous Fowl, though many a League remote,  
 Against the day of Battel, to a Field,  
 Where Armies lie encampt, come flying, lur'd  
 With sent of living Carcasses design'd  
 For death, the following day, in bloodie fight.  
 So sented the grim Feature, and upturn'd  
 His Nostril wide into the murkie Air,  
 Sagacious of his Quarrey from so farr.  
 Then Both from out Hell Gates into the waste  
 Wide Anarchie of *Chaos* damp and dark  
 Flew divers, & with Power (thir Power was great)  
 Hovering upon the Waters ; what they met  
 Solid or slimie, as in raging Sea  
 Tost up and down, together crowded drove  
 From each side shoaling towards the mouth of Hell.  
 As when two Polar Winds blowing adverse  
 Upon the *Cronian* Sea, together drive  
 Mountains of Ice, that stop th' imagin'd way  
 Beyond *Petsora* Eastward, to the rich

280

290

*Cathaian* Coast. The aggregated Soyle  
 Death with his Mace petrific, cold and dry,  
 As with a Trident smote, and fix't as firm  
 As *Delos* floating once; the rest his look  
 Bound with *Gorgonian* rigor not to move,  
 And with *Asphaltic* slime; broad as the Gate,  
 Deep to the Roots of Hell the gather'd beach  
 They fasten'd, and the Mole immense wrought on 300  
 Over the foaming deep high Archt, a Bridge  
 Of length prodigious joyning to the Wall  
 Immoveable of this now fenceless world  
 Forfeit to Death; from hence a passage broad,  
 Smooth, easie, inoffensive down to Hell.  
 So, if great things to small may be compar'd,  
*Xerxes*, the Libertie of *Greece* to yoke,  
 From *Susa* his *Memnonian* Palace high  
 Came to the Sea, and over *Hellespont*  
 Bridging his way, *Europe* with *Asia* joyn'd, 310  
 And scourg'd with many a stroak th' indignant waves.  
 Now had they brought the work by wondrous Art  
 Pontifical, a ridge of pendent Rock  
 Over the vext Abyss, following the track  
 Of *Satan*, to the self same place where hee  
 First lighted from his Wing, and landed safe  
 From out of *Chaos* to the outside bare  
 Of this round World: with Pinns of Adamant  
 And Chains they made all fast, too fast they made  
 And durable; and now in little space 320  
 The Confines met of Empyrean Heav'n  
 And of this World, and on the left hand Hell  
 With long reach interpos'd; three sev'ral wayes  
 In sight, to each of these three places led.  
 And now thir way to Earth they had descri'd,  
 To Paradise first tending, when behold  
*Satan* in likeness of an Angel bright  
 Betwixt the *Centaure* and the *Scorpion* stearing  
 His *Zenith*, while the Sun in *Aries* rose:  
 Disguis'd he came, but those his Childern dear 330  
 Thir Parent soon discern'd, though in disguise.  
 Hee, after *Eve* seduc't, unminded slunk  
 Into the Wood fast by, and changing shape  
 To observe the sequel, saw his guileful act



By *Eve*, though all unweeting, seconded  
 Upon her Husband, saw thir shame that sought  
 Vain covertures; but when he saw descend  
 The Son of God to judge them, terrifi'd  
 Hee fled, not hoping to escape, but shun  
 The present, fearing guiltie what his wrauth  
 Might suddenly inflict; that past, return'd  
 By Night, and listning where the hapless Paire  
 Sate in thir sad discourse, and various plaint,  
 Thence gatherd his own doom, which understood  
 Not instant, but of future time. With joy  
 And tidings fraught, to Hell he now return'd,  
 And at the brink of *Chaos*, neer the foot  
 Of this new wondrous Pontifice, unhop't  
 Met who to meet him came, his Ofspring dear.  
 Great joy was at thir meeting, and at sight  
 Of that stupendious Bridge his joy encreas'd.  
 Long hee admiring stood, till Sin, his faire  
 Inchanting Daughter, thus the silence broke.

O Parent, these are thy magnific deeds,  
 Thy Trophies, which thou view'st as not thine own,  
 Thou art thir Author and prime Architect:  
 For I no sooner in my Heart divin'd,  
 My Heart, which by a secret harmonie  
 Still moves with thine, joyn'd in connexion sweet,  
 That thou on Earth hadst prosper'd, which thy looks  
 Now also evidence, but straight I felt  
 Though distant from thee Worlds between, yet felt  
 That I must after thee with this thy Son;  
 Such fatal consequence unites us three:  
 Hell could no longer hold us in her bounds,  
 Nor this unvoyageable Gulf obscure  
 Detain from following thy illustrious track.  
 Thou hast atchiev'd our libertie, confin'd  
 Within Hell Gates till now, thou us impow'rd  
 To fortifie thus farr, and overlay  
 With this portentous Bridge the dark Abyss.  
 Thine now is all this World, thy vertue hath won  
 What thy hands builded not, thy Wisdom gain'd  
 With odds what Warr hath lost, and fully aveng'd  
 Our foile in Heav'n; here thou shalt Monarch reign,  
 There didst not; there let him still Victor sway,



As Battel hath adjudg'd, from this new World  
 Retiring, by his own doom alienated,  
 And henceforth Monarchie with thee divide  
 Of all things, parted by th' Empyrean bounds, 380  
 His Quadrature, from thy Orbicular World,  
 Or trie thee now more dang'rous to his Throne.

Whom thus the Prince of Darkness answerd glad.  
 Fair Daughter, and thou Son and Grandchild both,  
 High proof ye now have giv'n to be the Race  
 Of *Satan* (for I glorie in the name,  
 Antagonist of Heav'n's Almighty King)  
 Amply have merited of me, of all  
 Th' Infernal Empire, that so neer Heav'n's dore  
 Triumphal with triumphal act have met, 390  
 Mine with this glorious Work, & made one Realm  
 Hell and this World, one Realm, one Continent  
 Of easie thorough-fare. Therefore while I  
 Descend through Darkness, on your Rode with ease  
 To my associate Powers, them to acquaint  
 With these successes, and with them rejoyce,  
 You two this way, among those numerous Orbs  
 All yours, right down to Paradise descend;  
 There dwell & Reign in bliss, thence on the Earth  
 Dominion exercise and in the Aire, 400  
 Chiefly on Man, sole Lord of all declar'd,  
 Him first make sure your thrall, and lastly kill.  
 My Substitutes I send ye, and Create  
 Plenipotent on Earth, of matchless might  
 Issuing from mee: on your joynt vigor now  
 My hold of this new Kingdom all depends,  
 Through Sin to Death expos'd by my exploit.  
 If your joynt power prevaile, th' affaires of Hell  
 No detriment need feare, goe and be strong.

So saying he dismiss'd them, they with speed 410  
 Thir course through thickest Constellations held  
 Spreading thir bane; the blasted Starrs lookt wan,  
 And Planets, Planet-strook, real Eclips  
 Then sufferd. Th' other way *Satan* went down  
 The Causey to Hell Gate; on either side  
 Disparted *Chaos* over built exclaimd,  
 And with rebounding surge the barrs assaild,

397 those] these 1674

# Paradise Lost.

[BK. X.

That scorn'd his indignation: through the Gate,  
Wide open and unguarded, *Satan* pass'd,  
And all about found desolate; for those 420  
Appointed to sit there, had left thir charge,  
Flown to the upper World; the rest were all  
Farr to the inland retir'd, about the walls  
Of *Pandæmonium*, Citie and proud seate  
Of *Lucifer*, so by allusion calld,  
Of that bright Starr to *Satan* paragond.  
There kept thir Watch the Legions, while the Grand  
In Council sate, sollicitous what chance  
Might intercept thir Emperour sent, so hee  
Departing gave command, and they observ'd. 430  
As when the *Tartar* from his *Russian* Foe  
By *Astracan* over the Snowie Plaines  
Retires, or *Bactrian* Sophi from the hornes  
Of *Turkish* Crescent, leaves all waste beyond  
The Realme of *Aladule*, in his retreat  
To *Tauris* or *Casbeen*. So these the late  
Heav'n-banisht Host, left desert utmost Hell  
Many a dark League, reduc't in careful Watch  
Round thir Metropolis, and now expecting  
Each hour thir great adventurer from the search 440  
Of Forrein Worlds: he through the midst unmarkt,  
In shew plebeian Angel militant  
Of lowest order, past; and from the dore  
Of that *Plutonian* Hall, invisible  
Ascended his high Throne, which under state  
Of richest texture spred, at th' upper end  
Was plac't in regal lustre. Down a while  
He sate, and round about him saw unseen:  
At last as from a Cloud his fulgent head  
And shape Starr-bright appeer'd, or brighter, clad 450  
With what permissive glory since his fall  
Was left him, or false glitter: All amaz'd  
At that so sudden blaze the *Stygian* throng  
Bent thir aspect, and whom they wish'd beheld,  
Thir mighty Chief returnd: loud was th' acclaime:  
Forth rush'd in haste the great consulting Peers,  
Rais'd from thir dark *Divan*, and with like joy  
Congratulant approach'd him, who with hand  
Silence, and with these words attention won.

Thrones, Dominations, Princedoms, Vertues, Powers, 460  
 For in possession such, not onely of right,  
 I call ye and declare ye now, returnd  
 Successful beyond hope, to lead ye forth  
 Triumphant out of this infernal Pit  
 Abominable, accurst, the house of woe,  
 And Dungeon of our Tyrant: Now possess,  
 As Lords, a spacious World, to our native Heaven  
 Little inferiour, by my adventure hard  
 With peril great atchiev'd. Long were to tell  
 What I have don, what sufferd, with what paine 470  
 Voyag'd th' unreal, vast, unbounded deep  
 Of horrible confusion, over which  
 By Sin and Death a broad way now is pav'd  
 To expedite your glorious march; but I  
 Toild out my uncouth passage, forc't to ride  
 Th' untractable Abyesse, plung'd in the womb  
 Of unoriginal *Night* and *Chaos* wilde,  
 That jealous of thir secrets fiercely oppos'd  
 My journey strange, with clamorous uproare  
 Protesting Fate supream; thence how I found 480  
 The new created World, which fame in Heav'n  
 Long had foretold, a Fabrick wonderful  
 Of absolute perfection, therein Man  
 Plac't in a Paradise, by our exile  
 Made happie: Him by fraud I have seduc'd  
 From his Creator, and the more to increase  
 Your wonder, with an Apple; he thereat  
 Offended, worth your laughter, hath giv'n up  
 Both his beloved Man and all his World,  
 To Sin and Death a prey, and so to us, 490  
 Without our hazard, labour, or allarme,  
 To range in, and to dwell, and over Man,  
 To rule, as over all he should have rul'd.  
 True is, mee also he hath judg'd, or rather  
 Mee not, but the brute Serpent in whose shape  
 Man I deceav'd: that which to mee belongs,  
 Is enmity, which he will put between  
 Mee and Mankinde; I am to bruise his heel;  
 His Seed, when is not set, shall bruise my head:  
 A World who would not purchase with a bruise, 500  
 Or much more grievous pain? Ye have th' account

Of my performance: What remains, ye Gods,  
But up and enter now into full bliss.

So having said, a while he stood, expecting  
Thir universal shout and high applause  
To fill his eare, when contrary he hears  
On all sides, from innumerable tongues  
A dismal universal hiss, the sound  
Of public scorn; he wonderd, but not long  
Had leasure, wondring at himself now more;  
His Visage drawn he felt to sharp and spare,  
His Armes clung to his Ribs, his Leggs entwining  
Each other, till supplanted down he fell

510

A monstrous Serpent on his Belly prone,  
Reluctant, but in vaine, a greater power  
Now rul'd him, punisht in the shape he sin'd,  
According to his doom: he would have spoke,  
But hiss for hiss returnd with forked tongue  
To forked tongue, for now were all transform'd  
Alike, to Serpents all as accessories

520

To his bold Riot: dreadful was the din  
Of hissing through the Hall, thick swarming now  
With complicated monsters, head and taile,  
Scorpion and Asp, and *Amphisbæna* dire,  
*Cerastes* hornd, *Hydrus*, and *Ellops* drear,  
And *Dipsas* (Not so thick swarm'd once the Soil  
Bedropt with blood of *Gorgon*, or the Isle  
*Ophiusa*) but still greatest hee the midst,

Now Dragon grown, larger then whom the Sun  
Ingenderd in the *Pythian* Vale on slime,  
Huge *Python*, and his Power no less he seem'd  
Above the rest still to retain; they all

530

Him follow'd issuing forth to th' open Field,  
Where all yet left of that revolted Rout  
Heav'n-fall'n, in station stood or just array,  
Sublime with expectation when to see  
In Triumph issuing forth thir glorious Chief;  
They saw, but other sight instead, a crowd  
Of ugly Serpents; horror on them fell,

And horrid sympathie; for what they saw,  
They felt themselvs now changing; down thir arms,  
Down fell both Spear and Shield, down they as fast,  
And the dire hiss renew'd, and the dire form

540

*Paradise Lost.*

Catcht by Contagion, like in punishment,  
 As in thir crime. Thus was th' applause they meant,  
 Turnd to exploding hiss, triumph to shame  
 Cast on themselves from thir own mouths. There stood  
 A Grove hard by, sprung up with this thir change,  
 His will who reigns above, to aggravate  
 Thir penance, laden with fair Fruit, like that 550  
 Which grew in Paradise, the bait of *Eve*  
 Us'd by the Tempter: on that prospect strange  
 Thir earnest eyes they fix'd, imagining  
 For one forbidden Tree a multitude  
 Now ris'n, to work them furdur woe or shame;  
 Yet parcht with scalding thirst and hunger fierce,  
 Though to delude them sent, could not abstain,  
 But on they rould in heaps, and up the Trees  
 Climbing, sat thicker than the snakie locks  
 That curld *Megara*: greedily they pluck'd 560  
 The Frutage fair to sight, like that which grew  
 Neer that bituminous Lake where *Sodom* flam'd;  
 This more delusive, not the touch, but taste  
 Deceav'd; they fondly thinking to allay  
 Thir appetite with gust, instead of Fruit  
 Chewd bitter Ashes, which th' offended taste  
 With spattering noise rejected: oft they assayd,  
 Hunger and thirst constraining, drugd as oft,  
 With hatefullest disrelish writh'd thir jaws  
 With soot and cinders fill'd; so oft they fell 570  
 Into the same illusion, not as Man  
 Whom they triumph'd once lapst. Thus were they plagu'd  
 And worn with Famin, long and ceaseless hiss,  
 Till thir lost shape, permitted, they resum'd,  
 Yearly enjoynd, some say, to undergo  
 This annual humbling certain number'd days,  
 To dash thir pride, and joy for Man seduc't.  
 However some tradition they dispers'd  
 Among the Heathen of thir purchase got,  
 And Fabl'd how the Serpent, whom they call'd 580  
*Ophion* with *Eurynome*, the wide-  
 Encroaching *Eve* perhaps, had first the rule  
 Of high *Olympus*, thence by *Saturn* driv'n  
 And *Ops*, ere yet *Dictæan Jove* was born.  
 Mean while in Paradise the hellish pair

Too soon arriv'd, *Sin* there in power before,  
Once actual, now in body, and to dwell  
Habitual habitant; behind her *Death*  
Close following pace for pace, not mounted yet  
On his pale Horse: to whom *Sin* thus began. 590

Second of *Satan* sprung, all conquering *Death*,  
What thinkst thou of our Empire now, though earnd  
With travail difficult, not better farr  
Then stil at Hels dark threshold to have sate watch,  
Unnam'd, undreaded, and thy self half starv'd?

Whom thus the Sin-born Monster answerd soon.  
To mee, who with eternal Famin pine,  
Alike is Hell, or Paradise, or Heaven,  
There best, where most with ravin I may meet;  
Which here, though plenteous, all too little seems 600  
To stuff this Maw, this vast unhide-bound Corps.

To whom th' incestuous Mother thus repli'd.  
Thou therefore on these Herbs, and Fruits, & Flours  
Feed first, on each Beast next, and Fish, and Fowle,  
No homely morsels, and whatever thing  
The Sithe of Time mowes down, devour unspar'd,  
Till I in Man residing through the Race,  
His thoughts, his looks, words, actions all infect,  
And season him thy last and sweetest prey.

This said, they both betook them several wayes, 610  
Both to destroy, or unimmortal make  
All kinds, and for destruction to mature  
Sooner or later; which th' Almighty seeing  
From his transcendent Seat the Saints among,  
To those bright Orders uttered thus his voice.

See with what heat these Dogs of Hell advance  
To waste and havoc yonder World, which I  
So fair and good created, and had still  
Kept in that state, had not the folly of Man  
Let in these wastful Furies, who impute 620  
Folly to mee, so doth the Prince of Hell  
And his Adherents, that with so much ease  
I suffer them to enter and possess  
A place so heav'nly, and conniving seem  
To gratifie my scornful Enemies,  
That laugh, as if transported with some fit  
Of Passion, I to them had quitted all,



At random yeilded up to their misrule ;  
 And know not that I call'd and drew them thither  
 My Hell-hounds, to lick up the draff and filth 630  
 Which mans polluting Sin with taint hath shed  
 On what was pure, till cramm'd and gorg'd, nigh burst  
 With suckt and glutted offal, at one sling  
 Of thy victorious Arm, well-pleasing Son,  
 Both *Sin*, and *Death*, and yawning *Grave* at last  
 Through *Chaos* hurld, obstruct the mouth of Hell  
 For ever, and seal up his ravenous Jawes.  
 Then Heav'n and Earth renewd shall be made pure  
 To sanctitie that shall receive no staine :  
 Till then the Curse pronounc't on both precedes. 640

Hee ended, and the heav'nly Audience loud  
 Sung *Halleluia*, as the sound of Seas,  
 Through multitude that sung : Just are thy ways,  
 Righteous are thy Decrees on all thy Works ;  
 Who can extenuate thee ? Next, to the Son,  
 Destin'd restorer of Mankind, by whom  
 New Heav'n and Earth shall to the Ages rise,  
 Or down from Heav'n descend. Such was thir song,  
 While the Creator calling forth by name  
 His mightie Angels gave them several charge, 650  
 As sorted best with present things. The Sun  
 Had first his precept so to move, so shine,  
 As might affect the Earth with cold and heat  
 Scarce tollerable, and from the North to call  
 Decrepit Winter, from the South to bring  
 Solstitial summers heat. To the blanc Moone  
 Her office they prescrib'd, to th' other five  
 Thir planetarie motions and aspects  
 In *Sextile*, *Square*, and *Trine*, and *Opposite*,  
 Of noxious efficacie, and when to joyne 660  
 In Synod unbenigne, and taught the fixt  
 Thir influence malignant when to showre,  
 Which of them rising with the Sun, or falling,  
 Should prove tempestuous : To the Winds they set  
 Thir corners, when with bluster to confound  
 Sea, Aire, and Shoar, the Thunder when to rowle  
 With terror through the dark Aereal Hall.  
 Some say he bid his Angels turne ascanse  
 The Poles of Earth twice ten degrees and more

From the Suns Axle; they with labour push'd 670  
 Oblique the Centric Globe: Som say the Sun  
 Was bid turn Reines from th' Equinoctial Rode  
 Like distant breadth to *Taurus* with the Seav'n  
*Atlantick* Sisters, and the *Spartan* Twins  
 Up to the *Tropic* Crab; thence down amaine  
 By *Leo* and the *Virgin* and the *Scales*,  
 As deep as *Capricorne*, to bring in change  
 Of Seasons to each Clime; else had the Spring  
 Perpetual smil'd on Earth with vernant Flours,  
 Equal in Days and Nights, except to those 680  
 Beyond the Polar Circles; to them Day  
 Had unbenighted shon, while the low Sun  
 To recompence his distance, in thir sight  
 Had rounded still th' *Horizon*, and not known  
 Or East or West, which had forbid the Snow  
 From cold *Estotiland*, and South as farr  
 Beneath *Magellan*. At that tasted Fruit  
 The Sun, as from *Thyestean* Banquet, turn'd  
 His course intended; else how had the World  
 Inhabited, though sinless, more then now, 690  
 Avoided pinching cold and scorching heate?  
 These changes in the Heav'ns, though slow, produc'd  
 Like change on Sea and Land, sidereal blast,  
 Vapour, and Mist, and Exhalation hot,  
 Corrupt and Pestilent: Now from the North  
 Of *Norumbega*, and the *Samoed* shoar  
 Bursting thir brazen Dungeon, armd with ice  
 And snow and haile and stormie gust and flaw,  
*Boreas* and *Cæcias* and *Argestes* loud  
 And *Thrascias* rend the Woods and Seas upturn; 700  
 With adverse blast up-turns them from the South  
*Notus* and *Afer* black with thundrous Clouds  
 From *Serrationa*; thwart of these as fierce  
 Forth rush the *Levant* and the *Ponent* Windes  
*Eurus* and *Zephir* with thir lateral noise,  
*Sirocco*, and *Libecchio*. Thus began  
 Outrage from liveless things; but Discord first  
 Daughter of Sin, among th' irrational,  
 Death introduc'd through fierce antipathie:  
 Beast now with Beast gan war, & Fowle with Fowle, 710  
 And Fish with Fish; to graze the Herb all leaving,



Devour'd each other; nor stood much in awe  
 Of Man, but fled him, or with count'nance grim  
 Glar'd on him passing: these were from without  
 The growing miseries, which *Adam* saw  
 Alreadie in part, though hid in gloomiest shade,  
 To sorrow abandon'd, but worse felt within,  
 And in a troubl'd Sea of passion tost,  
 Thus to disburd'n sought with sad complaint.

O miserable of happie! is this the end  
 Of this new glorious World, and mee so late  
 The Glory of that Glory, who now becom  
 Accurst of blessed, hide me from the face  
 Of God, whom to behold was then my highth  
 Of happiness: yet well, if here would end  
 The miserie, I deserv'd it, and would beare  
 My own deservings; but this will not serve;  
 All that I eate or drink, or shall beget,  
 Is propagated curse. O voice once heard  
 Delightfully, *Encrease and multiply*,  
 Now death to heare! for what can I encrease  
 Or multiplie, but curses on my head?  
 Who of all Ages to succeed, but feeling  
 The evil on him brought by me, will curse  
 My Head, Ill fare our Ancestor impure,  
 For this we may thank *Adam*; but his thanks  
 Shall be the execration; so besides  
 Mine own that bide upon me, all from mee  
 Shall with a fierce reflux on mee redound,  
 On mee as on thir natural center light  
 Heavie, though in thir place. O fleeting joyes  
 Of Paradise, deare bought with lasting woes!  
 Did I request thee, Maker, from my Clay  
 To mould me Man, did I sollicite thee  
 From darkness to promote me, or here place  
 In this delicious Garden? as my Will  
 Concurd not to my being, it were but right  
 And equal to reduce me to my dust,  
 Desirous to resign, and render back  
 All I receav'd, unable to performe  
 Thy terms too hard, by which I was to hold  
 The good I sought not. To the loss of that,  
 Sufficient penaltie, why hast thou added

720

730

740

750

The sense of endless woes? inexplicable  
Thy Justice seems; yet to say truth, too late,  
I thus contest; then should have been refus'd  
Those terms whatever, when they were propos'd:  
Thou didst accept them; wilt thou enjoy the good,  
Then cavil the conditions? and though God  
Made thee without thy leave, what if thy Son  
Prove disobedient, and reprov'd, retort, 760  
Wherefore didst thou beget me? I sought it not:  
Wouldst thou admit for his contempt of thee  
That proud excuse? yet him not thy election,  
But Natural necessity begot.  
God made thee of choice his own, and of his own  
To serve him, thy reward was of his grace,  
Thy punishment then justly is at his Will.  
Be it so, for I submit, his doom is fair,  
That dust I am, and shall to dust returne: 770  
O welcom hour whenever! why delays  
His hand to execute what his Decree  
Fix'd on this day? why do I overlive,  
Why am I mockt with death, and length'nd out  
To deathless pain? how gladly would I meet  
Mortalitie my sentence, and be Earth  
Insensible, how glad would lay me down  
As in my Mothers lap? there I should rest  
And sleep secure; his dreadful voice no more  
Would Thunder in my ears, no fear of worse 780  
To mee and to my ofspring would torment me  
With cruel expectation. Yet one doubt  
Pursues me still, least all I cannot die,  
Least that pure breath of Life, the Spirit of Man  
Which God inspir'd, cannot together perish  
With this corporeal Clod; then in the Grave,  
Or in some other dismal place, who knows  
But I shall die a living Death? O thought  
Horrid, if true! yet why? it was but breath  
Of Life that sinn'd; what dies but what had life 790  
And sin? the Bodie properly hath neither.  
All of me then shall die: let this appease  
The doubt, since humane reach no further knows.  
For though the Lord of all be infinite,  
Is his wrauth also? be it, man is not so,

But mortal doom'd. How can he exercise  
 Wrath without end on Man whom Death must end?  
 Can he make deathless Death? that were to make  
 Strange contradiction, which to God himself  
 Impossible is held, as Argument 800  
 Of weakness, not of Power. Will he draw out,  
 For angers sake, finite to infinite  
 In punisht man, to satisfie his rigour  
 Satisfi'd never; that were to extend  
 His Sentence beyond dust and Natures Law,  
 By which all Causes else according still  
 To the reception of thir matter act,  
 Not to th' extent of thir own Spheare. But say  
 That Death be not one stroak, as I suppos'd,  
 Bereaving sense, but endless miserie 810  
 From this day onward, which I feel begun  
 Both in me, and without me, and so last  
 To perpetuitie; Ay me, that fear  
 Comes thundring back with dreadful revolution  
 On my defensless head; both Death and I  
 Am found Eternal, and incorporate both,  
 Nor I on my part single, in mee all  
 Posteritie stands curst: Fair Patrimonie  
 That I must leave ye, Sons; O were I able  
 To waste it all my self, and leave ye none! 820  
 So disinherited how would ye bless  
 Me now your Curse! Ah, why should all mankind  
 For one mans fault thus guiltless be condemn'd,  
 If guiltless? But from mee what can proceed,  
 But all corrupt, both Mind and Will deprav'd,  
 Not to do onely, but to will the same  
 With me; how can they acquitted stand  
 In sight of God? Him after all Disputes  
 Forc't I absolve: all my evasions vain  
 And reasonings, though through Mazes, leads me still 830  
 But to my own conviction: first and last  
 On mee, mee onely, as the sourse and spring  
 Of all corruption, all the blame lights due;  
 So might the wrauth. Fond wish! couldst thou support  
 That burden heavier then the Earth to bear,  
 Then all the World much heavier, though divided

827 they acquitted] they then acquitted 1674

With that bad Woman? Thus what thou desir'st,  
And what thou fearest, alike destroyes all hope  
Of refuge, and concludes thee miserable  
Beyond all past example and future,

840

To *Satan* onely like both crime and doom.  
O Conscience, into what Abyss of fears  
And horrors hast thou driv'n me; out of which  
I find no way, from deep to deeper plung'd!

Thus *Adam* to himself lamented loud  
Through the still Night, not now, as ere man fell,  
Wholsom and cool, and mild, but with black Air  
Accompanied, with damps and dreadful gloom,  
Which to his evil Conscience represented

850

All things with double terror: On the ground  
Outstretcht he lay, on the cold ground, and oft  
Curs'd his Creation, Death as oft accus'd  
Of tardie execution, since denounc't

The day of his offence. Why comes not Death,  
Said hee, with one thrice acceptable stroke  
To end me? Shall Truth fail to keep her word,  
Justice Divine not hast'n to be just?

But Death comes not at call, Justice Divine  
Mends not her slowest pace for prayers or cries.

O Woods, O Fountains, Hillocks, Dales and Bowrs, 860  
With other echo late I taught your Shades  
To answer, and resound farr other Song.

Whom thus afflicted when sad *Eve* beheld,  
Desolate where she sate, approaching nigh,  
Soft words to his fierce passion she assay'd:  
But her with stern regard he thus repell'd.

Out of my sight, thou Serpent, that name best  
Befits thee with him leagu'd, thy self as false  
And hateful; nothing wants, but that thy shape,  
Like his, and colour Serpentine may shew  
Thy inward fraud, to warn all Creatures from thee  
Henceforth; least that too heav'nly form, pretended  
To hellish falshood, snare them. But for thee

870

I had persisted happie, had not thy pride  
And wandring vanitie, when lest was safe,  
Rejected my forewarning, and disdain'd  
Not to be trusted, longing to be seen  
Though by the Devil himself, him overweening

To over-reach, but with the Serpent meeting  
 Fool'd and beguill'd, by him thou, I by thee, 880  
 To trust thee from my side, imagin'd wise,  
 Constant, mature, proof against all assaults,  
 And understood not all was but a shew  
 Rather then solid vertu, all but a Rib  
 Crooked by nature, bent, as now appears,  
 More to the part sinister from me drawn,  
 Well if thrown out, as supernumerarie  
 To my just number found. O why did God,  
 Creator wise, that peopl'd highest Heav'n  
 With Spirits Masculine, create at last 890  
 This noveltie on Earth, this fair defect  
 Of Nature, and not fill the World at once  
 With Men as Angels without Feminine,  
 Or find some other way to generate  
 Mankind? this mischief had not then befall'n,  
 And more that shall befall, innumerable  
 Disturbances on Earth through Femal snares,  
 And straight conjunction with this Sex: for either  
 He never shall find out fit Mate, but such  
 As some misfortune brings him, or mistake, 900  
 Or whom he wishes most shall seldom gain  
 Through her perverseness, but shall see her gaind  
 By a farr worse, or if she love, withheld  
 By Parents, or his happiest choice too late  
 Shall meet, alreadie linkt and Wedlock-bound  
 To a fell Adversarie, his hate or shame:  
 Which infinite calamitie shall cause  
 To Humane life, and houshold peace confound.

He added not, and from her turn'd, but *Eve*  
 Not so repulst, with Tears that ceas'd not flowing, 910  
 And tresses all disorderd, at his feet  
 Fell humble, and imbracing them, besaught  
 His peace, and thus proceeded in her plaint.

Forsake me not thus, *Adam*, witness Heav'n  
 What love sincere, and reverence in my heart  
 I beare thee, and unweeting have offended,  
 Unhappilie deceav'd; thy suppliant  
 I beg, and clasp thy knees; bereave me not,  
 Whereon I live, thy gentle looks, thy aid,  
 Thy counsel in this uttermost distress, 920

My onely strength and stay : forlorn of thee,  
 Whither shall I betake me, where subsist?  
 While yet we live, scarce one short hour perhaps,  
 Between us two let there be peace, both joyning,  
 As joyn'd in injuries, one enmitie  
 Against a Foe by doom express assign'd us,  
 That cruel Serpent : On me exercise not  
 Thy hatred for this miserie befall'n,  
 On me already lost, mee, then thy self  
 More miserable ; both have sin'd, but thou  
 Against God onely, I against God and thee,  
 And to the place of judgement will return,  
 There with my cries importune Heaven, that all  
 The sentence from thy head remov'd may light  
 On me, sole cause to thee of all this woe,  
 Mee mee onely just object of his ire.

930

She ended weeping, and her lowlie plight,  
 Immoveable till peace obtain'd from fault  
 Acknowledg'd and deplor'd, in *Adam* wrought  
 Commiseration ; soon his heart relented  
 Towards her, his life so late and sole delight,  
 Now at his feet submissive in distress,  
 Creature so faire his reconciliation seeking,  
 His counsel whom she had displeas'd, his aide ;  
 As one disarm'd, his anger all he lost,  
 And thus with peaceful words uprais'd her soon.

940

Unwarie, and too desirous, as before,  
 So now of what thou knowst not, who desir'st  
 The punishment all on thy self ; alas,  
 Beare thine own first, ill able to sustaine  
 His full wrauth whose thou feelst as yet lest part,  
 And my displeasure bearest so ill. If Prayers  
 Could alter high Decrees, I to that place  
 Would speed before thee, and be louder heard,  
 That on my head all might be visited,  
 Thy frailtie and infirmer Sex forgiv'n,  
 To me committed and by me expos'd.  
 But rise, let us no more contend, nor blame  
 Each other, blam'd enough elsewhere, but strive  
 In offices of Love, how we may light'n  
 Each others burden in our share of woe ;  
 Since this days Death denounc't, if ought I see,

950

960

*Paradise Lost.*

Will prove no sudden, but a slow-pac't evill,  
 A long days dying to augment our paine,  
 And to our Seed (O hapless Seed!) deriv'd.

To whom thus *Eve*, recovering heart, repli'd.

*Adam*, by sad experiment I know

How little weight my words with thee can finde,

Found so erroneous, thence by just event

Found so unfortunate; nevertheless,

970

Restor'd by thee, vile as I am, to place

Of new acceptance, hopeful to regaine

Thy Love, the sole contentment of my heart,

Living or dying from thee I will not hide

What thoughts in my unquiet brest are ris'n,

Tending to som relief of our extremes,

Or end, though sharp and sad, yet tolerable,

As in our evils, and of easier choice.

If care of our descent perplex us most,

Which must be born to certain woe, devourd

980

By Death at last, and miserable it is

To be to others cause of misery,

Our own begotten, and of our Loines to bring

Into this cursed World a woful Race,

That after wretched Life must be at last

Food for so foule a Monster, in thy power

It lies, yet ere Conception to prevent

The Race unblest, to being yet unbegot.

Childless thou art, Childless remaine:

So Death shall be deceav'd his glut, and with us two 990

Be forc'd to satisfie his Rav'nous Maw.

But if thou judge it hard and difficult,

Conversing, looking, loving, to abstain

From Loves due Rites, Nuptial embraces sweet,

And with desire to languish without hope,

Before the present object languishing

With like desire, which would be miserie

And torment less then none of what we dread,

Then both our selves and Seed at once to free

From what we fear for both, let us make short,

1000

Let us seek Death, or hee not found, supply

With our own hands his Office on our selves;

Why stand we longer shivering under feares,

That shew no end but Death, and have the power,



Of many wayes to die the shortest choosing,  
Destruction with destruction to destroy.

She ended heer, or vehement despaire  
Broke off the rest; so much of Death her thoughts  
Had entertaind, as di'd her Cheeks with pale.  
But *Adam* with such counsel nothing sway'd,  
To better hopes his more attentive minde  
Labouring had rais'd, and thus to *Eve* repli'd.

1010

*Eve*, thy contempt of life and pleasure seems  
To argue in thee somthing more sublime  
And excellent then what thy minde contemnes;  
But self-destruction therefore saught, refutes  
That excellence thought in thee, and implies,  
Not thy contempt, but anguish and regret  
For loss of life and pleasure overlov'd.

Or if thou covet death, as utmost end  
Of miserie, so thinking to evade

1020

The penaltie pronounc't, doubt not but God  
Hath wiselier arm'd his vengeful ire then so  
To be forestall'd; much more I fear least Death  
So snatcht will not exempt us from the paine  
We are by doom to pay; rather such acts  
Of contumacie will provoke the highest

To make death in us live: Then let us seek  
Som safer resolution, which methinks

I have in view, calling to minde with heed  
Part of our Sentence, that thy Seed shall bruise

1030

The Serpents head; piteous amends, unless  
Be meant, whom I conjecture, our grand Foe  
*Satan*, who in the Serpent hath contriv'd

Against us this deceit: to crush his head

Would be revenge indeed; which will be lost  
By death brought on our selves, or childless days

Resolv'd, as thou proposest; so our Foe  
Shall scape his punishment ordain'd, and wee  
Instead shall double ours upon our heads.

1040

No more be mention'd then of violence  
Against our selves, and wilful barrenness,  
That cuts us off from hope, and savours onely  
Rancor and pride, impatience and despite,  
Reluctance against God and his just yoke  
Laid on our Necks. Remember with what mild



And gracious temper he both heard and judg'd  
 Without wrauth or reviling; wee expected  
 Immediate dissolution, which we thought  
 Was meant by Death that day, when lo, to thee 1050  
 Pains onely in Child-bearing were foretold,  
 And bringing forth, soon recompenc't with joy,  
 Fruit of thy Womb: On mee the Curse aslope  
 Glanc'd on the ground, with labour I must earne  
 My bread; what harm? Idleness had bin worse;  
 My labour will sustain me; and least Cold  
 Or Heat should injure us, his timely care  
 Hath unbesaught provided, and his hands  
 Cloath'd us unworthie, pitying while he judg'd;  
 How much more, if we pray him, will his ear 1060  
 Be open, and his heart to pitie incline,  
 And teach us further by what means to shun  
 Th' inclement Seasons, Rain, Ice, Hail and Snow,  
 Which now the Skie with various Face begins  
 To shew us in this Mountain, while the Winds  
 Blow moist and keen, shattering the graceful locks  
 Of these fair spreading Trees; which bids us seek  
 Som better shroud, som better warmth to cherish  
 Our Limbs benumm'd, ere this diurnal Starr  
 Leave cold the Night, how we his gather'd beams 1070  
 Reflected, may with matter sere foment,  
 Or by collision of two bodies grinde  
 The Air attrite to Fire, as late the Clouds  
 Justling or pusht with Winds rude in thir shock  
 Tine the slant Lightning, whose thwart flame driv'n down  
 Kindles the gummie bark of Firr or Pine,  
 And sends a comfortable heat from farr,  
 Which might supply the Sun: such Fire to use,  
 And what may else be remedie or cure  
 To evils which our own misdeeds have wrought, 1080  
 Hee will instruct us praying, and of Grace  
 Beseeching him, so as we need not fear  
 To pass commodiously this life, sustain'd  
 By him with many comforts, till we end  
 In dust, our final rest and native home.  
 What better can we do, then to the place  
 Repairing where he judg'd us, prostrate fall  
 Before him reverent, and there confess

## *Paradise Lost.*

[BK. X.]

Humbly our faults, and pardon beg, with tears  
Watering the ground, and with our sighs the Air 1090  
Frequenting, sent from hearts contrite, in sign  
Of sorrow unfeign'd, and humiliation meek.

Undoubtedly he will relent and turn  
From his displeasure; in whose look serene,  
When angry most he seem'd and most severe,  
What else but favor, grace, and mercie shon?

So spake our Father penitent, nor *Eve*  
Felt less remorse: they forthwith to the place  
Repairing where he judg'd them prostrate fell  
Before him reverent, and both confess'd 1100  
Humbly thir faults, and pardon beg'd, with tears  
Watering the ground, and with thir sighs the Air  
Frequenting, sent from hearts contrite, in sign  
Of sorrow unfeign'd, and humiliation meek.

*The End of the Tenth Book.*

# PARADISE LOST.

## BOOK XI.

### THE ARGUMENT.

*The Son of God presents to his Father the Prayers of our first Parents now repenting, and intercedes for them: God accepts them, but declares that they must no longer abide in Paradise; sends Michael with a Band of Cherubim to dispossess them; but first to reveal to Adam future things: Michaels coming down. Adam shews to Eve certain ominous signs; he discerns Michaels approach, goes out to meet him: the Angel denounces thir departure. Eve's Lamentation. Adam pleads, but submits: The Angel leads him up to a high Hill, sets before him in vision what shall happ'n till the Flood.*

THUS they in lowliest plight repentant stood  
Praying, for from the Mercie-seat above  
Prevenient Grace descending had remov'd  
The stonie from thir hearts, and made new flesh  
Regenerate grow instead, that sighs now breath'd  
Unutterable, which the Spirit of prayer  
Inspir'd, and wing'd for Heav'n with speedier flight  
Then loudest Oratorie: yet thir port  
Not of mean suiters, nor important less  
Seem'd thir Petition, then when th' ancient Pair  
In Fables old, less ancient yet then these,  
*Deucalion* and chaste *Pyrrha* to restore  
The Race of Mankind drownd, before the Shrine  
Of *Themis* stood devout. To Heav'n thir prayers  
Flew up, nor misssd the way, by envious windes  
Blow'n vagabond or frustrate: in they passd  
Dimensionless through Heav'nly dores; then clad

10

With incense, where the Golden Altar fum'd,  
By thir great Intercessor, came in sight  
Before the Fathers Throne: Them the glad Son 20  
Presenting, thus to intercede began.

See Father, what first fruits on Earth are sprung  
From thy implanted Grace in Man, these Sighs  
And Prayers, which in this Golden Censer, mixt  
With Incense, I thy Priest before thee bring,  
Fruits of more pleasing savour from thy seed  
Sow'n with contrition in his heart, then those  
Which his own hand manuring all the Trees  
Of Paradise could have produc't, ere fall'n  
From innocence. Now therefore bend thine eare 30  
To supplication, heare his sighs though mute;  
Unskilful with what words to pray, let mee  
Interpret for him, mee his Advocate  
And propitiation, all his works on mee  
Good or not good ingraft, my Merit those  
Shall perfet, and for these my Death shall pay.  
Accept me, and in mee from these receive  
The smell of peace toward Mankinde, let him live  
Before thee reconcil'd, at least his days  
Numberd, though sad, till Death, his doom (which I 40  
To mitigate thus plead, not to reverse)  
To better life shall yeeld him, where with mee  
All my redeemd may dwell in joy and bliss,  
Made one with me as I with thee am one.

To whom the Father, without Cloud, serene.  
All thy request for Man, accepted Son,  
Obtain, all thy request was my Decree:  
But longer in that Paradise to dwell,  
The Law I gave to Nature him forbids:  
Those pure immortal Elements that know 50  
No gross, no unharmonious mixture foule,  
Eject him tainted now, and purge him off  
As a distemper, gross to aire as gross,  
And mortal food, as may dispose him best  
For dissolution wrought by Sin, that first  
Distemperd all things, and of incorrupt  
Corrupted. I at first with two fair gifts  
Created him endowd, with Happiness  
And Immortalitie: that fondly lost,

This other serv'd but to eternize woe ;  
 Till I provided Death ; so Death becomes  
 His final remedie, and after Life  
 Tri'd in sharp tribulation, and refin'd  
 By Faith and faithful works, to second Life,  
 Wak't in the renovation of the just,  
 Resignes him up with Heav'n and Earth renewd.  
 But let us call to Synod all the Blest  
 Through Heavn's wide bounds ; from them I will not hide  
 My judgments, how with Mankind I proceed,  
 As how with peccant Angels late they saw ;  
 And in thir state, though firm, stood more confirmd.

60

70

He ended, and the Son gave signal high  
 To the bright Minister that watch'd, hee blew  
 His Trumpet, heard in *Oreb* since perhaps  
 When God descended, and perhaps once more  
 To sound at general doom. Th' Angelic blast  
 Filld all the Regions : from thir blissful Bows  
 Of *Amarantin* Shade, Fountain or Spring,  
 By the waters of Life, where ere they sate  
 In fellowships of joy : the Sons of Light  
 Hasted, resorting to the Summons high,  
 And took thir Seats ; till from his Throne supream  
 Th' Almighty thus pronounc'd his sovran Will.

80

O Sons, like one of us Man is become  
 To know both Good and Evil, since his taste  
 Of that defended Fruit ; but let him boast  
 His knowledge of Good lost, and Evil got,  
 Happier, had it suffic'd him to have known  
 Good by it self, and Evil not at all.

He sorrows now, repents, and prayes contrite,  
 My motions in him, longer then they move,  
 His heart I know, how variable and vain  
 Self-left. Least therefore his now bolder hand  
 Reach also of the Tree of Life, and eat,  
 And live for ever, dream at least to live  
 For ever, to remove him I decree,  
 And send him from the Garden forth to Till  
 The Ground whence he was taken, fitter soile.

90

*Michael*, this my behest have thou in charge,  
 Take to thee from among the Cherubim  
 Thy choice of flaming Warriours, least the Fiend

100

Or in behalf of Man, or to invade  
 Vacant possession som new trouble raise :  
 Hast thee, and from the Paradise of God  
 Without remorse drive out the sinful Pair,  
 From hallowd ground th' unholie, and denounce  
 To them and to thir Progenie from thence  
 Perpetual banishment. Yet least they faint  
 At the sad Sentence rigorously urg'd,  
 For I behold them soft'nd and with tears 110  
 Bewailing thir excess, all terror hide.  
 If patiently thy bidding they obey,  
 Dismiss them not disconsolate ; reveale  
 To *Adam* what shall come in future dayes,  
 As I shall thee enlighten, intermix  
 My Cov'nant in the Womans seed renewd ;  
 So send them forth, though sorrowing, yet in peace :  
 And on the East side of the Garden place,  
 Where entrance up from *Eden* easiest climbs,  
 Cherubic watch, and of a Sword the flame 120  
 Wide waving, all approach farr off to fright,  
 And guard all passage to the Tree of Life :  
 Least Paradise a receptacle prove  
 To Spirits foule, and all my Trees thir prey,  
 With whose stol'n Fruit Man once more to delude.

He ceas'd ; and th' Archangelic Power prepar'd  
 For swift descent, with him the Cohort bright  
 Of watchful Cherubim ; four faces each  
 Had, like a double *Janus*, all thir shape  
 Spangl'd with eyes more numerous then those 130  
 Of *Argus*, and more wakeful then to drouze,  
 Charm'd with *Arcadian* Pipe, the Pastoral Reed  
 Of *Hermes*, or his opiate Rod. Mean while  
 To resalute the World with sacred Light  
*Leucothea* wak'd, and with fresh dews imbalmd  
 The Earth, when *Adam* and first Matron *Eve*  
 Had ended now thir Orisons, and found,  
 Strength added from above, new hope to spring  
 Out of despaire, joy, but with fear yet linkt ;  
 Which thus to *Eve* his welcome words renewd. 140

*Eve*, easily may Faith admit, that all  
 The good which we enjoy, from Heav'n descends  
 But that from us ought should ascend to Heav'n

So prevalent as to concerne the mind  
 Of God high-blest, or to incline his will,  
 Hard to belief may seem; yet this will Prayer,  
 Or one short sigh of humane breath, up-borne  
 Ev'n to the Seat of God. For since I saught  
 By Prayer th' offended Deitie to appease,  
 Kneel'd and before him humbl'd all my heart, 150  
 Methought I saw him placable and mild,  
 Bending his eare; perswasion in me grew  
 That I was heard with favour; peace return'd  
 Home to my brest, and to my memorie  
 His promise, that thy Seed shall bruise our Foe;  
 Which then not minded in dismay, yet now  
 Assures me that the bitterness of death  
 Is past, and we shall live. Whence Haile to thee  
*Eve* rightly call'd, Mother of all Mankind,  
 Mother of all things living, since by thee 160  
 Man is to live, and all things live for Man.

To whom thus *Eve* with sad demeanour meek.  
 Ill worthie I such title should belong  
 To me transgressour, who for thee ordain'd  
 A help, became thy snare; to mee reproach  
 Rather belongs, distrust and all dispraise:  
 But infinite in pardon was my Judge,  
 That I who first brought Death on all, am grac't  
 The sourse of life; next favourable thou,  
 Who highly thus to entitle me voutsaf'st, 170  
 Farr other name deserving. But the Field  
 To labour calls us now with sweat impos'd,  
 Though after sleepless Night; for see the Morn,  
 All unconcern'd with our unrest, begins  
 Her rosie progress smiling; let us forth,  
 I never from thy side henceforth to stray,  
 Wherever our days work lies, though now enjoind  
 Laborious, till day droop; while here we dwell,  
 What can be toilsom in these pleasant Walkes?  
 Here let us live, though in fall'n state, content. 180

So spake, so wish'd much humbl'd *Eve*, but Fate  
 Subscrib'd not; Nature first gave Signs, imprest  
 On Bird, Beast, Aire, Aire suddenly eclips'd  
 After short blush of Morn; nigh in her sight  
 The Bird of *Jove*, stoopt from his aerie tour,



Two Birds of gayest plume before him drove :  
 Down from a Hill the Beast that reigns in Woods,  
 First Hunter then, pursu'd a gentle brace,  
 Goodliest of all the Forrest, Hart and Hinde ;  
 Direct to th' Eastern Gate was bent thir flight. 190  
*Adam* observ'd, and with his Eye the chase  
 Pursuing, not unmov'd to *Eve* thus spake.

O *Eve*, some further change awaits us nigh,  
 Which Heav'n by these mute signs in Nature shews  
 Forerunners of his purpose, or to warn  
 Us haply too secure of our discharge  
 From penaltie, because from death releast  
 Some days ; how long, and what till then our life,  
 Who knows, or more then this, that we are dust,  
 And thither must return and be no more. 200  
 Why else this double object in our sight  
 Of flight pursu'd in th' Air and ore the ground  
 One way the self-same hour? why in the East  
 Darkness ere Dayes mid-course, and Morning light  
 More orient in yon Western Cloud that draws  
 O're the blew Firmament a radiant white,  
 And slow descends, with somthing heav'nly fraught.

He err'd not, for by this the heav'nly Bands  
 Down from a Skie of Jasper lighted now  
 In Paradise, and on a Hill made alt, 210  
 A glorious Apparition, had not doubt  
 And carnal fear that day dimm'd *Adams* eye.  
 Not that more glorious, when the Angels met  
*Jacob* in *Mahanaim*, where he saw  
 The field Pavilion'd with his Guardians bright ;  
 Nor that which on the flaming Mount appeerd  
 In *Dothan*, cover'd with a Camp of Fire,  
 Against the *Syrian* King, who to surprize  
 One man, Assassin-like had levied Warr,  
 Warr unproclam'd. The Princely Hierarch 220  
 In thir bright stand, there left his Powers to seise  
 Possession of the Garden ; hee alone,  
 To finde where *Adam* shelterd, took his way,  
 Not unperceav'd of *Adam*, who to *Eve*,  
 While the great Visitant approachd, thus spake.

*Eve*, now expect great tidings, which perhaps  
 Of us will soon determin, or impose



New Laws to be observ'd; for I descrie  
 From yonder blazing Cloud that veils the Hill  
 One of the heav'nly Host, and by his Gate 230  
 None of the meanest, some great Potentate  
 Or of the Thrones above, such Majestie  
 Invests him coming; yet not terrible,  
 That I should fear, nor sociably mild,  
 As *Raphael*, that I should much confide,  
 But solemn and sublime, whom not to offend,  
 With reverence I must meet, and thou retire.  
 He ended; and th' Arch-Angel soon drew nigh,  
 Not in his shape Celestial, but as Man  
 Clad to meet Man; over his lucid Armes 240  
 A militarie Vest of purple flowd  
 Livelier then *Melibæan*, or the graine  
 Of *Sarra*, worn by Kings and Hero's old  
 In time of Truce; *Iris* had dipt the wooff;  
 His starrie Helme unbuckl'd shew'd him prime  
 In Manhood where Youth ended; by his side  
 As in a glistering *Zodiac* hung the Sword,  
 Satans dire dread, and in his hand the Spear.  
*Adam* bowd low, hee Kingly from his State  
 Inclind not, but his coming thus declar'd. 250

*Adam*, Heav'ns high behest no Preface needs:  
 Sufficient that thy Prayers are heard, and Death,  
 Then due by sentence when thou didst transgress,  
 Defeated of his seisure many dayes  
 Giv'n thee of Grace, wherein thou may'st repent,  
 And one bad act with many deeds well done  
 Mayst cover: well may then thy Lord appeas'd  
 Redeem thee quite from Deaths rapacious claime;  
 But longer in this Paradise to dwell  
 Permits not; to remove thee I am come, 260  
 And send thee from the Garden forth to till  
 The ground whence thou wast tak'n, fitter Soile.

He added not, for *Adam* at the newes  
 Heart-strook with chilling gripe of sorrow stood,  
 That all his senses bound; *Eve*, who unseen  
 Yet all had heard, with audible lament  
 Discover'd soon the place of her retire.

O unexpected stroke, worse then of Death!  
 Must I thus leave thee Paradise? thus leave

Thee Native Soile, these happie Walks and Shades, 270  
 Fit haunt of Gods? where I had hope to spend,  
 Quiet though sad, the respite of that day  
 That must be mortal to us both. O flours,  
 That never will in other Climate grow,  
 My early visitation, and my last  
 At Eev'n, which I bred up with tender hand  
 From the first op'ning bud, and gave ye Names,  
 Who now shall reare ye to the Sun, or ranke  
 Your Tribes, and water from th' ambrosial Fount?  
 Thee lastly nuptial Bowre, by mee adorn'd 280  
 With what to sight or smell was sweet; from thee  
 How shall I part, and whither wander down  
 Into a lower World, to this obscure  
 And wilde, how shall we breath in other Aire  
 Less pure, accusom'd to immortal Fruits?

Whom thus the Angel interrupted milde.  
 Lament not *Eve*, but patiently resigne  
 What justly thou hast lost; nor set thy heart,  
 Thus over fond, on that which is not thine;  
 Thy going is not lonely, with thee goes 290  
 Thy Husband, him to follow thou art bound;  
 Where he abides, think there thy native soile.

*Adam* by this from the cold sudden damp  
 Recovering, and his scatterd spirits returnd,  
 To *Michael* thus his humble words addressd.

Celestial, whether among the Thrones, or nam'd  
 Of them the Highest, for such of shape may seem  
 Prince above Princes, gently hast thou tould  
 Thy message, which might else in telling wound,  
 And in performing end us; what besides 300  
 Of sorrow and dejection and despair  
 Our frailtie can sustain, thy tidings bring,  
 Departure from this happy place, our sweet  
 Recess, and onely consolation left  
 Familiar to our eyes, all places else  
 Inhospitable appeer and desolate,  
 Nor knowing us nor known: and if by prayer  
 Incessant I could hope to change the will  
 Of him who all things can, I would not cease  
 To wearie him with my assiduous cries: 310  
 But prayer against his absolute Decree

No more availes then breath against the winde,  
Blown stifling back on him that breaths it forth :  
Therefore to his great bidding I submit.

This most afflicts me, that departing hence,  
As from his face I shall be hid, deprivd  
His blessed count'nance ; here I could frequent,  
With worship, place by place where he voutsaf'd  
Presence Divine, and to my Sons relate ;

On this Mount he appeerd, under this Tree  
Stood visible, among these Pines his voice  
I heard, here with him at this Fountain talk'd :

320

So many grateful Altars I would reare  
Of grassie Terfe, and pile up every Stone  
Of lustre from the brook, in memorie,  
Or monument to Ages, and thereon  
Offer sweet smelling Gumms & Fruits and Flours :  
In yonder nether World where shall I seek  
His bright appearances, or footstep trace?  
For though I fled him angrie, yet recall'd  
To life prolongd and promis'd Race, I now  
Gladly behold though but his utmost skirts  
Of glory, and farr off his steps adore.

330

To whom thus *Michael* with regard benigne.  
*Adam*, thou know'st Heav'n his, and all the Earth,  
Not this Rock onely ; his Omnipresence fills  
Land, Sea, and Aire, and every kinde that lives,  
Fomented by his virtual power and warmd :

All th' Earth he gave thee to possess and rule,  
No despicable gift ; surmise not then

340

His presence to these narrow bounds confin'd  
Of Paradise or *Eden* : this had been  
Perhaps thy Capital Seate, from whence had spread  
All generations, and had hither come  
From all the ends of th' Earth, to celebrate  
And reverence thee thir great Progenitor.

But this præeminence thou hast lost, brought down  
To dwell on eeven ground now with thy Sons :

Yet doubt not but in Vallie and in Plaine

God is as here, and will be found alike

350

Present, and of his presence many a signe  
Still following thee, still compassing thee round  
With goodness and paternal Love, his Face

Express, and of his steps the track Divine.  
Which that thou mayst beleave, and be confirmd,  
Ere thou from hence depart, know I am sent  
To shew thee what shall come in future dayes  
To thee and to thy Ofspring; good with bad  
Expect to hear, supernal Grace contending  
With sinfulness of Men; thereby to learn 360  
True patience, and to temper joy with fear  
And pious sorrow, equally enur'd  
By moderation either state to beare,  
Prosperous or adverse: so shalt thou lead  
Safest thy life, and best prepar'd endure  
Thy mortal passage when it comes. Ascend  
This Hill; let *Eve* (for I have drencht her eyes)  
Here sleep below while thou to foresight wak'st,  
As once thou slepst, while Shee to life was formd.

To whom thus *Adam* gratefully repli'd. 370  
Ascend, I follow thee, safe Guide, the path  
Thou lead'st me, and to the hand of Heav'n submit,  
However chast'ning, to the evil turne  
My obvious breast, arming to overcom  
By suffering, and earne rest from labour won,  
If so I may attain. So both ascend  
In the Visions of God: It was a Hill  
Of Paradise the highest, from whose top  
The Hemisphere of Earth in cleerest Ken  
Stretcht out to amplest reach of prospect lay. 380  
Not higher that Hill nor wider looking round,  
Whereon for different cause the Tempter set  
Our second *Adam* in the Wilderness,  
To shew him all Earths Kingdomes and thir Glory.  
His Eye might there command wherever stood  
City of old or modern Fame, the Seat  
Of mightiest Empire, from the destin'd Walls  
Of *Cambalu*, seat of *Cathaian Can*  
And *Samarchand* by *Oxus*, *Temirs* Throne,  
To *Paquin* of *Sinæan* Kings, and thence 390  
To *Agra* and *Lahor* of great *Mogul*  
Down to the golden *Chersonese*, or where  
The *Persian* in *Ecbatan* sate, or since  
In *Hispahan*, or where the *Russian Ksar*  
In *Mosco*, or the Sultan in *Bizance*,

*Paradise Lost.*

*Turchestan*-born ; nor could his eye not ken  
 Th' Empire of *Negus* to his utmost Port  
*Ercoco* and the less Maritime Kings  
*Mombaza*, and *Quiloa*, and *Melind*,  
 And *Sofala* thought *Ophir*, to the Realme 400  
 Of *Congo*, and *Angola* fardest South ;  
 Or thence from *Niger* Flood to *Atlas* Mount  
 The Kingdoms of *Almansor*, *Fez* and *Sus*,  
*Marocco* and *Algiers*, and *Tremisen* ;  
 On *Europe* thence, and where *Rome* was to sway  
 The World : in Spirit perhaps he also saw  
 Rich *Mexico* the seat of *Motezume*,  
 And *Cusco* in *Peru*, the richer seat  
 Of *Atabalipa*, and yet unspoil'd  
*Guiana*, whose great Citie *Geryons* Sons 410  
 Call *El Dorado* : but to nobler sights  
*Michael* from *Adams* eyes the Filme remov'd  
 Which that false Fruit that promis'd clearer sight  
 Had bred ; then purg'd with Euphrasie and Rue  
 The visual Nerve, for he had much to see ;  
 And from the Well of Life three drops instill'd.  
 So deep the power of these Ingredients pierc'd,  
 Eevn to the inmost seat of mental sight,  
 That *Adam* now enforc't to close his eyes,  
 Sunk down and all his Spirits became intranst : 420  
 But him the gentle Angel by the hand  
 Soon rais'd, and his attention thus recall'd.

*Adam*, now ope thine eyes, and first behold  
 Th' effects which thy original crime hath wrought  
 In some to spring from thee, who never touch'd  
 Th' excepted Tree, nor with the Snake conspir'd,  
 Nor sinn'd thy sin, yet from that sin derive  
 Corruption to bring forth more violent deeds.

His eyes he op'nd, and beheld a field,  
 Part arable and tilth, whereon were Sheaves 430  
 New reapt, the other part sheep-walks and foulds ;  
 Ith' midst an Altar as the Land-mark stood  
 Rustic, of grassie sord ; thither anon  
 A sweatie Reaper from his Tillage brought  
 First Fruits, the green Eare, and the yellow Sheaf,  
 Uncull'd, as came to hand ; a Shepherd next  
 More meek came with the Firstlings of his Flock

Choicest and best ; then sacrificing, laid  
 The Inwards and thir Fat. with Incense strew'd,  
 On the cleft Wood, and all due Rites perform'd. 440  
 His Offring soon propitious Fire from Heav'n  
 Consum'd with nimble glance, and grateful steame ;  
 The others not, for his was not sincere ;  
 Whereat hee inlie rag'd, and as they talk'd,  
 Smote him into the Midriff with a stone  
 That beat out life ; he fell, and deadly pale  
 Groand out his Soul with gushing bloud effus'd.  
 Much at that sight was *Adam* in his heart  
 Dismai'd, and thus in haste to th' Angel cri'd.

O Teacher, some great mischief hath befall'n 450  
 To that meek man, who well had sacrific'd ;  
 Is Pietie thus and pure Devotion paid ?

T' whom *Michael* thus, hee also mov'd, repli'd.  
 These two are Brethren, *Adam*, and to come  
 Out of thy loyns ; th' unjust the just hath slain,  
 For envie that his Brothers Offering found  
 From Heav'n acceptance ; but the bloodie Fact  
 Will be aveng'd, and th' others Faith approv'd  
 Loose no reward, though here thou see him die,  
 Rowling in dust and gore. To which our Sire. 460

Alas, both for the deed and for the cause !  
 But have I now seen Death ? Is this the way  
 I must return to native dust ? O sight  
 Of terrour, foul and ugly to behold,  
 Horrid to think, how horrible to feel !

To whom thus *Michael*. Death thou hast seen  
 In his first shape on man ; but many shapes  
 Of Death, and many are the wayes that lead  
 To his grim Cave, all dismal ; yet to sense  
 More terrible at th' entrance then within. 470  
 Some, as thou saw'st, by violent stroke shall die,  
 By Fire, Flood, Famin, by Intemperance more  
 In Meats and Drinks, which on the Earth shal bring  
 Diseases dire, of which a monstrous crew  
 Before thee shall appear ; that thou mayst know  
 What miserie th' inabstinence of *Eve*  
 Shall bring on men. Immediately a place  
 Before his eyes appeard, sad, noysom, dark,  
 A Lazar-house it seemd, wherein were laid

Numbers of all diseas'd, all maladies 480  
 Of gastly Spasm, or racking torture, qualmes  
 Of heart-sick Agonie, all feavorous kinds,  
 Convulsions, Epilepsies, fierce Catarrhs,  
 Intestin Stone and Ulcer, Colic pangs,  
 Dropsies, and Asthma's, and Joint-racking Rheums.  
 Dire was the tossing, deep the groans, despair  
 Tended the sick busiest from Couch to Couch ;  
 And over them triumphant Death his Dart  
 Shook, but delaid to strike, though oft invok't  
 With vows, as thir chief good, and final hope. 490  
 Sight so deform what heart of Rock could long  
 Drie-ey'd behold? *Adam* could not, but wept,  
 Though not of Woman born ; compassion quell'd  
 His best of Man, and gave him up to tears  
 A space, till firmer thoughts restrain'd excess,  
 And scarce recovering words his plaint renew'd.

O miserable Mankind, to what fall  
 Degraded, to what wretched state reserv'd !  
 Better end heer unborn. Why is life giv'n  
 To be thus wrested from us? rather why 500  
 Obtruded on us thus? who if we knew  
 What we receive, would either not accept  
 Life offer'd, or soon beg to lay it down,  
 Glad to be so dismiss in peace. Can thus  
 Th' Image of God in man created once  
 So goodly and erect, though faultie since,  
 To such unsightly sufferings be debas't  
 Under inhuman pains? Why should not Man,  
 Retaining still Divine similitude  
 In part, from such deformities be free, 510  
 And for his Makers Image sake exempt?

Thir Makers Image, answerd *Michael*, then  
 Forsook them, when themselves they villifi'd  
 To serve ungovern'd appetite, and took  
 His Image whom they serv'd, a brutish vice,  
 Inductive mainly to the sin of *Eve*.  
 Therefore so abject is thir punishment,

484 After this line, 1674 adds :

Dæmoniac Phrenzie, moaping Melancholie  
 And Moon struck madness, pining Atrophie,  
 Marasmus, and wide wasting Pestilence,



Disfiguring not Gods likeness, but thir own,  
Or if his likeness, by themselves defac't  
While they pervert pure Natures healthful rules 520  
To loathsom sickness, worthily, since they  
Gods Image did not reverence in themselves.

I yeild it just, said *Adam*, and submit.  
But is there yet no other way, besides  
These painful passages, how we may come  
To Death, and mix with our connatural dust?

There is, said *Michael*, if thou well observe  
The rule of not too much, by temperance taught  
In what thou eatst and drinkst, seeking from thence  
Due nourishment, not gluttonous delight, 530  
Till many years over thy head return :

So maist thou live, till like ripe Fruit thou drop  
Into thy Mothers lap, or be with ease  
Gatherd, not harshly pluckt, for death mature :  
This is old age ; but then thou must outlive  
Thy youth, thy strength, thy beauty, which will change  
To withered weak & gray ; thy Senses then  
Obtuse, all taste of pleasure must forgoe,  
To what thou hast, and for the Aire of youth  
Hopeful and cheerful, in thy blood will reigne 540  
A melancholly damp of cold and dry  
To waigh thy spirits down, and last consume  
The Balme of Life. To whom our Ancestor.

Henceforth I flie not Death, nor would prolong  
Life much, bent rather how I may be quit  
Fairest and easiest of this combrous charge,  
Which I must keep till my appointed day  
Of rendring up, *Michael* to him repli'd.

Nor love thy Life, nor hate ; but what thou livst  
Live well, how long or short permit to Heav'n : 550  
And now prepare thee for another sight.

He lookd and saw a spacious Plaine, whereon  
Were Tents of various hue ; by some were herds  
Of Cattel grazing : others, whence the sound  
Of Instruments that made melodious chime  
Was heard, of Harp and Organ ; and who moovd

548 Of rendring up, and patiently attend  
My dissolution. *Michael* repli'd. 1674



*Paradise Lost.*

Thir stops and chords was seen : his volant touch  
 Instinct through all proportions low and high  
 Fled and pursu'd transverse the resonant fugue.  
 In other part stood one who at the Forge 560  
 Labouring, two massie clods of Iron and Brass  
 Had melted (whether found where casual fire  
 Had wasted woods on Mountain or in Vale,  
 Down to the veins of Earth, thence gliding hot  
 To som Caves mouth, or whether washt by stream  
 From underground) the liquid Ore he dreind  
 Into fit moulds prepar'd ; from which he formd  
 First his own Tooles ; then, what might else be wrought  
 Fusil or grav'n in mettle. After these,  
 But on the hether side a different sort 570  
 From the high neighbouring Hills, which was thir Seat,  
 Down to the Plain descended : by thir guise  
 Just men they seemd, and all thir study bent  
 To worship God aright, and know his works  
 Not hid, nor those things last which might preserve  
 Freedom and Peace to men : they on the Plain  
 Long had not walkt, when from the Tents behold  
 A Beavie of fair Women, richly gay  
 In Gems and wanton dress ; to the Harp they sung  
 Soft amorous Ditties, and in dance came on : 580  
 The Men though grave, ey'd them, and let thir eyes  
 Rove without rein, till in the amorous Net  
 Fast caught, they lik'd, and each his liking chose ;  
 And now of love they treat till th' Eevning Star  
 Loves Harbinger appeerd ; then all in heat  
 They light the Nuptial Torch, and bid invoke  
 Hymen, then first to marriage Rites invok't ;  
 With Feast and Musick all the Tents resound.  
 Such happy interview and fair event  
 Of love & youth not lost, Songs, Garlands, Flours, 590  
 And charming Symphonies attach'd the heart  
 Of *Adam*, soon enclin'd to admit delight,  
 The bent of Nature ; which he thus express'd.

True opener of mine eyes, prime Angel blest,  
 Much better seems this Vision, and more hope  
 Of peaceful dayes portends, then those two past ;  
 Those were of hate and death, or pain much worse,  
 Here Nature seems fulfilld in all her ends.

To whom thus *Michael*. Judg not what is best  
By pleasure, though to Nature seeming meet, 600  
Created, as thou art, to nobler end  
Holie and pure, conformitie divine.

Those Tents thou sawst so pleasant, were the Tents  
Of wickedness, wherein shall dwell his Race  
Who slew his Brother; studious they appere  
Of Arts that polish Life, Inventers rare,  
Unmindful of thir Maker, though his Spirit  
Taught them, but they his gifts acknowledg'd none.  
Yet they a beauteous ofspring shall beget;

For that fair femal Troop thou sawst, that seemd 610  
Of Goddesses, so blithe, so smooth, so gay,  
Yet empty of all good wherein consists

Womans domestic honour and chief praise;  
Bred onely and completed to the taste

Of lustful appetite, to sing, to dance,  
To dress, and troule the Tongue, and roule the Eye.

To these that sober Race of Men, whose lives  
Religious titl'd them the Sons of God,

Shall yeild up all thir vertue, all thir fame  
Ignobly, to the traines and to the smiles 620

Of these fair Atheists, and now swim in joy,  
(Erelong to swim at larg) and laugh; for which

The world erelong a world of tears must weepe.

To whom thus *Adam* of short joy bereft.

O pittie and shame, that they who to live well  
Enterd so faire, should turn aside to tread

Paths indirect, or in the mid way faint!

But still I see the tenor of Mans woe

Holds on the same, from Woman to begin.

From Mans effeminate slackness it begins, 630  
Said th' Angel, who should better hold his place

By wisdom, and superiour gifts receavd.

But now prepare thee for another Scene.

He lookd and saw wide Territorie spred  
Before him, Towns, and rural works between,

Cities of Men with lofty Gates and Towrs,

Concours in Arms, fierce Faces threatning Warr,

Giants of mightie Bone, and bould emprise;

Part wield thir Arms, part coub the foaming Steed,

Single or in Array of Battel rang'd 640

Both Horse and Foot, nor idely mustering stood ;  
 One way a Band select from forage drives  
 A herd of Beeves, faire Oxen and faire Kine  
 From a fat Meddow ground ; or fleecy Flock,  
 Ewes and thir bleating Lambs over the Plaine,  
 Thir Bootie ; scarce with Life the Shepherds flye,  
 But call in aide, which tacks a bloody Fray ;  
 With cruel Tournament the Squadrons joine ;  
 Where Cattel pastur'd late, now scatterd lies  
 With Carcasses and Arms th' ensanguind Field 650  
 Deserted : Others to a Citie strong  
 Lay Siege, encampt ; by Batterie, Scale, and Mine,  
 Assaulting ; others from the Wall defend  
 With Dart and Jav'lin, Stones and sulfurous Fire ;  
 On each hand slaughter and gigantic deeds.  
 In other part the scepter'd Haralds call  
 To Council in the Citie Gates : anon  
 Grey-headed men and grave, with Warriours mixt,  
 Assemble, and Harangues are heard, but soon  
 In factious opposition, till at last 660  
 Of middle Age one rising, eminent  
 In wise deport, spake much of Right and Wrong,  
 Of Justice, of Religion, Truth and Peace,  
 And Judgement from above : him old and young  
 Exploded, and had seiz'd with violent hands,  
 Had not a Cloud descending snatch'd him thence  
 Unseen amid the throng : so violence  
 Proceeded, and Oppression, and Sword-Law  
 Through all the Plain, and refuge none was found.  
*Adam* was all in tears, and to his guide 670  
 Lamenting turnd full sad ; O what are these,  
 Deaths Ministers, not Men, who thus deal Death  
 Inhumanly to men, and multiply  
 Ten thousand fould the sin of him who slew  
 His Brother ; for of whom such massacher  
 Make they but of thir Brethren, men of men ?  
 But who was that Just Man, whom had not Heav'n  
 Rescu'd, had in his Righteousness bin lost ?  
 To whom thus *Michael* ; These are the product  
 Of those ill-mated Marriages thou saw'st ; 680  
 Where good with bad were matcht, who of themselves

647 tacks] makes 1674

Abhor to joyn ; and by imprudence mixt,  
Produce prodigious Births of bodie or mind.  
Such were these Giants, men of high renown ;  
For in those dayes Might onely shall be admir'd,  
And Valour and Heroic Vertu call'd ;  
To overcome in Battel, and subdue  
Nations, and bring home spoils with infinite  
Man-slaughter, shall be held the highest pitch  
Of human Glorie, and for Glorie done 690  
Of triumph, to be styl'd great Conquerours,  
Patrons of Mankind, Gods, and Sons of Gods,  
Destroyers rightlier call'd and Plagues of men.  
Thus Fame shall be achiev'd, renown on Earth,  
And what most merits fame in silence hid.  
But hee the seventh from thee, whom thou beheldst  
The onely righteous in a World perverse,  
And therefore hated, therefore so beset  
With Foes for daring single to be just,  
And utter odious Truth, that God would come 700  
To judge them with his Saints : Him the most High  
Rapt in a balmie Cloud with winged Steeds  
Did, as thou sawst, receive, to walk with God  
High in Salvation and the Climes of bliss,  
Exempt from Death ; to shew thee what reward  
Awaits the good, the rest what punishment ;  
Which now direct thine eyes and soon behold.  
He look'd, & saw the face of things quite chang'd ;  
The brazen Throat of Warr had ceast to roar,  
All now was turn'd to jollitie and game, 710  
To luxurie and riot, feast and dance,  
Marrying or prostituting, as befell,  
Rape or Adulterie, where passing faire  
Allurd them ; thence from Cups to civil Broiles.  
At length a Reverend Sire among them came,  
And of thir doings great dislike declar'd,  
And testifi'd against thir wayes ; hee oft  
Frequented thir Assemblies, whereso met,  
Triumphs or Festivals, and to them preachd  
Conversion and Repentance, as to Souls 720  
In prison under Judgements imminent :  
But all in vain : which when he saw, he ceas'd  
Contending, and remov'd his Tents farr off ;

Then from the Mountain hewing Timber tall,  
 Began to build a Vessel of huge bulk,  
 Measur'd by Cubit, length, & breadth, and highth,  
 Smeard round with Pitch, and in the side a dore  
 Contriv'd, and of provisions laid in large  
 For Man and Beast: when loe a wonder strange!  
 Of everie Beast, and Bird, and Insect small 730  
 Came seavens, and pairs, and enterd in, as taught  
 Thir order; last the Sire, and his three Sons  
 With thir four Wives; and God made fast the dore.  
 Meanwhile the Southwind rose, & with black wings  
 Wide hovering, all the Clouds together drove  
 From under Heav'n; the Hills to their supplie  
 Vapour, and Exhalation dusk and moist,  
 Sent up amain; and now the thick'nd Skie  
 Like a dark Ceeling stood; down rush'd the Rain  
 Impetuous, and continu'd till the Earth 740  
 No more was seen; the floating Vessel swum  
 Uplifted; and secure with beaked prow  
 Rode tilting o're the Waves, all dwellings else  
 Flood overwhelmd, and them with all thir pomp  
 Deep under water rould; Sea cover'd Sea,  
 Sea without shoar; and in thir Palaces  
 Where luxurie late reign'd, Sea-monsters whelp'd  
 And stabl'd; of Mankind, so numerous late,  
 All left, in one small bottom swum imbark't.  
 How didst thou grieve then, *Adam*, to behold 750  
 The end of all thy Ofspring, end so sad,  
 Depopulation; thee another Floud,  
 Of tears and sorrow a Floud thee also drown'd,  
 And sunk thee as thy Sons; till gently reard  
 By th' Angel, on thy feet thou stoodst at last,  
 Though comfortless, as when a Father mourns  
 His Children, all in view destroyd at once;  
 And scarce to th' Angel utterdst thus thy plaint.

O Visions ill foreseen! better had I  
 Liv'd ignorant of future, so had borne 760  
 My part of evil onely, each dayes lot  
 Enough to bear; those now, that were dispenst  
 The burd'n of many Ages, on me light  
 At once, by my foreknowledge gaining Birth  
 Abortive, to torment me ere thir being,

With thought that they must be. Let no man seek  
 Henceforth to be foretold what shall befall  
 Him or his Children, evil he may be sure,  
 Which neither his foreknowing can prevent,  
 And hee the future evil shall no less 770  
 In apprehension then in substance feel  
 Grievous to bear: but that care now is past,  
 Man is not whom to warne: those few escap't  
 Famin and anguish will at last consume  
 Wandring that watrie Desert: I had hope  
 When violence was ceas't, and Warr on Earth,  
 All would have then gon well, peace would have crown'd  
 With length of happy days the race of man;  
 But I was farr deceav'd; for now I see  
 Peace to corrupt no less then Warr to waste. 780  
 How comes it thus? unfould, Celestial Guide,  
 And whether here the Race of man will end.  
 To whom thus *Michael*. Those whom last thou sawst  
 In triumph and luxurious wealth, are they  
 First seen in acts of prowess eminent  
 And great exploits, but of true vertu void;  
 Who having spilt much blood, and don much waste  
 Subduing Nations, and achievd thereby  
 Fame in the World, high titles, and rich prey,  
 Shall change thir course to pleasure, ease, and sloth, 790  
 Surfet, and lust, till wantonness and pride  
 Raise out of friendship hostile deeds in Peace.  
 The conquer'd also, and enslav'd by Warr  
 Shall with thir freedom lost all vertu loose  
 And feare of God, from whom thir pietie feign'd  
 In sharp contest of Battel found no aide  
 Against invaders; therefore could in zeale  
 Thenceforth shall practice how to live secure,  
 Worldlie or dissolute, on what thir Lords  
 Shall leave them to enjoy; for th' Earth shall bear 800  
 More than anough, that temperance may be tri'd:  
 So all shall turn degenerate, all deprav'd,  
 Justice and Temperance, Truth and Faith forgot;  
 One Man except, the onely Son of light  
 In a dark Age, against example good,  
 Against allurements, custom, and a World  
 Offended; fearless of reproach and scorn,

Or violence, hee of thir wicked wayes  
 Shall them admonish, and before them set  
 The paths of righteousness, how much more safe, 810  
 And full of peace, denouncing wrauth to come  
 On thir impenitence; and shall returne  
 Of them derided, but of God observd  
 The one just Man alive; by his command  
 Shall build a wondrous Ark, as thou beheldst,  
 To save himself and houshold from amidst  
 A World devote to universal rack.

No sooner hee with them of Man and Beast  
 Select for life shall in the Ark be lodg'd,  
 And shelterd round, but all the Cataracts 820  
 Of Heav'n set open on the Earth shall powre  
 Raine day and night, all fountaines of the Deep  
 Broke up, shall heave the Ocean to usurp  
 Beyond all bounds, till inundation rise  
 Above the highest Hills: then shall this Mount  
 Of Paradise by might of Waves be moovd  
 Out of his place, pushd by the horned flood,  
 With all his verdure spoil'd, and Trees adrift  
 Down the great River to the op'ning Gulf,  
 And there take root an Iland salt and bare, 830  
 The haunt of Seales and Orcs, and Sea-mews clang.  
 To teach thee that God attributes to place  
 No sanctitie, if none be thither brought  
 By Men who there frequent, or therein dwell.  
 And now what further shall ensue, behold.

He lookd, and saw the Ark hull on the flood,  
 Which now abated, for the Clouds were fled,  
 Drivn by a keen North-winde, that blowing drie  
 Wrinkl'd the face of Deluge, as decal'd;  
 And the cleer Sun on his wide watrie Glass 840  
 Gaz'd hot, and of the fresh Wave largely drew,  
 As after thirst, which made thir flowing shrink  
 From standing lake to tripping ebbe, that stole  
 With soft foot towards the deep, who now had stopt  
 His Sluces, as the Heav'n his windows shut.  
 The Ark no more now flotes, but seems on ground  
 Fast on the top of som high mountain fixt.  
 And now the tops of Hills as Rocks appeer;  
 With clamor thence the rapid Currents drive



Towards the retreating Sea thir furious tyde. 850  
 Forthwith from out the Arke a Raven flies,  
 And after him, the surer messenger,  
 A Dove sent forth once and agen to spie  
 Green Tree or ground whereon his foot may light;  
 The second time returning, in his Bill  
 An Olive leafe he brings, pacific signe:  
 Anon drie ground appeers, and from his Arke  
 The ancient Sire descends with all his Train;  
 Then with uplifted hands, and eyes devout,  
 Grateful to Heav'n, over his head beholds 860  
 A dewie Cloud, and in the Cloud a Bow  
 Conspicuous with three listed colours gay,  
 Betok'ning peace from God, and Cov'nant new.  
 Whereat the heart of *Adam* erst so sad  
 Greatly rejoyc'd, and thus his joy broke forth.

O thou that future things canst represent  
 As present, Heav'nly instructor, I revive  
 At this last sight, assur'd that Man shall live  
 With all the Creatures, and thir seed preserve. 870  
 Farr less I now lament for one whole World  
 Of wicked Sons destroyd, then I rejoyce  
 For one Man found so perfet and so just,  
 That God voutsafes to raise another World  
 From him, and all his anger to forget.  
 But say, what mean those colourd streaks in Heavn,  
 Distended as the Brow of God appeas'd,  
 Or serve they as a flourie verge to binde  
 The fluid skirts of that same watrie Cloud,  
 Least it again dissolve and showr the Earth?

To whom th' Archangel. Dextrously thou aim'st; 880  
 So willingly doth God remit his Ire,  
 Though late repenting him of Man deprav'd,  
 Griev'd at his heart, when looking down he saw  
 The whole Earth fill'd with violence, and all flesh  
 Corrupting each thir way; yet those remoov'd,  
 Such grace shall one just Man find in his sight,  
 That he relents, not to blot out mankind,  
 And makes 'a Covenant never to destroy  
 The Earth again by flood, nor let the Sea  
 Surpass his bounds, nor Rain to drown the World 890

866 that] who 1674



With Man therein or Beast ; but when he brings  
Over the Earth a Cloud, will therein set  
His triple-colour'd Bow, whereon to look  
And call to mind his Cov'nant : Day and Night,  
Seed time and Harvest, Heat and hoary Frost  
Shall hold thir course, till fire purge all things new,  
Both Heav'n and Earth, wherein the just shall dwell.

*The End of the Eleventh Book.*

# PARADISE LOST.

## BOOK XII.

### THE ARGUMENT.

*The Angel Michael continues from the Flood to relate what shall succeed; then, in the mention of Abraham, comes by degrees to explain, who that Seed of the Woman shall be, which was promised Adam and Eve in the Fall; his Incarnation, Death, Resurrection, and Ascension; the state of the Church till his second Coming. Adam greatly satisfied and recomforted by these Relations and Promises descends the Hill with Michael; awakens Eve, who all this while had slept, but with gentle dreams compos'd to quietness of mind and submission. Michael in either hand leads them out of Paradise, the fiery Sword waving behind them, and the Cherubim taking thir Stations to guard the Place.*

[As one who in his journey bates at Noone,  
Though bent on speed, so heer the Archangel paus'd  
Betwixt the world destroy'd and world restor'd,  
If *Adam* aught perhaps might interpose;  
Then with transition sweet new Speech resumes.]

Thus thou hast seen one World begin and end;  
And Man as from a second stock proceed.  
Much thou hast yet to see, but I perceive  
Thy mortal sight to faile; objects divine  
Must needs impaire and wearie human sense: 10  
Henceforth what is to com I will relate,  
Thou therefore give due audience, and attend.  
This second sours of Men, while yet but few,

*Argument.* The Angel . . . seed] Thence from the Flood relates, and by degrees explains who that seed 1667.

1-5 These five lines were added in the Second Edition (1674) when the original tenth book was divided into an eleventh and twelfth.

And while the dread of judgement past remains  
 Fresh in thir mindes, fearing the Deitie,  
 With some regard to what is just and right  
 Shall lead thir lives, and multiplie apace,  
 Labouring the soile, and reaping plenteous crop,  
 Corn wine and oyle; and from the herd or flock,  
 Oft sacrificing Bullock, Lamb, or Kid,  
 With large Wine-offerings pour'd, and sacred Feast  
 Shal spend thir dayes in joy unblam'd, and dwell  
 Long time in peace by Families and Tribes  
 Under paternal rule; till one shall rise  
 Of proud ambitious heart, who not content  
 With fair equalitie, fraternal state,  
 Will arrogate Dominion undeserv'd  
 Over his brethren, and quite dispossess  
 Concord and law of Nature from the Earth;  
 Hunting (and Men not Beasts shall be his game)  
 With Warr and hostile snare such as refuse  
 Subjection to his Empire tyrannous:  
 A mightie Hunter thence he shall be styl'd  
 Before the Lord, as in despite of Heav'n,  
 Or from Heav'n claming second Sovrantie;  
 And from Rebellion shall derive his name,  
 Though of Rebellion others he accuse.  
 Hee with a crew, whom like Ambition joyns  
 With him or under him to tyrannize,  
 Marching from *Eden* towards the West, shall finde  
 The Plain, wherein a black bituminous gurge  
 Boiles out from under ground, the mouth of Hell;  
 Of Brick, and of that stuff they cast to build  
 A Citie & Towre, whose top may reach to Heav'n;  
 And get themselves a name, least far disperst  
 In foraign Lands thir memorie be lost,  
 Regardless whether good or evil fame.  
 But God who oft descends to visit men  
 Unseen, and through thir habitations walks  
 To mark thir doings, them beholding soon,  
 Comes down to see thir Citie, ere the Tower  
 Obstruct Heav'n Towrs, and in derision sets  
 Upon thir Tongues a various Spirit to rase  
 Quite out thir Native Language, and instead  
 To sow a jangling noise of words unknown:

20

30

40

50

Forthwith a hideous gabble rises loud  
 Among the Builders ; each to other calls  
 Not understood, till hoarse, and all in rage,  
 As mockt they storm ; great laughter was in Heav'n  
 And looking down, to see the hubbub strange  
 And hear the din ; thus was the building left  
 Ridiculous, and the work Confusion nam'd.

60

Whereto thus *Adam* fatherly displeas'd.  
 O execrable Son so to aspire  
 Above his Brethren, to himself assuming  
 Authoritie usurpt, from God not giv'n :  
 He gave us onely over Beast, Fish, Fowl  
 Dominion absolute ; that right we hold  
 By his donation ; but Man over men  
 He made not Lord ; such title to himself  
 Reserving, human left from human free.

70

But this Usurper his encroachment proud  
 Stayes not on Man ; to God his Tower intends  
 Siege and defiance : Wretched man ! what food  
 Will he convey up thither to sustain  
 Himself and his rash Armie, where thin Aire  
 Above the Clouds will pine his entrails gross,  
 And famish him of Breath, if not of Bread ?

To whom thus *Michael*. Justly thou abhorr'st  
 That Son, who on the quiet state of men  
 Such trouble brought, affecting to subdue  
 Rational Libertie ; yet know withall,  
 Since thy original lapse, true Libertie  
 Is lost, which alwayes with right Reason dwells  
 Twinn'd, and from her hath no dividual being :  
 Reason in man obscur'd, or not obeyd,  
 Immediately inordinate desires

80

And upstart Passions catch the Government  
 From Reason, and to servitude reduce  
 Man till then free. Therefore since hee permits  
 Within himself unworthie Powers to reign  
 Over free Reason, God in Judgement just  
 Subjects him from without to violent Lords ;  
 Who oft as undeservedly enthrall  
 His outward freedom : Tyrannie must be,  
 Though to the Tyrant thereby no excuse.  
 Yet somtimes Nations will decline so low

90

From vertue, which is reason, that no wrong,  
 But Justice, and some fatal curse annex  
 Deprives them of thir outward libertie, 100  
 Thir inward lost: Witness th' irreverent Son  
 Of him who built the Ark, who for the shame  
 Don to his Father, heard this heavie curse,  
*Servant of Servants*, on his vitious Race.  
 Thus will this latter, as the former World,  
 Still tend from bad to worse, till God at last  
 Wearied with their iniquities, withdraw  
 His presence from among them, and avert  
 His holy Eyes; resolving from thenceforth  
 To leave them to thir own polluted wayes; 110  
 And one peculiar Nation to select  
 From all the rest, of whom to be invok'd,  
 A Nation from one faithful man to spring:  
 Him on this side *Euphrates* yet residing,  
 Bred up in Idol-worship; O that men  
 (Canst thou believe?) should be so stupid grown,  
 While yet the Patriark liv'd, who scap'd the Flood,  
 As to forsake the living God, and fall  
 To worship thir own work in Wood and Stone  
 For Gods! yet him God the most High voutsafes 120  
 To call by Vision from his Fathers house,  
 His kindred and false Gods, into a Land  
 Which he will shew him, and from him will raise  
 A mightie Nation, and upon him showre  
 His benediction so, that in his Seed  
 All Nations shall be blest; hee straight obeys,  
 Not knowing to what Land, yet firm believes:  
 I see him, but thou canst not, with what Faith  
 He leaves his Gods, his Friends, and native Soile  
*Ur of Chaldæa*, passing now the Ford 130  
 To *Haran*, after him a cumbrous Train  
 Of Herds and Flocks, and numerous servitude;  
 Not wandring poor, but trusting all his wealth  
 With God, who call'd him, in a land unknown.  
*Canaan* he now attains, I see his Tents  
 Pitcht about *Sechem*, and the neighbouring Plaine  
 Of *Moreh*; there by promise he receaves  
 Gift to his Progenie of all that Land;  
 From *Hamath* Northward to the Desert South

(Things by thir names I call, though yet unnam'd) 140  
 From *Hermon* East to the great Western Sea,  
 Mount *Hermon*, yonder Sea, each place behold  
 In prospect, as I point them; on the shoare  
 Mount *Carmel*; here the double-founted stream  
*Jordan*, true limit Eastward; but his Sons  
 Shall dwell to *Senir*, that long ridge of Hills.  
 This ponder, that all Nations of the Earth  
 Shall in his Seed be blessed; by that Seed  
 Is meant thy great deliverer, who shall bruise  
 The Serpents head; whereof to thee anon 150  
 Plainlier shall be reveal'd. This Patriarch blest,  
 Whom *faithful Abraham* due time shall call,  
 A Son, and of his Son a Grand-childe leaves,  
 Like him in faith, in wisdom, and renown;  
 The Grandchilde with twelve Sons increast, departs  
 From *Canaan*, to a land hereafter call'd  
*Egypt*, divided by the River *Nile*;  
 See where it flows, disgorging at seaven mouthes  
 Into the Sea: to sojourn in that Land  
 He comes invited by a yonger Son 160  
 In time of dearth, a Son whose worthy deeds  
 Raise him to be the second in that Realme  
 Of *Pharao*: there he dies, and leaves his Race  
 Growing into a Nation, and now grown  
 Suspected to a sequent King, who seeks  
 To stop thir overgrowth, as inmate guests  
 Too numerous; whence of guests he makes them slaves  
 Inhospitably, and kills thir infant Males:  
 Till by two brethren (those two brethren call  
*Moses* and *Aaron*) sent from God to claime 170  
 His people from enthrallment, they return  
 With glory and spoile back to thir promis'd Land.  
 But first the lawless Tyrant, who denies  
 To know thir God, or message to regard,  
 Must be compell'd by Signes and Judgements dire;  
 To blood unshed the Rivers must be turnd,  
 Frogs, Lice and Flies must all his Palace fill  
 With loath'd intrusion, and fill all the land;  
 His Cattel must of Rot and Murren die,  
 Botches and blaines must all his flesh imboss, 180  
 And all his people; Thunder mixt with Haile,

Haile mixt with fire must rend th' *Egyptian* Skie  
 And wheel on th' Earth, devouring where it rould;  
 What it devours not, Herb, or Fruit, or Graine,  
 A darksom Cloud of Locusts swarming down  
 Must eat, and on the ground leave nothing green :  
 Darkness must overshadow all his bounds,  
 Palpable darkness, and blot out three dayes ;  
 Last with one midnight stroke all the first-born  
 Of *Egypt* must lie dead. Thus with ten wounds 190  
 This River-dragon tam'd at length submits  
 To let his sojourners depart, and oft  
 Humbles his stubborn heart, but still as Ice  
 More hard'nd after thaw, till in his rage  
 Pursuing whom he late dismissd, the Sea  
 Swallows him with his Host, but them lets pass  
 As on drie land between two christal walls,  
 Aw'd by the rod of *Moses* so to stand  
 Divided, till his rescu'd gain thir shoar :  
 Such wondrous power God to his Saint will lend, 200  
 Though present in his Angel, who shall goe  
 Before them in a Cloud, and Pillar of Fire,  
 By day a Cloud, by night a Pillar of Fire,  
 To guide them in thir journey, and remove  
 Behinde them, while th' obdurat King pursues :  
 All night he will pursue, but his approach  
 Darkness defends between till morning Watch ;  
 Then through the Firey Pillar and the Cloud  
 God looking forth will trouble all his Host  
 And craze thir Chariot wheels : when by command 210  
*Moses* once more his potent Rod extends  
 Over the Sea ; the Sea his Rod obeys ;  
 On thir imbattelld ranks the Waves return,  
 And overwhelm thir Warr : the Race elect  
 Safe towards *Canaan* from the shoar advance  
 Through the wilde Desert, not the readiest way,  
 Least entring on the *Canaanite* allarmd  
 Warr terrifie them inexpert, and feare  
 Return them back to *Egypt*, choosing rather  
 Inglorious life with servitude ; for life 220  
 To noble and ignoble is more sweet  
 Untrained in Armes, where rashness leads not on.

191 This] The 1674



This also shall they gain by thir delay  
 In the wide Wilderness, there they shall found  
 Thir government, and thir great Senate choose  
 Through the twelve Tribes, to rule by Laws ordaind :  
 God from the Mount of *Sinai*, whose gray top  
 Shall tremble, he descending, will himself  
 In Thunder Lightning and loud Trumpets sound  
 Ordaine them Lawes ; part such as appertaine 230  
 To civil Justice, part religious Rites  
 Of sacrifice, informing them, by types  
 And shadowes, of that destind Seed to bruise  
 The Serpent, by what meanes he shall achieve  
 Mankinds deliverance. But the voice of God  
 To mortal eare is dreadful ; they beseech  
 That *Moses* might report to them his will,  
 And terror cease ; he grants them thir desire,  
 Instructed that to God is no access  
 Without Mediator, whose high Office now 240  
*Moses* in figure beares, to introduce  
 One greater, of whose day he shall foretell,  
 And all the Prophets in thir Age, the times  
 Of great *Messiah* shall sing. Thus Laws and Rites  
 Establisht, such delight hath God in Men  
 Obedient to his will, that he voutsafes  
 Among them to set up his Tabernacle,  
 The holy One with mortal Men to dwell :  
 By his prescript a Sanctuary is fram'd  
 Of Cedar, overlaid with Gold, therein 250  
 An Ark, and in the Ark his Testimony,  
 The Records of his Cov'nant, over these  
 A Mercie-seat of Gold between the wings  
 Of two bright Cherubim, before him burn  
 Seaven Lamps as in a Zodiac representing  
 The Heav'nly fires ; over the Tent a Cloud  
 Shall rest by Day, a fierie gleame by Night,  
 Save when they journie, and at length they come,  
 Conducted by his Angel to the Land  
 Promisd to *Abraham* and his Seed : the rest 260  
 Were long to tell, how many Battels fought,  
 How many Kings destroyd, and Kingdoms won,  
 Or how the Sun shall in mid Heav'n stand still

238 them thir desire] what they besaught 1674

*Paradise Lost.*

A day entire, and Nights due course adjourne,  
 Mans voice commanding, Sun in *Gibeon* stand,  
 And thou Moon in the vale of *Aialon*,  
 Till *Israel* overcome; so call the third  
 From *Abraham*, Son of *Isaac*, and from him  
 His whole descent, who thus shall *Canaan* win.

Here *Adam* interpos'd. O sent from Heav'n,  
 Enlightner of my darkness, gracious things  
 Thou hast reveal'd, those chiefly which concerne  
 Just *Abraham* and his Seed: now first I finde  
 Mine eyes true op'ning, and my heart much eas'd,  
 Erwhile perplext with thoughts what would become  
 Of mee and all Mankind; but now I see  
 His day, in whom all Nations shall be blest,  
 Favour unmerited by me, who sought  
 Forbidd'n knowledge by forbidd'n means.

270

This yet I apprehend not, why to those  
 Among whom God will deigne to dwell on Earth  
 So many and so various Laws are giv'n;  
 So many Laws argue so many sins  
 Among them; how can God with such reside?

280

To whom thus *Michael*. Doubt not but that sin  
 Will reign among them, as of thee begot;  
 And therefore was Law given them to evince  
 Thir natural pravitie, by stirring up  
 Sin against Law to fight; that when they see  
 Law can discover sin, but not remove,  
 Save by those shadowie expiations weak,  
 The blood of Bulls and Goats, they may conclude  
 Some blood more precious must be paid for Man,  
 Just for unjust, that in such righteousness  
 To them by Faith imputed, they may finde  
 Justification towards God, and peace  
 Of Conscience, which the Law by Ceremonies  
 Cannot appease, nor Man the moral part  
 Perform, and not performing cannot live.

290

So Law appears imperfet, and but giv'n  
 With purpose to resign them in full time  
 Up to a better Cov'nant, disciplin'd  
 From shadowie Types to Truth, from Flesh to Spirit,  
 From imposition of strict Laws, to free  
 Acceptance of large Grace, from servil fear

300

To filial, works of Law to works of Faith.  
 And therefore shall not *Moses*, though of God  
 Highly belov'd, being but the Minister  
 Of Law, his people into *Canaan* lead ;  
 But *Joshua* whom the Gentiles *Jesus* call, 310  
 His Name and Office bearing, who shall quell  
 The adversarie Serpent, and bring back  
 Through the worlds wilderness long wanderd man  
 Safe to eternal Paradise of rest.  
 Meanwhile they in thir earthly *Canaan* plac't  
 Long time shall dwell and prosper, but when sins  
 National interrupt thir public peace,  
 Provoking God to raise them enemies :  
 From whom as oft he saves them penitent  
 By Judges first, then under Kings ; of whom 320  
 The second, both for pietie renownd  
 And puissant deeds, a promise shall receive  
 Irrevocable, that his Regal Throne  
 For ever shall endure ; the like shall sing  
 All Prophecie, That of the Royal Stock  
 Of *David* (so I name this King) shall rise  
 A Son, the Womans Seed to thee foretold,  
 Foretold to *Abraham*, as in whom shall trust  
 All Nations, and to Kings foretold, of Kings  
 The last, for of his Reign shall be no end. 330  
 But first a long succession must ensue,  
 And his next Son for Wealth and Wisdom fam'd,  
 The clouded Ark of God till then in Tents  
 Wandring, shall in a glorious Temple enshrine.  
 Such follow him, as shall be registerd  
 Part good, part bad, of bad the longer scrowle,  
 Whose foul Idolatries, and other faults  
 Heapt to the popular summe, will so incense  
 God, as to leave them, and expose thir Land,  
 Thir Citie, his Temple, and his holy Ark 340  
 With all his sacred things, a scorn and prey  
 To that proud Citie, whose high Walls thou saw'st  
 Left in confusion, *Babylon* thence call'd.  
 There in captivitie he lets them dwell  
 The space of seventie years, then brings them back,  
 Remembring mercie, and his Cov'nant sworn  
 To *David*, stablisht as the dayes of Heav'n.

Returnd from *Babylon* by leave of Kings  
 Thir Lords, whom God dispos'd, the house of God  
 They first re-edifie, and for a while 350  
 In mean estate live moderate, till grown  
 In wealth and multitude, factious they grow ;  
 But first among the Priests dissension springs,  
 Men who attend the Altar, and should most  
 Endeavour Peace: thir strife pollution brings  
 Upon the Temple it self: at last they seise  
 The Scepter, and regard not *David's* Sons,  
 Then loose it to a stranger, that the true  
 Anointed King *Messiah* might be born  
 Barr'd of his right ; yet at his Birth a Starr 360  
 Unseen before in Heav'n proclaims him com,  
 And guides the Eastern Sages, who enquire  
 His place, to offer Incense, Myrrh, and Gold ;  
 His place of birth a solemn Angel tells  
 To simple Shepherds, keeping watch by night ;  
 They gladly thither haste, and by a Quire  
 Of squadron'd Angels hear his Carol sung.

A Virgin is his Mother, but his Sire  
 The Power of the most High ; he shall ascend  
 The Throne hereditarie, and bound his Reign 370  
 With earths wide bounds, his glory with the Heav'ns.

He ceas'd, discerning *Adam* with such joy  
 Surcharg'd, as had like grief bin dew'd in tears,  
 Without the vent of words, which these he breathd.

O Prophet of glad tidings, finisher  
 Of utmost hope ! now clear I understand  
 What oft my steddiest thoughts have searcht in vain,  
 Why our great expectation should be call'd  
 The seed of Woman : Virgin Mother, Haile,  
 High in the love of Heav'n, yet from my Loynes 380  
 Thou shalt proceed, and from thy Womb the Son  
 Of God most High ; So God with man unites.  
 Needs must the Serpent now his capital bruise  
 Expect with mortal paine : say where and when  
 Thir fight, what stroke shall bruise the Victors heel.

To whom thus *Michael*. Dream not of thir fight,  
 As of a Duel, or the local wounds  
 Of head or heel : not therefore joynes the Son  
 Manhood to God-head, with more strength to foil

Thy enemie; nor so is overcome 390  
*Satan*, whose fall from Heav'n, a deadlier bruise,  
 Disabl'd not to give thee thy deaths wound:  
 Which hee, who comes thy Saviour, shall recure,  
 Not by destroying *Satan*, but his works  
 In thee and in thy Seed: nor can this be,  
 But by fulfilling that which thou didst want,  
 Obedience to the Law of God, impos'd  
 On penaltie of death, and suffering death,  
 The penaltie to thy transgression due,  
 And due to theirs which out of thine will grow: 400  
 So onely can high Justice rest appaid.  
 The Law of God exact he shall fulfill  
 Both by obedience and by love, though love  
 Alone fulfill the Law; thy punishment  
 He shall endure by coming in the Flesh  
 To a reproachful life and cursed death,  
 Proclaming Life to all who shall believe  
 In his redemption, and that his obedience  
 Imputed becomes theirs by Faith, his merits 410  
 To save them, not thir own, though legal works.  
 For this he shall live hated, be blasphem'd,  
 Seis'd on by force, judg'd, and to death condemnd  
 A shameful and accurst, naild to the Cross  
 By his own Nation, slaine for bringing Life;  
 But to the Cross he nailes thy Enemies,  
 The Law that is against thee, and the sins  
 Of all mankinde, with him there crucifi'd,  
 Never to hurt them more who rightly trust  
 In this his satisfaction; so he dies,  
 But soon revives, Death over him no power 420  
 Shall long usurp; ere the third dawning light  
 Returne, the Starres of Morn shall see him rise  
 Out of his grave, fresh as the dawning light,  
 Thy ransom paid, which Man from death redeems,  
 His death for Man, as many as offerd Life  
 Neglect not, and the benefit imbrace  
 By Faith not void of workes: this God-like act  
 Annuls thy doom, the death thou shouldst have dy'd,  
 In sin for ever lost from life; this act  
 Shall bruise the head of *Satan*, crush his strength 430  
 Defeating Sin and Death, his two maine armes,

And fix farr deeper in his head thir stings  
 Then temporal death shall bruise the Victors heel,  
 Or theirs whom he redeems, a death like sleep,  
 A gentle wafting to immortal Life.  
 Nor after resurrection shall he stay  
 Longer on Earth then certaine times to appeer  
 To his Disciples, Men who in his Life  
 Still follow'd him; to them shall leave in charge  
 To teach all nations what of him they learn'd  
 And his Salvation, them who shall beleewe  
 Baptizing in the profluent streame, the signe  
 Of washing them from guilt of sin to Life  
 Pure, and in mind prepar'd, if so befall,  
 For death, like that which the redeemer dy'd.  
 All Nations they shall teach; for from that day  
 Not onely to the Sons of *Abrahams* Loines  
 Salvation shall be Preacht, but to the Sons  
 Of *Abrahams* Faith wherever through the world;  
 So in his seed all Nations shall be blest.  
 Then to the Heav'n of Heav'ns he shall ascend  
 With victory, triumphing through the aire  
 Over his foes and thine; there shall surprise  
 The Serpent, Prince of aire, and drag in Chaines  
 Through all his realme, & there confounded leave;  
 Then enter into glory, and resume  
 His Seat at Gods right hand, exalted high  
 Above all names in Heav'n; and thence shall come,  
 When this worlds dissolution shall be ripe,  
 With glory and power to judge both quick & dead  
 To judge th' unfaithful dead, but to reward  
 His faithful, and receave them into bliss,  
 Whether in Heav'n or Earth, for then the Earth  
 Shall all be Paradise, far happier place  
 Then this of *Eden*, and far happier daies.

So spake th' Archangel *Michael*, then paus'd,  
 As at the Worlds great period; and our Sire  
 Replete with joy and wonder thus repli'd.

O goodness infinite, goodness immense!  
 That all this good of evil shall produce,  
 And evil turn to good; more wonderful  
 Then that by which creation first brought forth  
 Light out of darkness! full of doubt I stand,

Whether I should repent me now of sin  
 By mee done and occasiond, or rejoyce  
 Much more, that much more good thereof shall spring,  
 To God more glory, more good will to Men  
 From God, and over wrauth grace shall abound.  
 But say, if our delhverer up to Heav'n  
 Must reascend, what will betide the few 480  
 His faithful, left among th' unfaithful herd,  
 The enemies of truth; who then shall guide  
 His people, who defend? will they not deale  
 Wors with his followers then with him they dealt?  
 Be sure they will, said th' Angel; but from Heav'n  
 Hee to his own a Comforter will send,  
 The promise of the Father, who shall dwell  
 His Spirit within them, and the Law of Faith  
 Working through love, upon thir hearts shall write,  
 To guide them in all truth, and also arme 490  
 With spiritual Armour, able to resist  
*Satans* assaults, and quench his fierie darts,  
 What Man can do against them, not affraid,  
 Though to the death, against such cruelties  
 With inward consolations recompenc't,  
 And oft supported so as shall amaze  
 Thir proudest persecuters: for the Spirit  
 Powrd first on his Apostles, whom he sends  
 To evangelize the Nations, then on all  
 Baptiz'd, shall them with wondrous gifts endue 500  
 To speak all Tongues, and do all Miracles,  
 As did thir Lord before them. Thus they win  
 Great numbers of each Nation to receave  
 With joy the tidings brought from Heav'n: at length  
 Thir Ministry perform'd, and race well run,  
 Thir doctrine and thir story written left,  
 They die; but in thir room, as they forewarne,  
 Wolves shall succeed for teachers, grievous Wolves,  
 Who all the sacred mysteries of Heav'n  
 To thir own vile advantages shall turne 510  
 Of lucre and ambition, and the truth  
 With superstitions and traditions taint,  
 Left onely in those written Records pure,  
 Though not but by the Spirit understood.  
 Then shall they seek to avail themselves of names,



Places and titles, and with these to joine  
 Secular power, though feigning still to act  
 By spiritual, to themselves appropriating  
 The Spirit of God, promis'd alike and giv'n  
 To all Beleevers; and from that pretense, 520  
 Spiritual Lawes by carnal power shall force  
 On every conscience; Laws which none shall finde  
 Left them inrould, or what the Spirit within  
 Shall on the heart engrave. What will they then  
 But force the Spirit of Grace it self, and binde  
 His consort Libertie; what, but unbuild  
 His living Temples, built by Faith to stand,  
 Thir own Faith not anothers: for on Earth  
 Who against Faith and Conscience can be heard  
 Infallible? yet many will presume: 530  
 Whence heavie persecution shall arise  
 On all who in the worship persevere  
 Of Spirit and Truth; the rest, farr greater part,  
 Will deem in outward Rites and specious formes  
 Religion satisfi'd; Truth shall retire  
 Bestuck with slanderous darts, and works of Faith  
 Rarely be found: so shall the World goe on,  
 To good malignant, to bad men benigne,  
 Under her own waight groaning, till the day  
 Appeer of respiration to the just, 540  
 And vengeance to the wicked, at return  
 Of him so lately promiss'd to thy aid,  
 The Womans seed, obscurely then foretold,  
 Now amplier known thy Saviour and thy Lord,  
 Last in the Clouds from Heav'n to be reveald  
 In glory of the Father, to dissolve  
*Satan* with his perverted World, then raise  
 From the conflagrant mass, purg'd and refin'd,  
 New Heav'ns, new Earth, Ages of endless date  
 Founded in righteousness and peace and love, 550  
 To bring forth fruits Joy and eternal Bliss.

He ended; and thus *Adam* last reply'd.  
 How soon hath thy prediction, Seer blest,  
 Measur'd this transient World, the Race of time,  
 Till time stand fixt: beyond is all abyss,  
 Eternitie, whose end no eye can reach.  
 Greatly instructed I shall hence depart.

Greatly in peace of thought, and have my fill  
 Of knowledge, what this vessel can containe;  
 Beyond which was my folly to aspire. 560  
 Henceforth I learne, that to obey is best,  
 And love with feare the onely God, to walk  
 As in his presence, ever to observe  
 His providence, and on him sole depend,  
 Merciful over all his works, with good  
 Still overcoming evil, and by small  
 Accomplishing great things, by things deemd weak  
 Subverting worldly strong, and worldly wise  
 By simply meek; that suffering for Truths sake  
 Is fortitude to highest victorie, 570  
 And to the faithful Death the Gate of Life;  
 Taught this by his example whom I now  
 Acknowledge my Redeemer ever blest.

To whom thus also th' Angel last repli'd:  
 This having learnt, thou hast attained the summe  
 Of wisdom; hope no higher, though all the Starrs  
 Thou knewst by name, and all th' ethereal Powers,  
 All secrets of the deep, all Natures works,  
 Or works of God in Heav'n, Air, Earth, or Sea,  
 And all the riches of this World enjoydst, 580  
 And all the rule, one Empire; onely add  
 Deeds to thy knowledge answerable, add Faith,  
 Add Vertue, Patience, Temperance, add Love,  
 By name to come call'd Charitie, the soul  
 Of all the rest: then wilt thou not be loath  
 To leave this Paradise, but shalt possess  
 A Paradise within thee, happier farr.  
 Let us descend now therefore from this top  
 Of Speculation; for the hour precise  
 Exacts our parting hence; and see the Guards, 590  
 By mee encampt on yonder Hill, expect  
 Thir motion, at whose Front a flaming Sword,  
 In signal of remove, waves fiercely round;  
 We may no longer stay: go, waken *Eve*;  
 Her also I with gentle Dreams have calm'd  
 Portending good, and all her spirits compos'd  
 To meek submission: thou at season fit  
 Let her with thee partake what thou hast heard,  
 Chiefly what may concern her Faith to know,

The great deliverance by her Seed to come  
 (For by the Womans Seed) on all Mankind.  
 That ye may live, which will be many dayes,  
 Both in one Faith unanimous though sad,  
 With cause for evils past, yet much more cheer'd  
 With meditation on the happie end.

600

He ended, and they both descend the Hill;  
 Descended, *Adam* to the Bowre where *Eve*  
 Lay sleeping ran before, but found her wak't;  
 And thus with words not sad she him receav'd.

Whence thou returnst, & whither wentst, I know;  
 For God is also in sleep, and Dreams advise,  
 Which he hath sent propitious, some great good  
 Presaging, since with sorrow and hearts distress  
 Wearied I fell asleep: but now lead on;  
 In mee is no delay; with thee to goe,  
 Is to stay here; without thee here to stay,  
 Is to go hence unwilling; thou to mee  
 Art all things under Heav'n, all places thou,  
 Who for my wilful crime art banisht hence.

610

This further consolation yet secure  
 I carry hence; though all by mee is lost,  
 Such favour I unworthie am voutsaft,  
 By mee the Promis'd Seed shall all restore.

620

So spake our Mother *Eve*, and *Adam* heard  
 Well pleas'd, but answer'd not; for now too nigh  
 Th' Archangel stood, and from the other Hill  
 To thir fixt Station, all in bright array  
 The Cherubim descended; on the ground  
 Gliding meteorous, as Ev'ning Mist  
 Ris'n from a River o're the marish glides,  
 And gathers ground fast at the Labourers heel  
 Homeward returning. High in Front advanc't,  
 The brandisht Sword of God before them blaz'd  
 Fierce as a Comet; which with torrid heat,  
 And vapour as the *Libyan* Air adust,  
 Began to parch that temperate Clime; whereat  
 In either hand the hastning Angel caught  
 Our lingring Parents, and to th' Eastern Gate  
 Led them direct, and down the Cliff as fast  
 To the subjected Plaine; then disappear'd.  
 They looking back, all th' Eastern side beheld

630

640

## *Paradise Lost.*

[BK. XII.]

Of Paradise, so late thir happie seat,  
Wav'd over by that flaming Brand, the Gate  
With dreadful Faces throng'd and fierie Armes :  
Som natural tears they drop'd, but wip'd them soon ;  
The World was all before them, where to choose  
Thir place of rest, and Providence thir guide :  
They hand in hand with wandring steps and slow,  
Through *Eden* took thir solitarie way.

*The End.*

PARADISE  
REGAIN'D.

A  
POEM.

In IV BOOKS.

To which is added

*SAMSON AGONISTES.*

---

The Author

*JOHN MILTON.*

---

---

LONDON,

Printed by J. M. for John Starkey at the  
Mitre in Fleetstreet, near Temple-Bar.

MDCLXXI.

1851

1851

1851

1851

1851

1851

1851

# PARADISE REGAIN'D.

## *The First Book.*

I who e're while the happy Garden sung,  
By one mans disobedience lost, now sing  
Recover'd Paradise to all mankind,  
By one mans firm obedience fully tri'd  
Through all temptation, and the Tempter foil'd  
In all his wiles, defeated and repuls't,  
And *Eden* rais'd in the wast Wilderness.

Thou Spirit who ledst this glorious Eremite  
Into the Desert, his Victorious Field  
Against the Spiritual Foe, and broughtst him thence 10  
By proof the undoubted Son of God, inspire,  
As thou art wont, my prompted Song else mute,  
And bear through highth or depth of natures bounds  
With prosperous wing full summ'd to tell of deeds  
Above Heroic, though in secret done,  
And unrecorded left through many an Age,  
Worthy t' have not remain'd so long unsung.

Now had the great Proclaimer with a voice  
More awful then the sound of Trumpet, cri'd 20  
Repentance, and Heavens Kingdom nigh at hand  
To all Baptiz'd : to his great Baptism flock'd  
With aw the Regions round, and with them came  
From *Nazareth* the Son of *Joseph* deem'd  
To the flood *Jordan*, came as then obscure,  
Unmarkt, unknown ; but him the Baptist soon  
Descri'd, divinely warn'd, and witness bore  
As to his worthier, and would have resign'd  
To him his Heavenly Office, nor was long



# Paradise Regain'd.

[BK. I.]

His witness unconfirm'd: on him baptiz'd  
Heaven open'd, and in likeness of a Dove  
The Spirit descended, while the Fathers voice  
From Heav'n pronounc'd him his beloved Son  
That heard the Adversary, who roving still  
About the world, at that assembly fam'd  
Would not be last, and with the voice divine  
Nigh Thunder-struck, th' exalted man, to whom  
Such high attest was giv'n, a while survey'd  
With wonder, then with envy fraught and rage  
Flies to his place, nor rests, but in mid air  
To Councel summons all his mighty Peers,  
Within thick Clouds and dark ten-fold involv'd,  
A gloomy Consistory; and them amidst  
With looks agast and sad he thus bespake.

30

40

O ancient Powers of Air and this wide world,  
For much more willingly I mention Air,  
This our old Conquest, then remember Hell  
Our hated habitation; well ye know  
How many Ages, as the years of men,  
This Universe we have possest, and rul'd  
In manner at our will th' affairs of Earth,  
Since *Adam* and his facil consort *Eve*  
Lost Paradise deceiv'd by me, though since  
With dread attending when that fatal wound  
Shall be inflicted by the Seed of *Eve*  
Upon my head, long the decrees of Heav'n  
Delay, for longest time to him is short;  
And now too soon for us the circling hours  
This dreaded time have compast, wherein we  
Must bide the stroak of that long threatn'd wound,  
At least if so we can, and by the head  
Broken be not intended all our power  
To be infring'd, our freedom and our being  
In this fair Empire won of Earth and Air;  
For this ill news I bring, the Womans seed  
Destin'd to this, is late of woman born,  
His birth to our just fear gave no small cause,  
But his growth now to youths full flowr, displaying  
All vertue, grace and wisdom to atchieve  
Things highest, greatest, multiplies my fear.  
Before him a great Prophet, to proclaim

50

60

70

*Paradise Regain'd.*

His coming, is sent Harbinger, who all  
 Invites, and in the Consecrated stream  
 Pretends to wash off sin, and fit them so  
 Purified to receive him pure, or rather  
 To do him honour as their King; all come,  
 And he himself among them was baptiz'd,  
 Not thence to be more pure, but to receive  
 The testimony of Heaven, that who he is  
 Thenceforth the Nations may not doubt; I saw  
 The Prophet do him reverence, on him rising 80  
 Out of the water, Heav'n above the Clouds  
 Unfold her Crystal Dores, thence on his head  
 A perfect Dove descend, what e're it meant,  
 And out of Heav'n the Sov'rain voice I heard,  
 This is my Son belov'd, in him am pleas'd.  
 His Mother then is mortal, but his Sire,  
 He who obtains the Monarchy of Heav'n,  
 And what will he not do to advance his Son?  
 His first-begot we know, and sore have felt,  
 When his fierce thunder drove us to the deep; 90  
 Who this is we must learn, for man he seems  
 In all his lineaments, though in his face  
 The glimpses of his Fathers glory shine.  
 Ye see our danger on the utmost edge  
 Of hazard, which admits no long debate,  
 But must with something sudden be oppos'd,  
 Not force, but well couch't fraud, well woven snares,  
 E're in the head of Nations he appear  
 Their King, their Leader, and Supream on Earth.  
 I, when no other durst, sole undertook 100  
 The dismal expedition to find out  
 And ruine *Adam*, and the exploit perform'd  
 Successfully; a calmer voyage now  
 Will waft me; and the way found prosperous once  
 Induces best to hope of like success.

He ended, and his words impression left  
 Of much amazement to th' infernal Crew,  
 Distracted and surpriz'd with deep dismay  
 At these sad tidings; but no time was then  
 For long indulgence to their fears or grief: 110  
 Unanimous they all commit the care  
 And management of this main enterprize

# Paradise Regain'd.

[BK. I.]

To him their great Dictator, whose attempt  
At first against mankind so well had thriv'd  
In *Adam's* overthrow, and led thir march  
From Hell's deep-vaulted Den to dwell in light,  
Regents and Potentates, and Kings, yea gods  
Of many a pleasant Realm and Province wide.  
So to the Coast of *Jordan* he directs  
His easie steps; girded with snaky wiles,  
Where he might likeliest find this new-declar'd,  
This man of men, attested Son of God,  
Temptation and all guile on him to try;  
So to subvert whom he suspected rais'd  
To end his Raign on Earth so long enjoy'd:  
But contrary unweeting he fulfill'd  
The purpos'd Counsel pre-ordain'd and fixt  
Of the most High, who in full frequency bright  
Of Angels, thus to *Gabriel* smiling spake.

120

*Gabriel* this day by proof thou shalt behold,  
Thou and all Angels conversant on Earth  
With man or mens affairs, how I begin  
To verifie that solemn message late,  
On which I sent thee to the Virgin pure  
In *Galilee*, that she should bear a Son  
Great in Renown, and call'd the Son of God;  
Then toldst her doubting how these things could be  
To her a Virgin, that on her should come  
The Holy Ghost, and the power of the highest  
O're-shadow her: this man born and now up-grown,  
To shew him worthy of his birth divine  
And high prediction, henceforth I expose  
To Satan; let him tempt and now assay  
His utmost subtilty, because he boasts  
And vaunts of his great cunning to the throng  
Of his Apostasie; he might have learnt  
Less over-weening, since he fail'd in *Job*,  
Whose constant perseverance overcame  
Whate're his cruel malice could invent.  
He now shall know I can produce a man  
Of female Seed, far abler to resist  
All his sollicitations, and at length  
All his vast force, and drive him back to Hell,  
Winning by Conquest what the first man lost

130

140

150

*Paradise Regain'd.*

By fallacy surpriz'd. But first I mean  
 To exercise him in the Wilderness,  
 There he shall first lay down the rudiments  
 Of his great warfare, e're I send him forth  
 To conquer Sin and Death the two grand foes,  
 By Humiliation and strong Sufferance :  
 His weakness shall o'recome Satanic strength  
 And all the world, and mass of sinful flesh ;  
 That all the Angels and Ætherial Powers,  
 They now, and men hereafter may discern,  
 From what consummate vertue I have chose  
 This perfect Man, by merit call'd my Son,  
 To earn Salvation for the Sons of men.

160

So spake the Eternal Father, and all Heaven  
 Admiring stood a space, then into Hymns  
 Burst forth, and in Celestial measures mov'd,  
 Circling the Throne and Singing, while the hand  
 Sung with the voice, and this the argument.

170

Victory and Triumph to the Son of God  
 Now entring his great duel, not of arms,  
 But to vanquish by wisdom hellish wiles.  
 The Father knows the Son ; therefore secure  
 Ventures his filial Vertue, though untri'd,  
 Against whate're may tempt, whate're seduce,  
 Allure, or terrifie, or undermine.

Be frustrate all ye stratagems of Hell,  
 And devilish machinations come to nought.

180

So they in Heav'n their Odes and Vigils tun'd :  
 Mean while the Son of God, who yet some days  
 Lodg'd in *Bethabara* where *John* baptiz'd,  
 Musing and much revolving in his brest,  
 How best the mighty work he might begin  
 Of Saviour to mankind, and which way first  
 Publish his God-like office now mature,  
 One day forth walk'd alone, the Spirit leading ;  
 And his deep thoughts, the better to converse  
 With solitude, till far from track of men,  
 Thought following thought, and step by step led on,  
 He entred now the bordering Desert wild,  
 And with dark shades and rocks environ'd round,  
 His holy Meditations thus persu'd.

190

O what a multitude of thoughts at once

# Paradise Regain'd.

[BK. I.]

Awakn'd in me swarm, while I consider  
What from within I feel my self, and hear  
What from without comes often to my ears,  
Ill sorting with my present state compar'd. 200  
When I was yet a child, no childish play  
To me was pleasing, all my mind was set  
Serious to learn and know, and thence to do  
What might be publick good ; my self I thought  
Born to that end, born to promote all truth,  
All righteous things : therefore above my years,  
The Law of God I read, and found it sweet,  
Made it my whole delight, and in it grew  
To such perfection, that e're yet my age  
Had measur'd twice six years, at our great Feast 210  
I went into the Temple, there to hear  
The Teachers of our Law, and to propose  
What might improve my knowledge or their own ;  
And was admir'd by all, yet this not all  
To which my Spirit aspir'd, victorious deeds  
Flam'd in my heart, heroic acts, one while  
To rescue *Israel* from the *Roman* yoke,  
Thence to subdue and quell o're all the earth  
Brute violence and proud Tyrannick pow'r,  
Till truth were freed, and equity restor'd : 220  
Yet held it more humane, more heavenly first  
By winning words to conquer willing hearts,  
And make perswasion do the work of fear ;  
At least to try, and teach the erring Soul  
Not wilfully mis-doing, but unaware  
Misled : the stubborn only to subdue.  
These growing thoughts my Mother soon perceiving  
By words at times cast forth inly rejoyc'd,  
And said to me apart, high are thy thoughts  
O Son, but nourish them and let them soar 230  
To what highth sacred vertue and true worth  
Can raise them, though above example high ;  
By matchless Deeds express thy matchless Sire.  
For know, thou art no Son of mortal man,  
Though men esteem thee low of Parentage,  
Thy Father is the Eternal King, who rules  
All Heaven and Earth, Angels and Sons of men,  
A messenger from God fore-told thy birth

*Paradise Regain'd.*

Conceiv'd in me a Virgin, he fore-told  
 Thou shouldst be great and sit on *David's* Throne, 240  
 And of thy Kingdom there should be no end.  
 At thy Nativity a glorious Quire  
 Of Angels in the fields of *Bethlehem* sung  
 To Shepherds watching at their folds by night,  
 And told them the Messiah now was born,  
 Where they might see him, and to thee they came;  
 Directed to the Manger where thou lais't,  
 For in the Inn was left no better room :  
 A Star, not seen before in Heaven appearing  
 Guided the Wise Men thither from the East, 250  
 To honour thee with Incense, Myrrh, and Gold,  
 By whose bright course led on they found the place,  
 Affirming it thy Star new grav'n in Heaven,  
 By which they knew thee King of *Israel* born.  
 Just *Simeon* and Prophetic *Anna*, warn'd  
 By Vision, found thee in the Temple, and spake  
 Before the Altar and the vested Priest,  
 Like things of thee to all that present stood.  
 This having heard, strait I again revolv'd  
 The Law and Prophets, searching what was writ 260  
 Concerning the Messiah, to our Scribes  
 Known partly, and soon found of whom they spake  
 I am ; this chiefly, that my way must lie  
 Through many a hard assay even to the death,  
 E're I the promis'd Kingdom can attain,  
 Or work Redemption for mankind, whose sins  
 Full weight must be transferr'd upon my head.  
 Yet neither thus disheartn'd or dismay'd,  
 The time prefixt I waited, when behold  
 The Baptist, (of whose birth I oft had heard, 270  
 Not knew by sight) now come, who was to come  
 Before Messiah and his way prepare.  
 I as all others to his Baptism came,  
 Which I believ'd was from above ; but he  
 Strait knew me, and with loudest voice proclaim'd  
 Me him (for it was shew'n him so from Heaven)  
 Me him whose Harbinger he was ; and first  
 Refus'd on me his Baptism to confer,  
 As much his greater, and was hardly won ;  
 But as I rose out of the laving stream, 280



# *Paradise Regain'd.*

[BK. I.

Heaven open'd her eternal doors, from whence  
The Spirit descended on me like a Dove,  
And last the sum of all, my Father's voice,  
Audibly heard from Heav'n, pronounc'd me his,  
Me his beloved Son, in whom alone  
He was well pleas'd; by which I knew the time  
Now full, that I no more should live obscure,  
But openly begin, as best becomes  
The Authority which I deriv'd from Heaven.  
And now by some strong motion I am led  
Into this wilderness, to what intent  
I learn not yet, perhaps I need not know;  
For what concerns my knowledge God reveals.

'290

So spake our Morning Star then in his rise,  
And looking round on every side beheld  
A pathless Desert, dusk with horrid shades;  
The way he came not having mark'd, return  
Was difficult, by humane steps untrod;  
And he still on was led, but with such thoughts  
Accompanied of things past and to come  
Lodg'd in his brest, as well might recommend  
Such Solitude before choicest Society.

300

Full forty days he pass'd, whether on hill  
Sometimes, anon in shady vale, each night  
Under the covert of some ancient Oak,  
Or Cedar, to defend him from the dew,  
Or harbour'd in one Cave, is not reveal'd;  
Nor tasted humane food, nor hunger felt  
Till those days ended, hunger'd then at last  
Among wild Beasts: they at his sight grew mild,  
Nor sleeping him nor waking harm'd, his walk  
The fiery Serpent fled, and noxious Worm,  
The Lion and fierce Tiger glar'd aloof.

310

But now an aged man in Rural weeds,  
Following, as seem'd, the quest of some stray Ewe,  
Or wither'd sticks to gather; which might serve  
Against a Winters day when winds blow keen,  
To warm him wet return'd from field at Eve,  
He saw approach, who first with curious eye  
Perus'd him, then with words thus utt'red spake.

320

Sir, what ill chance hath brought thee to this place  
So far from path or road of men, who pass



*Paradise Regain'd.*

In Troop or Caravan, for single none  
 Durst ever, who return'd, and dropt not here  
 His Carcass, pin'd with hunger and with droughth?  
 I ask the rather, and the more admire,  
 For that to me thou seem'st the man, whom late  
 Our new baptizing Prophet at the Ford  
 Of *Jordan* honour'd so, and call'd thee Son  
 Of God; I saw and heard, for we sometimes 330  
 Who dwell this wild, constrain'd by want, come forth  
 To Town or Village nigh (nighest is far)  
 Where ought we hear, and curious are to hear,  
 What happ'ns new; Fame also finds us out.

To whom the Son of God. Who brought me hither  
 Will bring me hence, no other Guide I seek.

By Miracle he may, reply'd the Swain,  
 What other way I see not, for we here  
 Live on tough roots and stubs, to thirst inur'd  
 More then the Camel, and to drink go far, 340  
 Men to much misery and hardship born;  
 But if thou be the Son of God, Command  
 That out of these hard stones be made thee bread;  
 So shalt thou save thy self and us relieve  
 With Food, whereof we wretched seldom taste.

He ended, and the Son of God reply'd.  
 Think'st thou such force in Bread? is it not written  
 (For I discern thee other then thou seem'st)  
 Man lives not by Bread only, but each Word  
 Proceeding from the mouth of God; who fed 350  
 Our Fathers here with Manna; in the Mount  
*Moses* was forty days, nor eat nor drank,  
 And forty days *Elijah* without food  
 Wandred this barren waste, the same I now:  
 Why dost thou then suggest to me distrust,  
 Knowing who I am, as I know who thou art?

Whom thus answer'd th' Arch Fiend now undisguis'd.  
 'Tis true, I am that Spirit unfortunate,  
 Who leagu'd with millions more in rash revolt  
 Kept not my happy Station, but was driv'n 360  
 With them from bliss to the bottomless deep,  
 Yet to that hideous place not so confin'd  
 By rigour unconniving, but that oft  
 Leaving my dolorous Prison I enjoy

# Paradise Regain'd

[BK. I.]

Large liberty to round this Globe of Earth,  
Or range in th' Air, nor from the Heav'n of Heav'ns  
Hath he excluded my resort sometimes.

I came among the Sons of God, when he  
Gave up into my hands *Uzzean Job*

To prove him, and illustrate his high worth ;

370

And when to all his Angels he propos'd

To draw the proud King *Ahab* into fraud

That he might fall in *Ramoth*, they demurring,

I undertook that office, and the tongues

Of all his flattering Prophets glibb'd with lyes

To his destruction, as I had in charge.

For what he bids I do ; though I have lost

Much lustre of my native brightness, lost

To be belov'd of God, I have not lost

To love, at least contemplate and admire

380

What I see excellent in good, or fair,

Or vertuous, I should so have lost all sense.

What can be then less in me then desire

To see thee and approach thee, whom I know

Declar'd the Son of God, to hear attent

Thy wisdom, and behold thy God-like deeds ?

Men generally think me much a foe

To all mankind : why should I ? they to me

Never did wrong or violence, by them

I lost not what I lost, rather by them

390

I gain'd what I have gain'd, and with them dwell

Copartner in these Regions of the World,

If not disposer ; lend them oft my aid,

Oft my advice by presages and signs,

And answers, oracles, portents and dreams,

Whereby they may direct their future life.

Envy they say excites me, thus to gain

Companions of my misery and wo.

At first it may be ; but long since with wo

Nearer acquainted, now I feel by proof,

400

That fellowship in pain divides not smart,

Nor lightens aught each mans peculiar load.

Small consolation then, were Man adjoyn'd :

This wounds me most (what can it less) that Man,

Man fall'n shall be restor'd, I never more.

To whom our Saviour sternly thus reply'd.

Deservedly thou griev'st, compos'd of lyes  
 From the beginning, and in lies wilt end ;  
 Who boast'st release from Hell, and leave to come  
 Into the Heav'n of Heavens ; thou com'st indeed, 410  
 As a poor miserable captive thrall,  
 Comes to the place where he before had sat  
 Among the Prime in Splendour, now depos'd,  
 Ejected, emptied, gaz'd, unpityed, shun'd,  
 A spectacle of ruin or of scorn  
 To all the Host of Heaven ; the happy place  
 Imparts to thee no happiness, no joy,  
 Rather inflames thy torment, representing  
 Lost bliss, to thee no more communicable,  
 So never more in Hell then when in Heaven. 420  
 But thou art serviceable to Heaven's King.  
 Wilt thou impute to obedience what thy fear  
 Extorts, or pleasure to do ill excites ?  
 What but thy malice mov'd thee to misdeem  
 Of righteous *Job*, then cruelly to afflict him  
 With all inflictions, but his patience won ?  
 The other service was thy chosen task,  
 To be a lyer in four hundred mouths ;  
 For lying is thy sustenance, thy food.  
 Yet thou pretend'st to truth ; all Oracles 430  
 By thee are giv'n, and what confest more true  
 Among the Nations ? that hath been thy craft,  
 By mixing somewhat true to vent more lyes.  
 But what have been thy answers, what but dark  
 Ambiguous and with double sense deluding,  
 Which they who ask'd have seldom understood,  
 And not well understood as good not known ?  
 Who ever by consulting at thy shrine  
 Return'd the wiser, or the more instruct  
 To flye or follow what concern'd him most, 440  
 And run not sooner to his fatal snare ?  
 For God hath justly giv'n the Nations up  
 To thy Delusions ; justly, since they fell  
 Idolatrous, but when his purpose is  
 Among them to declare his Providence  
 To thee not known, whence hast thou then thy truth,  
 But from him or his Angels President  
 In every Province, who themselves disdaining

# Paradise Regain'd.

[BK. I.

To approach thy Temples, give thee in command  
What to the smallest tittle thou shalt say 450  
To thy Adorers; thou with trembling fear,  
Or like a Fawning Parasite obey'st;  
Then to thy self ascrib'st the truth fore-told.  
But this thy glory shall be soon retrench'd;  
No more shalt thou by oracling abuse  
The Gentiles; henceforth Oracles are ceast,  
And thou no more with Pomp and Sacrifice  
Shalt be enquir'd at *Delphos* or elsewhere,  
At least in vain, for they shall find thee mute.  
God hath now sent his living Oracle 460  
Into the World, to teach his final will,  
And sends his Spirit of Truth henceforth to dwell  
In pious Hearts, an inward Oracle  
To all truth requisite for men to know.

So spake our Saviour; but the subtle Fiend,  
Though inly stung with anger and disdain,  
Dissembl'd, and this answer smooth return'd.

Sharply thou hast insisted on rebuke,  
And urg'd me hard with doings, which not will  
But misery hath rested from me; where 470  
Easily canst thou find one miserable,  
And not inforc'd oft-times to part from truth;  
If it may stand him more in stead to lye,  
Say and unsay, feign, flatter, or abjure?  
But thou art plac't above me, thou art Lord;  
From thee I can and must submit endure  
Check or reproof, and glad to scape so quit.  
Hard are the ways of truth, and rough to walk,  
Smooth on the tongue discourst, pleasing to th' ear,  
And tuneable as Silvan Pipe or Song; 480  
What wonder then if I delight to hear  
Her dictates from thy mouth? most men admire  
Vertue, who follow not her lore: permit me  
To hear thee when I come (since no man comes)  
And talk at least, though I despair to attain.  
Thy Father, who is holy, wise and pure,  
Suffers the Hypocrite or Atheous Priest  
To tread his Sacred Courts, and minister  
About his Altar, handling holy things,  
Praying or vowing, and vouchsaf'd his voice 490

*Paradise Regain'd.*

To *Balaam* Reprobate, a Prophet yet  
Inspir'd; disdain not such access to me.

To whom our Saviour with unalter'd brow.  
Thy coming hither, though I know thy scope,  
I bid not or forbid; do as thou find'st  
Permission from above; thou canst not more.

He added not; and Satan bowing low  
His gray dissimulation, disappear'd  
Into thin Air diffus'd: for now began  
Night with her sullen wing to double-shade  
The Desert, Fowls in thir clay nests were couch't;  
And now wild Beasts came forth the woods to roam.

500

*The End of the First Book.*

# PARADISE REGAIN'D.

## *The Second Book.*

MEAN while the new-baptiz'd, who yet remain'd  
At *Jordan* with the Baptist, and had seen  
Him whom they heard so late expresly call'd  
Jesus Messiah Son of God declar'd,  
And on that high Authority had believ'd,  
And with him talkt, and with him lodg'd, I mean  
*Andrew* and *Simon*, famous after known  
With others though in Holy Writ not nam'd,  
Now missing him thir joy so lately found,  
So lately found, and so abruptly gone,  
Began to doubt, and doubted many days,  
And as the days increas'd, increas'd thir doubt :  
Sometimes they thought he might be only shewn,  
And for a time caught up to God, as once  
*Moses* was in the Mount, and missing long ;  
And the great *Thisbite* who on fiery wheels  
Rode up to Heaven, yet once again to come.  
Therefore as those young Prophets then with care  
Sought lost *Elijah*, so in each place these  
Nigh to *Bethabara* ; in *Jerico*  
The City of Palms, *Ænon*, and *Salem* Old,  
*Machærus* and each Town or City wall'd  
On this side the broad lake *Genezaret*,  
Or in *Perea*, but return'd in vain.  
Then on the bank of *Jordan*, by a Creek :  
Where winds with Reeds, and Osiers whisp'ring play  
Plain Fishermen, no greater men them call,  
Close in a Cottage low together got

10

20

*Paradise Regain'd.*

Thir unexpected loss and plaints out breath'd.  
 Alas, from what high hope to what relapse 30  
 Unlook'd for are we fall'n, our eyes beheld  
 Messiah certainly now come, so long  
 Expected of our Fathers ; we have heard  
 His words, his wisdom full of grace and truth,  
 Now, now, for sure, deliverance is at hand,  
 The Kingdom shall to *Israel* be restor'd :  
 Thus we rejoyc'd, but soon our joy is turn'd  
 Into perplexity and new amaze :  
 For whither is he gone, what accident  
 Hath rapt him from us ? will he now retire 40  
 After appearance, and again prolong  
 Our expectation ? God of *Israel*,  
 Send thy Messiah forth, the time is come ;  
 Behold the Kings of the Earth how they oppress  
 Thy chosen, to what highth thir pow'r unjust  
 They have exalted, and behind them cast  
 All fear of thee, arise and vindicate  
 Thy Glory, free thy people from thir yoke,  
 But let us wait ; thus far he hath perform'd,  
 Sent his Anointed, and to us reveal'd him, 50  
 By his great Prophet, pointed at and shown,  
 In publick, and with him we have convers'd ;  
 Let us be glad of this, and all our fears  
 Lay on his Providence ; he will not fail  
 Nor will withdraw him now, nor will recall,  
 Mock us with his blest sight, then snatch him hence,  
 Soon we shall see our hope, our joy return.

Thus they out of their plaints new hope resume  
 To find whom at the first they found unsought :  
 But to his Mother *Mary*, when she saw 60  
 Others return'd from Baptism, not her Son,  
 Nor left at *Jordan*, tydings of him none ;  
 Within her brest, though calm ; her brest though pure,  
 Motherly cares and fears got head, and rais'd  
 Some troubl'd thoughts, which she in sighs thus clad.

O what avails me now that honour high  
 To have conceiv'd of God, or that salute  
 Hale highly favour'd, among women blest ;  
 While I to sorrows am no less advanc't,  
 And fears as eminent, above the lot 70



## Paradise Regain'd.

[BK. II.

Of other women, by the birth I bore,  
In such a season born when scarce a Shed  
Could be obtain'd to shelter him or me  
From the bleak air; a Stable was our warmth,  
A Manger his, yet soon enforc't to flye  
Thence into *Egypt*, till the Murd'rous King  
Were dead, who sought his life, and missing fill'd  
With Infant blood the streets of *Bethlehem*;  
From *Egypt* home return'd, in *Nazareth*  
Hath been our dwelling many years, his life 80  
Private, unactive, calm, contemplative,  
Little suspicious to any King; but now  
Full grown to Man, acknowledg'd, as I hear,  
By *John* the Baptist, and in publick shown,  
Son own'd from Heaven by his Father's voice;  
I look't for some great change; to Honour? no,  
But trouble, as old *Simeon* plain fore-told,  
That to the fall and rising he should be  
Of many in *Israel*, and to a sign  
Spoken against, that through my very Soul 90  
A sword shall pierce, this is my favour'd lot,  
My Exaltation to Afflictions high;  
Afflicted I may be, it seems, and blest;  
I will not argue that, nor will repine.  
But where delays he now? some great intent  
Conceals him: when twelve years he scarce had seen,  
I lost him, but so found, as well I saw  
He could not lose himself; but went about  
His Father's business; what he meant I mus'd,  
Since understand; much more his absence now 100  
Thus long to some great purpose he obscures.  
But I to wait with patience am inur'd;  
My heart hath been a store-house long of things  
And sayings laid up, portending strange events.  
Thus *Mary* pondering oft, and oft to mind  
Recalling what remarkably had pass'd  
Since first her Salutation heard, with thoughts  
Meekly compos'd awaited the fulfilling:  
The while her Son tracing the Desert wild,  
Sole but with holiest Meditations fed, 110  
Into himself descended, and at once  
All his great work to come before him set;  
(466)

*Paradise Regain'd.*

How to begin, how to accomplish best  
 His end of being on Earth, and mission high :  
 For Satan with slye preface to return  
 Had left him vacant, and with speed was gon  
 Up to the middle Region of thick Air,  
 Where all his Potentates in Council sate ;  
 There without sign of boast, or sign of joy,  
 Sollicitous and blank he thus began.

120

Princes, Heavens antient Sons, Æthereal Thrones,  
 Demonian Spirits now, from the Element  
 Each of his reign allotted, rightlier call'd,  
 Powers of Fire, Air, Water, and Earth beneath,  
 So may we hold our place and these mild seats  
 Without new trouble ; such an Enemy  
 Is ris'n to invade us, who no less  
 Threat'ns then our expulsion down to Hell ;  
 I, as I undertook, and with the vote  
 Consenting in full frequency was impowr'd,  
 Have found him, view'd him, tasted him, but find  
 Far other labour to be undergon  
 Then when I dealt with *Adam* first of Men,  
 Though *Adam* by his Wives allurements fell,  
 However to this Man inferior far,  
 If he be Man by Mothers side at least,  
 With more then humane gifts from Heav'n adorn'd,  
 Perfections absolute, Graces divine,  
 And amplitude of mind to greatest Deeds.  
 Therefore I am return'd, lest confidence  
 Of my success with *Eve* in Paradise  
 Deceive ye to perswasion over-sure  
 Of like succeeding here ; I summon all  
 Rather to be in readiness, with hand  
 Or counsel to assist ; lest I who erst  
 Thought none my equal, now be over-match'd.

130

140

So spake the old Serpent doubting, and from all  
 With clamour was assur'd thir utmost aid  
 At his command ; when from amidst them rose  
*Belial* the dissolutest Spirit that fell  
 The sensuallest, and after *Asmodai*  
 The fleshliest Incubus, and thus advis'd.

150

Set women in his eye and in his walk,  
 Among daughters of men the fairest found ;

Many are in each Region passing fair  
 As the noon Skie ; more like to Goddesses  
 Then Mortal Creatures, graceful and discreet,  
 Expert in amorous Arts, enchanting tongues  
 Perswasive, Virgin majesty with mild  
 And sweet allay'd, yet terrible to approach, 160  
 Skill'd to retire, and in retiring draw  
 Hearts after them tangl'd in Amorous Nets.  
 Such object hath the power to soft'n and tame  
 Severest temper, smooth the rugged'st brow,  
 Enerve, and with voluptuous hope dissolve,  
 Draw out with credulous desire, and lead  
 At will the manliest, resolute'st brest,  
 As the Magnetic hardest Iron draws.

Women, when nothing else, beguil'd the heart  
 Of wisest *Solomon*, and made him build, 170  
 And made him bow to the Gods of his Wives.

To whom quick answer Satan thus return'd.  
*Belial*, in much uneven scale thou weigh'st  
 All others by thy self ; because of old  
 Thou thy self doat'st on womankind, admiring  
 Thir shape, thir colour, and attractive grace,  
 None are, thou think'st, but taken with such toys.  
 Before the Flood thou with thy lusty Crew,  
 False titl'd Sons of God, roaming the Earth  
 Cast wanton eyes on the daughters of men, 180  
 And coupl'd with them, and begot a race.

Have we not seen, or by relation heard,  
 In Courts and Regal Chambers how thou lurk'st,  
 In Wood or Grove by mossie Fountain side,  
 In Valley or Green Meadow to way-lay  
 Some beauty rare, *Calisto*, *Clymene*,  
*Daphne*, or *Semele*, *Antiopa*,  
 Or *Amymone*, *Syrinx*, many more  
 Too long, then lay'st thy scapes on names ador'd,  
*Apollo*, *Neptune*, *Jupiter*, or *Pan*, 190  
 Satyr, or Fawn, or Silvan? But these haunts  
 Delight not all ; among the Sons of Men,  
 How many have with a smile made small account  
 Of beauty and her lures, easily scorn'd  
 All her assaults, on worthier things intent?  
 Remember that *Pelleas* Conquerour,

*Paradise Regain'd.*

A youth, how all the Beauties of the East  
 He slightly view'd, and slightly over-pass'd;  
 How hee sirnam'd of *Africa* dismiss'd  
 In his prime youth the fair *Iberian* maid. 200  
 For *Solomon* he liv'd at ease, and full  
 Of honour, wealth, high fare, aim'd not beyond  
 Higher design' then to enjoy his State;  
 Thence to the bait of Women lay expos'd;  
 But he whom we attempt is wiser far  
 Then *Solomon*, of more exalted mind,  
 Made and set wholly on the accomplishment  
 Of greatest things; what woman will you find,  
 Though of this Age the wonder and the fame,  
 On whom his leisure will vouchsafe an eye 210  
 Of fond desire? or should she confident,  
 As sitting Queen ador'd on Beauties Throne,  
 Descend with all her winning charms begirt  
 To enamour, as the Zone of *Venus* once  
 Wrought that effect on *Jove*, so Fables tell;  
 How would one look from his Majestick brow  
 Seated as on the top of Vertues hill,  
 Discount'nance her despis'd, and put to rout  
 All her array; her female pride deject,  
 Or turn to reverent awe? for Beauty stands 220  
 In the admiration only of weak minds  
 Led captive; cease to admire, and all her Plumes  
 Fall flat and shrink into a trivial toy,  
 At every sudden slighting quite abasht:  
 Therefore with manlier objects we must try  
 His constancy, with such as have more shew  
 Of worth, of honour, glory, and popular praise;  
 Rocks whereon greatest men have ofttest wreck'd;  
 Or that which only seems to satisfie  
 Lawful desires of Nature, not beyond; 230  
 And now I know he hungers where no food  
 Is to be found, in the wide Wilderness;  
 The rest commit to me, I shall let pass  
 No advantage, and his strength as oft assay.

He ceas'd, and heard thir grant in loud acclaim;  
 Then forthwith to him takes a chosen band  
 Of Spirits likest to himself in guile  
 To be at hand, and at his beck appear,

# Paradise Regain'd.

[BK. II.

If cause were to unfold some active Scene  
Of various persons each to know his part; 240  
Then to the Desert takes with these his flight;  
Where still from shade to shade the Son of God  
After forty days fasting had remain'd,  
Now hungring first, and to himself thus said.

Where will this end? four times ten days I have pass'd  
Wandring this woody maze, and humane food  
Nor tasted, nor had appetite: that Fast  
To Vertue I impute not, or count part  
Of what I suffer here; if Nature need not,  
Or God support Nature without repast 250  
Though needing, what praise is it to endure?  
But now I feel I hunger, which declares,  
Nature hath need of what she asks; yet God  
Can satisfie that need some other way,  
Though hunger still remain: so it remain  
Without this bodies wasting, I content me,  
And from the sting of Famine fear no harm,  
Nor mind it, fed with better thoughts that feed  
Mee hungring more to do my Fathers will.

It was the hour of night, when thus the Son 260  
Commun'd in silent walk, then laid him down  
Under the hospitable covert nigh  
Of Trees thick interwoven; there he slept,  
And dream'd, as appetite is wont to dream,  
Of meats and drinks, Natures refreshment sweet;  
Him thought, he by the Brook of *Cherith* stood  
And saw the Ravens with thir horny beaks  
Food to *Elijah* bringing Even and Morn,  
Though ravenous, taught to abstain from what they brought:  
He saw the Prophet also how he fled 270  
Into the Desert, and how there he slept  
Under a Juniper; then how awakt,  
He found his Supper on the coals prepar'd,  
And by the Angel was bid rise and eat,  
And eat the second time after repose,  
The strength whereof suffic'd him forty days;  
Sometimes that with *Elijah* he partook,  
Or as a guest with *Daniel* at his pulse.  
Thus wore out night, and now the Herald Lark  
Left his ground-nest, high trowing to descry 280

*Paradise Regain'd.*

The morns approach, and greet her with his Song:  
 As lightly from his grassy Couch up rose  
 Our Saviour, and found all was but a dream,  
 Fasting he went to sleep, and fasting wak'd.  
 Up to a hill anon his steps he rear'd,  
 From whose high top to ken the prospect round,  
 If Cottage were in view, Sheep-cote or Herd;  
 But Cottage, Herd or Sheep-cote none he saw,  
 Only in a bottom saw a pleasant Grove,  
 With chaunt of tuneful Birds resounding loud; 290  
 Thither he bent his way, determin'd there  
 To rest at noon, and entr'd soon the shade  
 High rooft and walks beneath, and alleys brown  
 That open'd in the midst a woody Scene,  
 Natures own work it seem'd (Nature taught Art)  
 And to a Superstitious eye the haunt  
 Of Wood-Gods and Wood-Nymphs; he view'd it round,  
 When suddenly a man before him stood,  
 Not rustic as before, but seemlier clad,  
 As one in City, or Court, or Palace bred, 300  
 And with fair speech these words to him address'd.

With granted leave officious I return,  
 But much more wonder that the Son of God  
 In this wild solitude so long should bide  
 Of all things destitute, and well I know,  
 Not without hunger. Others of some note,  
 As story tells, have trod this Wilderness;  
 The Fugitive Bond-woman with her Son  
 Out cast *Nebaioth*, yet found he relief  
 By a providing Angel; all the race 310  
 Of *Israel* here had famish'd, had not God  
 Rain'd from Heaven Manna, and that Prophet bold  
 Native of *Thebez* wandring here was fed  
 Twice by a voice inviting him to eat.  
 Of thee these forty days none hath regard,  
 Forty and more deserted here indeed.

To whom thus Jesus; what conclud'st thou hence?  
 They all had need, I as thou seest have none.

How hast thou hunger then? Satan reply'd,  
 Tell me if Food were now before thee set, 320  
 Would'st thou not eat? Thereafter as I like



The giver, answer'd Jesus. Why should that  
Cause thy refusal, said the subtle Fiend,  
Hast thou not right to all Created things,  
Owe not all Creatures by just right to thee  
Duty and Service, nor to stay till bid,  
But tender all their power? nor mention I  
Meats by the Law unclean, or offer'd first  
To Idols, those young *Daniel* could refuse;  
Nor proffer'd by an Enemy, though who  
Would scruple that, with want opprest? behold  
Nature asham'd, or better to express,  
'Troubl'd that thou should'st hunger, hath purvey'd  
From all the Elements her choicest store  
To treat thee as beseems, and as her Lord  
With honour, only deign to sit and eat.

330

He spake no dream, for as his words had end,  
Our Saviour lifting up his eyes beheld  
In ample space under the broadest shade  
A Table richly spread, in regal mode,  
With dishes pil'd, and meats of noblest sort  
And savour, Beasts of chase, or Fowl of game,  
In pastry built, or from the spit, or boyl'd,  
Gris-amber-steam'd; all Fish from Sea or Shore,  
Freshet, or purling Brook, of shell or fin,  
And exquisitest name, for which was drain'd  
*Pontus* and *Lucrine* Bay, and *Afric* Coast.  
Alas how simple, to these Cates compar'd,  
Was that crude Apple that diverted *Eve*!

340

And at a stately side-board by the wine  
That fragrant smell diffus'd, in order stood  
Tall stripling youths rich clad, of fairer hew  
Then *Ganymed* or *Hylas*, distant more  
Under the Trees now trip'd, now solemn stood  
Nymphs of *Diana's* train, and *Naiades*  
With fruits and flowers from *Amalthea's* horn,  
And Ladies of th' *Hesperides*, that seem'd  
Fairer then feign'd of old, or fabl'd since  
Of Fairy Damsels met in Forest wide  
By Knights of *Logres*, or of *Lyones*,  
*Lancelot* or *Pelleas*, or *Pellenore*,

350

360

And all the while Harmonious Aires were heard  
Of chiming strings, or charming pipes and winds



*Paradise Regain'd.*

Of gentlest gale *Arabian* odors fann'd  
 From their soft wings, and *Flora's* earliest smells.  
 Such was the Splendour, and the Tempter now  
 His invitation earnestly renew'd.

What doubts the Son of God to sit and eat?  
 These are not Fruits forbidden, no interdict  
 Defends the touching of these viands pure, 370  
 Thir taste no knowledge works, at least of evil,  
 But life preserves, destroys life's enemy,  
 Hunger, with sweet restorative delight.  
 All these are Spirits of Air, and Woods, and Springs,  
 Thy gentle Ministers, who come to pay  
 Thee homage, and acknowledge thee thir Lord :  
 What doubt'st thou Son of God? sit down and eat.

To whom thus Jesus temperately reply'd :  
 Said'st thou not that to all things I had right?  
 And who withholds my pow'r that right to use? 380  
 Shall I receive by gift what of my own,  
 When and where likes me best, I can command?  
 I can at will, doubt not, assoon as thou,  
 Command a Table in this Wilderness,  
 And call swift flights of Angels ministrant  
 Array'd in Glory on my cup to attend :  
 Why shouldst thou then obtrude this diligence,  
 In vain, where no acceptance it can find,  
 And with my hunger what hast thou to do?  
 Thy pompous Delicacies I contemn, 390  
 And count thy specious gifts no gifts but guiles.

To whom thus answer'd Satan malecontent :  
 That I have also power to give thou seest,  
 If of that pow'r I bring thee voluntary  
 What I might have bestow'd on whom I pleas'd,  
 And rather opportunely in this place  
 Chose to impart to thy apparent need,  
 Why shouldst thou not accept it? but I see  
 What I can do or offer is suspect ;  
 Of these things others quickly will dispose 400  
 Whose pains have earn'd the far fet spoil. With that  
 Both Table and Provision vanish'd quite  
 With sound of Harpies wings, and Talons heard ;  
 Only the importune Tempter still remain'd,  
 And with these words his temptation pursu'd.

# Paradise Regain'd.

[BK. II.]

By hunger, that each other Creature tames,  
Thou art not to be harm'd, therefore not mov'd ;  
Thy temperance invincible besides,  
For no allurement yields to appetite,  
And all thy heart is set on high designs, 410  
High actions : but wherewith to be atchiev'd ?  
Great acts require great means of enterprise,  
Thou art unknown, unfriended, low of birth,  
A Carpenter thy Father known, thy self  
Bred up in poverty and streights at home ;  
Lost in a Desert here and hunger-bit :  
Which way or from what hope dost thou aspire  
To greatness ? whence Authority deriv'st,  
What Followers, what Retinue canst thou gain,  
Or at thy heels the dizzy Multitude, 420  
Longer then thou canst feed them on thy cost ?  
Money brings Honour, Friends, Conquest, and Realms ;  
What rais'd *Antipater* the *Edomite*,  
And his Son *Herod* plac'd on *Juda's* Throne ;  
(Thy throne) but gold that got him puissant friends ?  
Therefore, if at great things thou wouldst arrive,  
Get Riches first, get Wealth, and Treasure heap,  
Not difficult, if thou hearken to me,  
Riches are mine, Fortune is in my hand ;  
They whom I favour thrive in wealth amain, 430  
While Virtue, Valour, Wisdom sit in want.  
To whom thus Jesus patiently reply'd ;  
Yet Wealth without these three is impotent,  
To gain dominion or to keep it gain'd.  
Witness those antient Empires of the Earth,  
In highth of all thir flowing wealth dissolv'd :  
But men endu'd with these have oft attain'd  
In lowest poverty to highest deeds ;  
*Gideon* and *Jephtha*, and the Shepherd lad,  
Whose off-spring on the Throne of *Juda* sat 440  
So many Ages, and shall yet regain  
That seat, and reign in *Israel* without end.  
Among the Heathen, (for throughout the World  
To me is not unknown what hath been done  
Worthy of Memorial) canst thou not remember  
*Quintius*, *Fabricius*, *Curius*, *Regulus* ?  
For I esteem those names of men so poor

Who could do mighty things, and could contemn  
 Riches though offer'd from the hand of Kings.  
 And what in me seems wanting, but that I 450  
 May also in this poverty as soon  
 Accomplish what they did, perhaps and more?  
 Extol not Riches then, the toyl of Fools  
 The wise mans cumbrance if not snare, more apt  
 To slacken Virtue, and abate her edge,  
 Then prompt her to do aught may merit praise.  
 What if with like aversion I reject  
 Riches and Realms; yet not for that a Crown,  
 Golden in shew, is but a wreath of thorns,  
 Brings dangers, troubles, cares, and sleepless nights 460  
 To him who wears the Regal Diadem,  
 When on his shoulders each mans burden lies :  
 For therein stands the office of a King,  
 His Honour, Vertue, Merit and chief Praise,  
 That for the Publick all this weight he bears.  
 Yet he who reigns within himself, and rules  
 Passions, Desires, and Fears, is more a King;  
 Which every wise and vertuous man attains :  
 And who attains not, ill aspires to rule  
 Cities of men, or head-strong Multitudes, 470  
 Subject himself to Anarchy within,  
 Or lawless passions in him which he serves.  
 But to guide Nations in the way of truth  
 By saving Doctrine, and from errour lead  
 To know, and knowing worship God aright,  
 Is yet more Kingly, this attracts the Soul,  
 Governs the inner man, the nobler part,  
 That other o're the body only reigns,  
 And oft by force, which to a generous mind  
 So reigning can be no sincere delight. 480  
 Besides to give a Kingdom hath been thought  
 Greater and nobler done, and to lay down  
 Far more magnanimous, then to assume.  
 Riches are needless then, both for themselves,  
 And for thy reason why they should be sought,  
 To gain a Scepter, ofttest better miss't.

*The End of the Second Book.*

# PARADISE REGAIN'D.

## *The Third Book.*

So spake the Son of God, and Satan stood  
A while as mute confounded what to say,  
What to reply, confuted and convinc't  
Of his weak arguing, and fallacious drift ;  
At length collecting all his Serpent wiles,  
With soothing words renew'd, him thus accosts.

I see thou know'st what is of use to know,  
What best to say canst say, to do canst do ;  
Thy actions to thy words accord, thy words  
To thy large heart give utterance due, thy heart 10  
Contains of good, wise, just, the perfect shape.  
Should Kings and Nations from thy mouth consult,  
Thy Counsel would be as the Oracle  
*Urim* and *Thummim*, those oraculous gems  
On *Aaron's* breast : or tongue of Seers old  
Infallible ; or wert thou sought to deeds  
That might require th' array of war, thy skill  
Of conduct would be such, that all the world  
Could not sustain thy Prowess, or subsist  
In battel, though against thy few in arms. 20  
These God-like Vertues wherefore dost thou hide ?  
Affecting private life, or more obscure  
In savage Wilderness, wherefore deprive  
All Earth her wonder at thy acts, thy self  
The fame and glory, glory the reward  
That sole excites to high attempts the flame  
Of most erected Spirits, most temper'd pure  
Ætherial, who all pleasures else despise,

*Paradise Regain'd.*

All treasures and all gain esteem as dross,  
 And dignities and powers all but the highest? 30  
 Thy years are ripe, and over-ripe, the Son  
 Of *Macedonian Philip* had e're these  
 Won *Asia* and the Throne of *Cyrus* held  
 At his dispose, young *Scipio* had brought down  
 The *Carthaginian* pride, young *Pompey* quell'd  
 The *Pontic* King and in triumph had rode.  
 Yet years, and to ripe years judgment mature,  
 Quench not the thirst of glory, but augment.  
 Great *Julius*, whom now all the world admires,  
 The more he grew in years, the more inflam'd 40  
 With glory, wept that he had liv'd so long  
 Inglorious: but thou yet art not too late.

To whom our Saviour calmly thus reply'd.  
 Thou neither dost perswade me to seek wealth  
 For Empires sake, nor Empire to affect  
 For glories sake by all thy argument.  
 For what is glory but the blaze of fame,  
 The peoples praise, if always praise unmixt?  
 And what the people but a herd confus'd,  
 A miscellaneous rabble, who extol 50  
 Things vulgar, & well weigh'd, scarce worth the praise,  
 They praise and they admire they know not what;  
 And know not whom, but as one leads the other;  
 And what delight to be by such extoll'd,  
 To live upon thir tongues and be thir talk,  
 Of whom to be disprais'd were no small praise?  
 His lot who dares be singularly good.  
 Th' intelligent among them and the wise  
 Are few, and glory scarce of few is rais'd.  
 This is true glory and renown, when God 60  
 Looking on the Earth, with approbation marks  
 The just man, and divulges him through Heaven  
 To all his Angels, who with true applause  
 Recount his praises; thus he did to *Job*,  
 When to extend his fame through Heaven & Earth,  
 As thou to thy reproach mayst well remember,  
 He ask'd thee, hast thou seen my servant *Job*?  
 Famous he was in Heaven, on Earth less known;  
 Where glory is false glory, attributed  
 To things not glorious, men not worthy of fame. 70

They err who count it glorious to subdue  
 By Conquest far and wide, to over-run  
 Large Countries, and in field great Battels win,  
 Great Cities by assault: what do these Worthies,  
 But rob and spoil, burn, slaughter, and enslave  
 Peaceable Nations, neighbouring, or remote,  
 Made Captive, yet deserving freedom more  
 Then those thir Conquerours, who leave behind  
 Nothing but ruin wheresoe're they rove,  
 And all the flourishing works of peace destroy, 80  
 Then swell with pride, and must be titl'd Gods,  
 Great Benefactors of mankind, Deliverers,  
 Worship't with Temple, Priest and Sacrifice;  
 One is the Son of *Jove*, of *Mars* the other,  
 Till Conquerour Death discover them scarce men,  
 Rowling in brutish vices, and deform'd,  
 Violent or shameful death thir due reward.  
 But if there be in glory aught of good,  
 It may by means far different be attain'd  
 Without ambition, war, or violence; 90  
 By deeds of peace, by wisdom eminent,  
 By patience, temperance; I mention still  
 Him whom thy wrongs with Saintly patience born,  
 Made famous in a Land and times obscure;  
 Who names not now with honour patient *Job*?  
 Poor *Socrates* (who next more memorable?)  
 By what he taught and suffer'd for so doing,  
 For truths sake suffering death unjust, lives now  
 Equal in fame to proudest Conquerours.  
 Yet if for fame and glory aught be done, 100  
 Aught suffer'd; if young *African* for fame  
 His wasted Country freed from *Punic* rage,  
 The deed becomes unprais'd, the man at least,  
 And loses, though but verbal, his reward.  
 Shall I seek glory then, as vain men seek  
 Oft not deserv'd? I seek not mine, but his  
 Who sent me, and thereby witness whence I am.  
 To whom the Tempter murmuring thus reply'd.  
 Think not so slight of glory; therein least,  
 Resembling thy great Father: he seeks glory, 110  
 And for his glory all things made, all things  
 Orders and governs, nor content in Heaven

*Paradise Regain'd.*

By all his Angels glorifi'd, requires  
 Glory from men, from all men good or bad,  
 Wise or unwise, no difference, no exemption ;  
 Above all Sacrifice, or hallow'd gift  
 Glory he requires, and glory he receives  
 Promiscuous from all Nations, Jew, or Greek,  
 Or Barbarous, nor exception hath declar'd ;  
 From us his foes pronounc't glory he exacts.

120

To whom our Saviour fervently reply'd.  
 And reason ; since his word all things produc'd,  
 Though chiefly not for glory as prime end,  
 But to shew forth his goodness, and impart  
 His good communicable to every soul  
 Freely ; of whom what could he less expect  
 Then glory and benediction, that is thanks,  
 The slightest, easiest, readiest recompence  
 From them who could return him nothing else,  
 And not returning that would likeliest render  
 Contempt instead, dishonour, obloquy ?  
 Hard recompence, unsutable return  
 For so much good, so much beneficence.  
 But why should man seek glory ? who of his own  
 Hath nothing, and to whom nothing belongs  
 But condemnation, ignominy, and shame ?

130

Who for so many benefits receiv'd  
 Turn'd recreant to God, ingrate and false,  
 And so of all true good himself despoil'd,  
 Yet, sacrilegious, to himself would take  
 That which to God alone of right belongs ;  
 Yet so much bounty is in God, such grace,  
 That who advance his glory, not thir own,  
 Them he himself to glory will advance.

140

So spake the Son of God ; and here again  
 Satan had not to answer, but stood struck  
 With guilt of his own sin, for he himself  
 Insatiable of glory had lost all,  
 Yet of another Plea bethought him soon.

Of glory as thou wilt, said he, so deem,  
 Worth or not worth the seeking, let it pass :  
 But to a Kingdom thou art born, ordain'd  
 To sit upon thy Father *David's* Throne ;  
 By Mother's side thy Father, though thy right

150



Be now in powerful hands, that will not part  
 Easily from possession won with arms ;  
*Judea* now and all the promis'd land  
 Reduc't a Province under Roman yoke,  
 Obeys *Tiberius* ; nor is always rul'd  
 With temperate sway ; oft have they violated 160  
 The Temple, oft the Law with foul affronts,  
 Abominations rather, as did once  
*Antiochus* : and think'st thou to regain  
 Thy right by sitting still or thus retiring?  
 So did not *Machabeus* : he indeed  
 Retir'd unto the Desert, but with arms ;  
 And o're a mighty King so oft prevail'd,  
 That by strong hand his Family obtain'd,  
 Though Priests, the Crown, and *David's* Throne usurp'd,  
 With *Modin* and her Suburbs once content. 170  
 If Kingdom move thee not, let move thee Zeal,  
 And Duty ; Zeal and Duty are not slow ;  
 But on Occasions forelock watchful wait.  
 They themselves rather are occasion best,  
 Zeal of thy Fathers house, Duty to free  
 Thy Country from her Heathen servitude ;  
 So shalt thou best fullfil, best verifie  
 The Prophets old, who sung thy endless reign,  
 The happier reign the sooner it begins,  
 Reign then ; what canst thou better do the while? 180  
 To whom our Saviour answer thus return'd.  
 All things are best fullfil'd in thir due time,  
 And time there is for all things, Truth hath said :  
 If of my reign Prophetic Writ hath told  
 That it shall never end, so when begin  
 The Father in his purpose hath decreed,  
 He in whose hand all times and seasons roul.  
 What if he hath decreed that I shall first  
 Be try'd in humble state, and things adverse,  
 By tribulations, injuries, insults, 190  
 Contempts, and scorns, and snares, and violence,  
 Suffering, abstaining, quietly expecting  
 Without distrust or doubt, that he may know  
 What I can suffer, how obey? who best  
 Can suffer, best can do ; best reign, who first  
 Well hath obey'd ; just tryal e're I merit

*Paradise Regain'd.*

My exaltation without change or end.  
 But what concerns it thee when I begin  
 My everlasting Kingdom, why art thou  
 Sollicitous, what moves thy inquisition?  
 Know'st thou not that my rising is thy fall,  
 And my promotion will be thy destruction?

200

To whom the Tempter inly rackt reply'd.  
 Let that come when it comes; all hope is lost  
 Of my reception into grace; what worse?  
 For where no hope is left, is left no fear;  
 If there be worse, the expectation more  
 Of worse torments me than the feeling can.  
 I would be at the worst; worst is my Port,  
 My harbour and my ultimate repose,  
 The end I would attain, my final good.  
 My error was my error, and my crime  
 My crime; whatever for it self condemn'd,  
 And will alike be punish'd; whether thou  
 Raign or raign not; though to that gentle brow  
 Willingly I could flye, and hope thy raign,  
 From that placid aspect and meek regard,  
 Rather then aggravate my evil state,  
 Would stand between me and thy Fathers ire,  
 (Whose ire I dread more then the fire of Hell)  
 A shelter and a kind of shading cool  
 Interposition, as a summers cloud.

210

220

If I then to the worst that can be hast,  
 Why move thy feet so slow to what is best,  
 Happiest both to thy self and all the world,  
 That thou who worthiest art should'st be thir King?  
 Perhaps thou linger'st in deep thoughts detain'd  
 Of the enterprize so hazardous and high;  
 No wonder, for though in thee be united  
 What of perfection can in man be found,  
 Or human nature can receive, consider  
 Thy life hath yet been private, most part spent  
 At home, scarce view'd the *Gallilean* Towns,  
 And once a year *Jerusalem*, few days  
 Short sojourn; and what thence could'st thou observe?  
 The world thou hast not seen, much less her glory,  
 Empires, and Monarchs, and thir radiant Courts,  
 Best school of best experience, quickest in sight

230

In all things that to greatest actions lead.  
 The wisest, unexperienc't, will be ever 240  
 Timorous and loth, with novice modesty,  
 (As he who seeking Asses found a Kingdom)  
 Irresolute, unhardy, unadventrous:  
 But I will bring thee where thou soon shalt quit  
 Those rudiments, and see before thine eyes  
 The Monarchies of the Earth, thir pomp and state,  
 Sufficient introduction to inform  
 Thee, of thy self so apt, in regal Arts,  
 And regal Mysteries; that thou may'st know  
 How best their opposition to withstand. 250

With that (such power was giv'n him then) he took  
 The Son of God up to a Mountain high.  
 It was a Mountain at whose verdant feet  
 A spacious plain out stretch't in circuit wide  
 Lay pleasant; from his side two rivers flow'd,  
 Th' one winding, the other strait and left between  
 Fair Champain with less rivers interveind,  
 Then meeting joyn'd thir tribute to the Sea:  
 Fertil of corn the glebe, of oyl and wine,  
 With herds the pastures throng'd, with flocks the hills, 260  
 Huge Cities and high towr'd, that well might seem  
 The seats of mightiest Monarchs, and so large  
 The Prospect was, that here and there was room  
 For barren desert fountainless and dry.  
 To this high mountain top the Tempter brought  
 Our Saviour, and new train of words began.

Well have we speeded, and o're hill and dale,  
 Forest and field, and flood, Temples and Towers  
 Cut shorter many a league; here thou behold'st 270  
*Assyria* and her Empires antient bounds,  
*Araxes* and the *Caspian* lake, thence on  
 As far as *Indus* East, *Euphrates* West,  
 And oft beyond; to South the *Persian* Bay,  
 And inaccessible the *Arabian* drouth:  
 Here *Ninevee*, of length within her wall  
 Several days journey, built by *Ninus* old,  
 Of that first golden Monarchy the seat,  
 And seat of *Salmanassar*, whose success  
*Israel* in long captivity still mourns;  
 There *Babylon* the wonder of all tongues, 280

*Paradise Regain'd.*

As antient, but rebuilt by him who twice  
*Judah* and all thy Father *David's* house  
 Led captive, and *Jerusalem* laid waste,  
 Till *Cyrus* set them free; *Persepolis*  
 His City there thou seest, and *Bactra* there;  
*Ecbatana* her structure vast there shews,  
 And *Hecatompylos* her hunderd gates,  
 There *Susa* by *Choaspes*, amber stream,  
 The drink of none but Kings; of later fame  
 Built by *Emathian*, or by *Parthian* hands, 290  
 The great *Seleucia*, *Nisibis*, and there  
*Artaxata*, *Teredon*, *Tesiphon*,  
 Turning with easie eye thou may'st behold.  
 All these the *Parthian*, now some Ages past,  
 By great *Arsaces* led, who founded first  
 That Empire, under his dominion holds  
 From the luxurious Kings of *Antioch* won.  
 And just in time thou com'st to have a view  
 Of his great power; for now the *Parthian* King  
 In *Ctesiphon* hath gather'd all his Host 300  
 Against the *Scythian*, whose incursions wild  
 Have wasted *Sogdiana*; to her aid  
 He marches now in hast; see, though from far,  
 His thousands, in what martial equipage  
 They issue forth, Steel Bows, and Shafts their arms  
 Of equal dread in flight, or in pursuit;  
 All Horsemen, in which fight they most excel;  
 See how in warlike muster they appear,  
 In Rhombs and wedges, and half moons, and wings.

He look't and saw what numbers numberless 310  
 The City gates out powr'd, light armed Troops  
 In coats of Mail and military pride;  
 In Mail thir horses clad, yet fleet and strong,  
 Prauncing their riders bore, the flower and choice  
 Of many Provinces from bound to bound;  
 From *Arachosia*, from *Candaor* East,  
 And *Margiana* to the *Hyrceanian* cliffs  
 Of *Caucasus*, and dark *Iberian* dales,  
 From *Atropatia* and the neighbouring plains  
 Of *Adiabene*, *Media*, and the South 320  
 Of *Susiana* to *Balsara's* hav'n.  
 He saw them in thir forms of battell rang'd,

How quick they wheel'd, and flying behind them shot  
 Sharp sleet of arrowie showers against the face  
 Of thir pursuers, and overcame by flight;  
 The field all iron cast a gleaming brown,  
 Nor wanted clouds of foot, nor on each horn,  
 Cuirassiers all in steel for standing fight;  
 Chariots or Elephants endorst with Towers  
 Of Archers, nor of labouring Pioners  
 A multitude with Spades and Axes arm'd  
 To lay hills plain, fell woods, or valleys fill,  
 Or where plain was raise hill, or over-lay  
 With bridges rivers proud, as with a yoke;  
 Mules after these, Camels and Dromedaries,  
 And Waggons fraught with Utensils of war.  
 Such forces met not, nor so wide a camp,  
 When *Agrican* with all his Northern powers  
 Besieg'd *Albracca*, as Romances tell;  
 The City of *Gallaphrone*, from thence to win  
 The fairest of her Sex *Angelica*  
 His daughter, sought by many Prowest Knights,  
 Both *Paynim*, and the Peers of *Charlemane*.  
 Such and so numerous was thir Chivalrie;  
 At sight whereof the Fiend yet more presum'd,  
 And to our Saviour thus his words renew'd.

330

340

That thou may'st know I seek not to engage  
 Thy Vertue, and not every way secure  
 On no slight grounds thy safety; hear, and mark  
 To what end I have brought thee hither and shewn  
 All this fair sight; thy Kingdom though foretold  
 By Prophet or by Angel, unless thou  
 Endeavour, as thy Father *David* did,  
 Thou never shalt obtain; prediction still  
 In all things, and all men, supposes means,  
 Without means us'd, what it predicts revokes.  
 But say thou wer't possess'd of *David's* Throne  
 By free consent of all, none opposite,  
*Samaritan* or *Jew*; how could'st thou hope  
 Long to enjoy it quiet and secure,  
 Between two such enclosing enemies  
*Roman* and *Parthian*? therefore one of these  
 Thou must make sure thy own, the *Parthian* first  
 By my advice, as nearer and of late

350

360

Found able by invasion to annoy  
 Thy country, and captive lead away her Kings  
*Antigonus*, and old *Hyrcaus* bound,  
 Mauge the *Roman*: it shall be my task  
 To render thee the *Parthian* at dispose;  
 Chuse which thou wilt by conquest or by league 370  
 By him thou shalt regain, without him not,  
 That which alone can truly reinstall thee  
 In *David's* royal seat, his true Successour,  
 Deliverance of thy brethren, those ten Tribes  
 Whose off-spring in his Territory yet serve  
 In *Habor*, and among the *Medes* dispers't,  
 Ten Sons of *Jacob*, two of *Joseph* lost  
 Thus long from *Israel*; serving as of old  
 Thir Fathers in the land of *Egypt* serv'd,  
 This offer sets before thee to deliver. 380

These if from servitude thou shalt restore  
 To thir inheritance, then, nor till then,  
 Thou on the Throne of *David* in full glory,  
 From *Egypt* to *Euphrates* and beyond  
 Shalt raig, and *Rome* or *Cæsar* not need fear.

To whom our Saviour answer'd thus unmov'd.  
 Much ostentation vain of fleshly arm,  
 And fragile arms, much instrument of war  
 Long in preparing, soon to nothing brought,  
 Before mine eyes thou hast set; and in my ear 390  
 Vented much policy, and projects deep  
 Of enemies, of aids, battels and leagues,  
 Plausible to the world, to me worth naught.  
 Means I must use thou say'st, prediction else  
 Will unpredict and fail me of the Throne:  
 My time I told thee, (and that time for thee  
 Were better farthest off) is not yet come;  
 When that comes think not thou to find me slack  
 On my part aught endeavouring, or to need  
 Thy politic maxims, or that cumbersome 400  
 Luggage of war there shewn me, argument  
 Of human weakness rather than of strength.  
 My brethren, as thou call'st them; those Ten Tribes  
 I must deliver, if I mean to raig  
*David's* true heir, and his full Scepter sway  
 To just extent over all *Israel's* Sons;

But whence to thee this zeal, where was it then  
 For *Israel*, or for *David*, or his Throne,  
 When thou stood'st up his Tempter to the pride  
 Of numbring *Israel*, which cost the lives 410  
 Of threescore and ten thousand *Israelites*  
 By three days Pestilence? such was thy zeal  
 To *Israel* then, the same that now to me.  
 As for those captive Tribes, themselves were they  
 Who wrought their own captivity, fell off  
 From God to worship Calves, the Deities  
 Of *Egypt*, *Baal* next and *Ashtaroth*,  
 And all the Idolatries of Heathen round,  
 Besides thir other worse then heathenish crimes;  
 Nor in the land of their captivity 420  
 Humbled themselves, or penitent besought  
 The God of their fore-fathers; but so dy'd  
 Impenitent, and left a race behind  
 Like to themselves, distinguishable scarce  
 From Gentils, but by Circumcision vain,  
 And God with Idols in` their worship joyn'd.  
 Should I of these the liberty regard,  
 Who freed, as to their antient Patrimony,  
 Unhumbld, unrepentant, unreform'd,  
 Headlong would follow; and to thir Gods perhaps 430  
 Of *Bethel* and of *Dan*? no, let them serve  
 Thir enemies, who serve Idols with God.  
 Yet he at length, time to himself best known,  
 Remembring *Abraham* by some wond'rous call  
 May bring them back repentant and sincere,  
 And at their passing cleave the *Assyrian* flood,  
 While to their native land with joy they hast,  
 As the Red Sea and *Jordan* once he cleft,  
 When to the promis'd land thir Fathers pass'd;  
 To his due time and providence I leave them. 440  
 So spake *Israel's* true King, and to the Fiend  
 Made answer meet, that made void all his wiles.  
 So fares it when with truth falshood contends.

*The End of the Third Book.*



# PARADISE REGAIN'D.

## *The Fourth Book.*

PERPLEX'D and troubl'd at his bad success  
The Tempter stood, nor had what to reply,  
Discover'd in his fraud, thrown from his hope,  
So oft, and the perswasive Rhetoric  
That sleek't his tongue, and won so much on *Eve*,  
So little here, nay lost; but *Eve* was *Eve*,  
This far his over-match, who self deceiv'd  
And rash, before-hand had no better weigh'd  
The strength he was to cope with, or his own:  
But as a man who had been matchless held  
In cunning, over-reach't where least he thought,  
To salve his credit, and for very spight  
Still will be tempting him who foys him still,  
And never cease, though to his shame the more;  
Or as a swarm of flies in vintage time,  
About the wine-press where sweet moust is powr'd,  
Beat off, returns as oft with humming sound;  
Or surging waves against a solid rock,  
Though all to shivers dash't, the assault renew,  
Vain battry, and in froth or bubbles end:  
So Satan, whom repulse upon repulse  
Met ever; and to shameful silence brought,  
Yet gives not o're though desperate of success,  
And his vain importunity pursues.  
He brought our Saviour to the western side  
Of that high mountain, whence he might behold  
Another plain, long but in bredth not wide;  
Wash'd by the Southern Sea, and on the North

10

20

# Paradise Regain'd.

[BK. IV.]

To equal length back'd with a ridge of hills  
That screen'd the fruits of the earth and seats of men 30  
From cold *Septentrion* blasts, thence in the midst  
Divided by a river, of whose banks  
On each side an Imperial City stood.  
With Towers and Temples proudly elevate  
On seven small Hills, with Palaces adorn'd,  
Porches and Theatres, Baths, Aqueducts,  
Statues and Trophees, and Triumphal Arcs,  
Gardens and Groves presented to his eyes,  
Above the highth of Mountains interpos'd.  
By what strange Parallax or Optic skill 40  
Of vision multiply'd through air, or glass  
Of Telescope, were curious to enquire :  
And now the Tempter thus his silence broke.

The City which thou seest no other deem  
Then great and glorious *Rome*, Queen of the Earth  
So far renown'd, and with the spoils enrich  
Of Nations ; there the Capitol thou seest  
Above the rest lifting his stately head  
On the *Tarpeian* rock, her Cittadel  
Impregnable, and there Mount *Palatine* 50  
The Imperial Palace, compass huge, and high  
The Structure, skill of noblest Architects,  
With gilded battlements, conspicuous far,  
Turrets and Terrases, and glittering Spires.  
Many a fair Edifice besides, more like  
Houses of Gods (so well I have dispos'd  
My Aerie Microscope) thou may'st behold  
Outside and inside both, pillars and roofs  
Carv'd work, the hand of fam'd Artificers  
In Cedar, Marble, Ivory or Gold. 60  
Thence to the gates cast round thine eye, and see  
What conflux issuing forth, or entring in,  
Pretors, Proconsuls to thir Provinces  
Hasting or on return, in robes of State ;  
Lictors and rods the ensigns of thir power,  
Legions and Cohorts, turmes of horse and wings :  
Or Embassies from Regions far remote  
In various habits on the *Appian* road,  
Or on the *Æmilian*, some from farthest South,  
*Syene*, and where the shadow both way falls, 70

*Paradise Regain'd.*

*Meroe*, *Nilotic* Isle, and more to West,  
 The Realm of *Bocchus* to the Black-moor Sea;  
 From the *Asian* Kings and *Parthian* among these,  
 From *India* and the golden *Chersoness*,  
 And utmost *Indian* Isle *Taprobane*,  
 Dusk faces with white silken Turbants wreath'd:  
 From *Gallia*, *Gades*, and the *Brittish* West,  
*Germans* and *Scythians*, and *Sarmatians* North  
 Beyond *Danubius* to the *Tauric* Pool.

All Nations now to *Rome* obedience pay,  
 To *Rome's* great Emperour, whose wide domain  
 In ample Territory, wealth and power,  
 Civility of Manners, Arts, and Arms,  
 And long Renown thou justly may'st prefer  
 Before the *Parthian*; these two Thrones except,  
 The rest are barbarous, and scarce worth the sight,  
 Shar'd among petty Kings too far remov'd;  
 These having shewn thee, I have shewn thee all  
 The Kingdoms of the world, and all thir glory.

This Emperour hath no Son, and now is old,  
 Old, and lascivious, and from *Rome* retir'd  
 To *Capreae* an Island small but strong  
 On the *Campanian* shore, with purpose there  
 His horrid lusts in private to enjoy,  
 Committing to a wicked Favourite  
 All publick cares, and yet of him suspicious,  
 Hated of all, and hating; with what ease  
 Indu'd with Regal Vertues as thou art,  
 Appearing, and beginning noble deeds,  
 Might'st thou expel this monster from his Throne  
 Now made a stye, and in his place ascending  
 A victor people free from servile yoke?

And with my help thou may'st; to me the power  
 Is given, and by that right I give it thee.  
 Aim therefore at no less then all the world,  
 Aim at the highest, without the highest attain'd  
 Will be for thee no sitting, or not long  
 On *David's* Throne, be prophecied what will.

To whom the Son of God unmov'd reply'd.  
 Nor doth this grandeur and majestic show  
 Of luxury, though call'd magnificence,  
 More then of arms before, allure mine eye,

# Paradise Regain'd.

[BK. IV.]

Much less my mind; though thou should'st add to tell  
Thir sumptuous gluttonies, and gorgeous feasts  
On *Cittron* tables or *Atlantic* stone;  
(For I have also heard, perhaps have read)  
Their wines of *Setia*, *Cales*, and *Falerne*,  
*Chios* and *Creet*, and how they quaff in Gold,  
Crystal and Myrrhine cups imboss'd with Gems  
And studs of Pearl, to me should'st tell who thirst 120  
And hunger still: then Embassies thou shew'st  
From Nations far and nigh; what honour that,  
But tedious wast of time to sit and hear  
So many hollow complements and lies,  
Outlandish flatteries? then proceed'st to talk  
Of the Emperour, how easily subdu'd,  
How gloriously; I shall, thou say'st, expel  
A brutish monster: what if I withal  
Expel a Devil who first made him such?  
Let his tormenter Conscience find him out, 130  
For him I was not sent, nor yet to free  
That people victor once, now vile and base,  
Deservedly made vassal, who once just,  
Frugal, and mild, and temperate, conquer'd well,  
But govern ill the Nations under yoke,  
Peeling thir Provinces, exhausted all  
By lust and rapine; first ambitious grown  
Of triumph that insulting vanity;  
Then cruel, by thir sports to blood enur'd  
Of fighting beasts, and men to beasts expos'd, 140  
Luxurious by thir wealth, and greedier still,  
And from the daily Scene effeminate.  
What wise and valiant man would seek to free  
These thus degenerate, by themselves enslav'd,  
Or could of inward slaves make outward free?  
Know therefore when my season comes to sit  
On *David's* Throne, it shall be like a tree  
Spreading and over-shadowing all the Earth,  
Or as a stone that shall to pieces dash  
All Monarchies besides throughout the world, 150  
And of my Kingdom there shall be no end:  
Means there shall be to this, but what the means,  
Is not for thee to know, nor me to tell.

To whom the Tempter impudent repli'd.

I see all offers made by me how slight  
 Thou valu'st, because offer'd, and reject'st :  
 Nothing will please the difficult and nice,  
 Or nothing more then still to contradict :  
 On the other side know also thou, that I  
 On what I offer set as high esteem,  
 Nor what I part with mean to give for naught ;  
 All these which in a moment thou behold'st,  
 The Kingdoms of the world to thee I give ;  
 For giv'n to me, I give to whom I please,  
 No trifle ; yet with this reserve, not else,  
 On this condition, if thou wilt fall down,  
 And worship me as thy superior Lord,  
 Easily done, and hold them all of me ;  
 For what can less so great a gift deserve ?

160

Whom thus our Saviour answer'd with disdain.  
 I never lik'd thy talk, thy offers less,  
 Now both abhor, since thou hast dar'd to utter  
 The abominable terms, impious condition ;  
 But I endure the time, till which expir'd,  
 Thou hast permission on me. It is written  
 The first of all Commandments, Thou shalt worship  
 The Lord thy God, and only him shalt serve ;  
 And dar'st thou to the Son of God propound  
 To worship thee accurst, now more accurst  
 For this attempt bolder then that on *Eve*,  
 And more blasphemous ? which expect to rue.  
 The Kingdoms of the world to thee were giv'n,  
 Permitted rather, and by thee usurp't,  
 Other donation none thou canst produce :  
 If given, by whom but by the King of Kings,  
 God over all supreme ? if giv'n to thee,  
 By thee how fairly is the Giver now  
 Repaid ? But gratitude in thee is lost  
 Long since. Wert thou so void of fear or shame,  
 As offer them to me the Son of God,  
 To me my own, on such abhorred pact,  
 That I fall down and worship thee as God ?  
 Get thee behind me ; plain thou now appear'st  
 That Evil one, Satan for ever damn'd.

170

180

190

To whom the Fiend with fear abasht reply'd.  
 Be not so sore offended, Son of God ;

Though Sons of God both Angels are and Men,  
 If I to try whether in higher sort  
 Then these thou bear'st that title, have propos'd  
 What both from Men and Angels I receive, 200  
 Tetrarchs of fire, air, flood, and on the earth  
 Nations besides from all the quarter'd winds,  
 God of this world invok't and world beneath;  
 Who then thou art, whose coming is foretold  
 To me so fatal, me it most concerns.  
 The tryal hath indamag'd thee no way,  
 Rather more honour left and more esteem;  
 Me naught advantag'd, missing what I aim'd.  
 Therefore let pass, as they are transitory,  
 The Kingdoms of this world; I shall no more 210  
 Advise thee, gain them as thou canst, or not.  
 And thou thy self seem'st otherwise inclin'd  
 Then to a worldly Crown, addicted more  
 To contemplation and profound dispute,  
 As by that early action may be judg'd,  
 When slipping from thy Mothers eye thou went'st  
 Alone into the Temple; there was found  
 Among the gravest Rabbies disputant  
 On points and questions fitting *Moses* Chair,  
 Teaching not taught; the childhood shews the man, 220  
 As morning shews the day. Be famous then  
 By wisdom; as thy Empire must extend,  
 So let extend thy mind o're all the world,  
 In knowledge, all things in it comprehend,  
 All knowledge is not couch't in *Moses* Law,  
 The *Pentateuch* or what the Prophets wrote,  
 The *Gentiles* also know, and write, and teach  
 To admiration, led by Natures light;  
 And with the *Gentiles* much thou must converse,  
 Ruling them by perswasion as thou mean'st, 230  
 Without thir learning how wilt thou with them,  
 Or they with thee hold conversation meet?  
 How wilt thou reason with them, how refute  
 Thir Idolisms, Traditions, Paradoxes?  
 Error by his own arms is best evinc't.  
 Look once more e're we leave this specular Mount  
 Westward, much nearer by Southwest, behold  
 Where on the *Ægean* shore a City stands

Built nobly, pure the air, and light the soil,  
*Athens* the eye of *Greece*, Mother of Arts 240  
 And Eloquence, native to famous wits  
 Or hospitable, in her sweet recess,  
 City or Suburban, studious walks and shades;  
 See there the Olive Grove of *Academe*,  
*Plato's* retirement, where the *Attic* Bird  
 Trills her thick-warbl'd notes the summer long,  
 There flowrie hill *Hymettus* with the sound  
 Of Bees industrious murmur oft invites  
 To studious musing; there *Ilissus* rouls 250  
 His whispering stream; within the walls then view  
 The schools of antient Sages; his who bred  
 Great *Alexander* to subdue the world,  
*Lyceum* there, and painted *Stoa* next:  
 There thou shalt hear and learn the secret power  
 Of harmony in tones and numbers hit  
 By voice or hand, and various-measur'd verse,  
*Æolian* charms and *Dorian Lyric* Odes,  
 And his who gave them breath, but higher sung,  
 Blind *Melesigenes* thence *Homer* call'd, 260  
 Whose Poem *Phæbus* challeng'd for his own.  
 Thence what the lofty grave *Tragœdians* taught  
 In *Chorus* or *Iambic*, teachers best  
 Of moral prudence, with delight receiv'd  
 In brief sententious precepts, while they treat  
 Of fate, and chance, and change in human life;  
 High actions, and high passions best describing:  
 Thence to the famous Orators repair,  
 Those antient, whose resistless eloquence  
 Wielded at will that fierce *Democratie*,  
 Shook the Arsenal and fulmin'd over *Greece*, 270  
 To *Macedon*, and *Artaxerxes* Throne;  
 To sage Philosophy next lend thine ear,  
 From Heaven descended to the low-rooft house  
 Of *Socrates*, see there his Tenement,  
 Whom well inspir'd the Oracle pronounc'd  
 Wisest of men; from whose mouth issu'd forth  
 Mellifluous streams that water'd all the schools  
 Of Academics old and new, with those  
 Sirnam'd *Peripatetics*, and the Sect  
*Epicurean*, and the *Stoic* severe; 280



These here revolve, or, as thou lik'st, at home,  
Till time mature thee to a Kingdom's waight;  
These rules will render thee a King compleat  
Within thy self, much more with Empire joyn'd.

To whom our Saviour sagely thus repli'd.  
Think not but that I know these things, or think  
I know them not; not therefore am I short  
Of knowing what I aught: he who receives  
Light from above, from the fountain of light,  
No other doctrine needs, though granted true; 290  
But these are false, or little else but dreams,  
Conjectures, fancies, built on nothing firm.  
The first and wisest of them all profess'd  
To know this only, that he nothing knew;  
The next to fabling fell and smooth conceits,  
A third sort doubted all things, though plain sence;  
Others in vertue plac'd felicity,  
But vertue joyn'd with riches and long life,  
In corporal pleasure he, and careless ease,  
The Stoic last in Philosophic pride, 300  
By him call'd vertue; and his vertuous man,  
Wise, perfect in himself, and all possessing  
Equal to God, oft shames not to prefer,  
As fearing God nor man, contemning all  
Wealth, pleasure, pain or torment, death and life,  
Which when he lists, he leaves, or boasts he can,  
For all his tedious talk is but vain boast,  
Or subtle shifts conviction to evade.

Alas what can they teach, and not mislead;  
Ignorant of themselves, of God much more, 310  
And how the world began, and how man fell  
Degraded by himself, on grace depending?  
Much of the Soul they talk, but all awrie,  
And in themselves seek vertue, and to themselves  
All glory arrogate, to God give none,  
Rather accuse him under usual names,  
Fortune and Fate, as one regardless quite  
Of mortal things. Who therefore seeks in these  
True wisdom, finds her not, or by delusion  
Far worse, her false resemblance only meets, 320  
An empty cloud. However many books  
Wise men have said are wearisom; who reads

*Paradise Regain'd.*

Incessantly, and to his reading brings not  
 A spirit and judgment equal or superior,  
 (And what he brings, what needs he elsewhere seek)  
 Uncertain and unsettl'd still remains,  
 Deep verst in books and shallow in himself,  
 Crude or intoxicate, collecting toys,  
 And trifles for choice matters, worth a sponge ;  
 As Children gathering pibles on the shore. 330  
 Or if I would delight my private hours  
 With Music or with Poem, where so soon  
 As in our native Language can I find  
 That solace? All our Law and Story strew'd  
 With Hymns, our Psalms with artful terms inscrib'd,  
 Our Hebrew Songs and Harps in *Babylon*,  
 That pleas'd so well our Victors ear, declare  
 That rather *Greece* from us these Arts deriv'd ;  
 Ill imitated, while they loudest sing  
 The vices of thir Deities, and thir own 340  
 In Fable, Hymn, or Song, so personating  
 Thir Gods ridiculous, and themselves past shame.  
 Remove their swelling Epithetes thick laid  
 As varnish on a Harlots cheek, the rest,  
 Thin sown with aught of profit or delight,  
 Will far be found unworthy to compare  
 With *Sion's* songs, to all true tast excelling,  
 Where God is prais'd aright, and Godlike men,  
 The Holiest of Holies, and his Saints ;  
 Such are from God inspir'd, not such from thee ; 350  
 Unless where moral vertue is express't  
 By light of Nature not in all quite lost.  
 Thir Orators thou then extoll'st, as those  
 The top of Eloquence, Statists indeed,  
 And lovers of thir Country, as may seem ;  
 But herein to our Prophets far beneath,  
 As men divinely taught, and better teaching  
 The solid rules of Civil Government  
 In thir majestic unaffected stile  
 Then all the Oratory of *Greece* and *Rome*. 360  
 In them is plainest taught, and easiest learnt,  
 What makes a Nation happy, and keeps it so,  
 What ruins Kingdoms, and lays Cities flat ;  
 These only with our Law best form a King.

# Paradise Regain'd.

[BK. IV.

So spake the Son of God ; but Satan now  
Quite at a loss, for all his darts were spent,  
Thus to our Saviour with stern brow reply'd.

Since neither wealth, nor honour, arms nor arts,  
Kingdom nor Empire pleases thee, nor aught  
By me propos'd in life contemplative, 270  
Or active, tended on by glory, or fame,  
What dost thou in this World? the Wilderness  
For thee is fittest place, I found thee there,  
And thither will return thee, yet remember  
What I foretell thee, soon thou shalt have cause  
To wish thou never hadst rejected thus  
Nicely or cautiously my offer'd aid,  
Which would have set thee in short time with ease  
On *David's* Throne ; or Throne of all the world,  
Now at full age, fulness of time, thy season, 380  
When Prophecies of thee are best fullfill'd.  
Now contrary, if I read aught in Heaven,  
Or Heav'n write aught of Fate, by what the Stars  
Voluminous, or single characters,  
In thir conjunction met, give me to spell,  
Sorrows, and labours, opposition, hate,  
Attends thee, scorns, reproaches, injuries,  
Violence and stripes, and lastly cruel death,  
A Kingdom they portend thee, but what Kingdom,  
Real or Allegoric I discern not, 390  
Nor when, eternal sure, as without end,  
Without beginning ; for no date prefixt  
Directs me in the Starry Rubric set.

So saying he took (for still he knew his power  
Not yet expir'd) and to the Wilderness  
Brought back the Son of God, and left him there,  
Feigning to disappear. Darkness now rose,  
As day-light sunk, and brought in lowring night  
Her shadowy off-spring unsubstantial both,  
Privation meer of light and absent day. 400  
Our Saviour meek and with untroubld mind  
After his aerie jaunt, though hurried sore,  
Hungry and cold betook him to his rest,  
Wherever, under some concourse of shades  
Whose branching arms thick interwind might shield  
From dews and damps of night his shelter'd head,

*Paradise Regain'd.*

But shelter'd slept in vain, for at his head  
 The Tempter watch'd, and soon with ugly dreams  
 Disturb'd his sleep; and either Tropic now  
 'Gan thunder, and both ends of Heav'n, the Clouds 410  
 From many a horrid rift abortive pour'd  
 Fierce rain with lightning mixt, water with fire  
 In ruine reconcil'd: nor slept the winds  
 Within thir stony caves, but rush'd abroad  
 From the four hinges of the world, and fell  
 On the vext Wilderness, whose tallest Pines,  
 Though rooted deep as high, and sturdiest Oaks  
 Bow'd thir Stiff necks, loaden with stormy blasts,  
 Or torn up sheer: ill wast thou shrouded then,  
 O patient Son of God, yet only stoodst 420  
 Unshaken; nor yet staid the terror there,  
 Infernal Ghosts, and Hellish Furies, round  
 Environ'd thee, some howl'd, some yell'd, some shriek'd,  
 Some bent at thee thir fiery darts, while thou  
 Sat'st unappall'd in calm and sinless peace.  
 Thus pass'd the night so foul till morning fair  
 Came forth with Pilgrim steps in amice gray;  
 Who with her radiant finger still'd the roar  
 Of thunder, chas'd the clouds, and laid the winds,  
 And grisly Spectres, which the Fiend had rais'd 430  
 To tempt the Son of God with terrors dire.  
 And now the Sun with more effectual beams  
 Had chear'd the face of Earth, and dry'd the wet  
 From drooping plant, or dropping tree; the birds  
 Who all things now behold more fresh and green,  
 After a night of storm so ruinous,  
 Clear'd up their choicest notes in bush and spray  
 To gratulate the sweet return of morn;  
 Nor yet amidst this joy and brightest morn  
 Was absent, after all his mischief done, 440  
 The Prince of darkness, glad would also seem  
 Of this fair change, and to our Saviour came,  
 Yet with no new device, they all were spent,  
 Rather by this his last affront resolv'd,  
 Desperate of better course, to vent his rage,  
 And mad despight to be so oft repell'd.  
 Him walking on a Sunny hill he found,  
 Back'd on the North and West by a thick wood,

# Paradise Regain'd.

[BK. IV.]

Out of the wood he starts in wonted shape ;  
And in a careless mood thus to him said. 450

Fair morning yet betides thee Son of God,  
After a dismal night : I heard the rack  
As Earth and Skie would mingle ; but my self  
Was distant ; and these flaws, though mortals fear them  
As dangerous to the pillard frame of Heaven,  
Or to the Earths dark basis underneath,  
Are to the main as inconsiderable,  
And harmless, if not wholsom, as a sneeze  
To mans less universe, and soon are gone ;  
Yet as being oft times noxious where they light 460  
On man, beast, plant, wastful and turbulent,  
Like turbulencies in the affairs of men,  
Over whose heads they rore, and seem to point,  
They oft fore-signifie and threaten ill :  
This Tempest at this Desert most was bent ;  
Of men at thee, for only thou here dwell'st.  
Did I not tell thee, if thou didst reject  
The perfet season offer'd with my aid  
To win thy destin'd seat, but wilt prolong  
All to the push of Fate, persue thy way 470  
Of gaining *David's* Throne no man knows when,  
For both the when and how is no where told,  
Thou shalt be what thou art ordain'd, no doubt ;  
For Angels have proclaim'd it, but concealing  
The time and means : each act is rightliest done,  
Not when it must, but when it may be best.  
If thou observe not this, be sure to find,  
What I foretold thee, many a hard assay  
Of dangers, and adversities and pains,  
E're thou of *Israel's* Scepter get fast hold ; 480  
Whereof this ominous night that clos'd thee round,  
So many terrors, voices, prodigies  
May warn thee, as a sure fore-going sign.

So talk'd he, while the Son of God went on  
And staid not, but in brief him answer'd thus.

Mee worse then wet thou find'st not ; other harm  
Those terrors which thou speak'st of, did me none ;  
I never fear'd they could, though noising loud  
And threatning nigh ; what they can do as signs  
Betok'ning, or ill boding, I contemn 490

*Paradise Regain'd.*

As false portents, not sent from God, but thee ;  
 Who knowing I shall reign past thy preventing,  
 Obtrud'st thy offer'd aid, that I accepting  
 At least might seem to hold all power of thee,  
 Ambitious spirit, and wouldst be thought my God,  
 And storm'st refus'd, thinking to terrifie  
 Mee to thy will ; desist, thou art discern'd  
 And toil'st in vain, nor me in vain molest.

To whom the Fiend now swoln with rage reply'd :

Then hear, O Son of *David*, Virgin-born ; 500

For Son of God to me is yet in doubt,

Of the Messiah I have heard foretold

By all the Prophets ; of thy birth at length

Announc't by *Gabriel* with the first I knew,

And of the Angelic Song in *Bethlehem* field,

On thy birth-night, that sung thee Saviour born.

From that time seldom have I ceas'd to eye

Thy infancy, thy childhood, and thy youth,

Thy manhood last, though yet in private bred ;

Till at the Ford of *Jordan* whither all 510

Flock'd to the Baptist, I among the rest,

Though not to be Baptiz'd, by voice from Heav'n

Heard thee pronounc'd the Son of God belov'd.

Thenceforth I thought thee worth my nearer view

And narrower Scrutiny, that I might learn

In what degree or meaning thou art call'd

The Son of God, which bears no single sence ;

The Son of God I also am, or was,

And if I was, I am ; relation stands ;

All men are Sons of God ; yet thee I thought 520

In some respect far higher so declar'd.

Therefore I watch'd thy footsteps from that hour,

And follow'd thee still on to this wast wild ;

Where by all best conjectures I collect

Thou art to be my fatal enemy.

Good reason then, if I before-hand seek

To understand my Adversary, who

And what he is ; his wisdom, power, intent,

By parl, or composition, truce, or league

To win him, or win from him what I can. 530

And opportunity I here have had

To try thee, sift thee, and confess have found thee

Proof against all temptation as a rock  
Of Adamant, and as a Center, firm  
To the utmost of meer man both wise and good,  
Not more; for Honours, Riches, Kingdoms, Glory  
Have been before contemn'd, and may agen:  
Therefore to know what more thou art then man,  
Worth naming Son of God by voice from Heav'n,  
Another method I must now begin.

540

So saying he caught him up, and without wing  
Of *Hippogrif* bore through the Air sublime  
Over the Wilderness and o're the Plain;  
Till underneath them fair *Jerusalem*,  
The holy City lifted high her Towers,  
And higher yet the glorious Temple rear'd  
Her pile, far off appearing like a Mount  
Of Alabaster, top't with golden Spires:  
There on the highest Pinnacle he set  
The Son of God; and added thus in scorn:

550

There stand, if thou wilt stand; to stand upright  
Will ask thee skill; I to thy Fathers house  
Have brought thee, and highest plac't, highest is best,  
Now shew thy Progeny; if not to stand,  
Cast thy self down; safely if Son of God:  
For it is written, He will give command  
Concerning thee to his Angels, in thir hands  
They shall up lift thee, lest at any time  
Thou chance to dash thy foot against a stone.

560

To whom thus Jesus: also it is written,  
Tempt not the Lord thy God, he said and stood.  
But Satan smitten with amazement fell  
As when Earths Son *Antæus* (to compare  
Small things with greatest) in *Irassa* strove  
With *Joves Alcides*, and oft foil'd still rose,  
Receiving from his mother Earth new strength,  
Fresh from his fall, and fiercer grapple joyn'd,  
Throttld at length in the Air, expir'd and fell;  
So after many a foil the Tempter proud,  
Renewing fresh assaults, amidst his pride

570

Fell whence he stood to see his Victor fall.  
And as that *Theban* Monster that propos'd  
Her riddle, and him, who solv'd it not, devour'd;  
That once found out and solv'd, for grief and spight



*Paradise Regain'd.*

Cast her self headlong from th' *Ismenian* steep,  
 So strook with dread and anguish fell the Fiend,  
 And to his crew, that sat consulting, brought  
 Joyless triumphals of his hop't success,  
 Ruin, and desperation, and dismay,  
 Who durst so proudly tempt the Son of God. 580  
 So Satan fell and strait a fiery Globe  
 Of Angels on full sail of wing flew nigh,  
 Who on their plummy Vans receiv'd him soft  
 From his uneasie station, and upbore  
 As on a floating couch through the blithe Air,  
 Then in a flowry valley set him down  
 On a green bank, and set before him spread  
 A table of Celestial Food, Divine,  
 Ambrosial, Fruits fetcht from the tree of life,  
 And from the fount of life Ambrosial drink, 590  
 That soon refresh'd him wearied, and repair'd  
 What hunger, if aught hunger had impair'd,  
 Or thirst, and as he fed, Angelic Quires  
 Sung Heavenly Anthems of his victory  
 Over temptation, and the Tempter proud.

True Image of the Father whether thron'd  
 In the bosom of bliss, and light of light  
 Conceiving, or remote from Heaven, enshrin'd  
 In fleshly Tabernacle, and human form,  
 Wandring the Wilderness, whatever place, 600  
 Habit, or state, or motion, still expressing  
 The Son of God, with Godlike force indu'd  
 Against th' Attempter of thy Fathers Throne,  
 And Thief of Paradise ; him long of old  
 Thou didst debel, and down from Heav'n cast  
 With all his Army, now thou hast aveng'd  
 Supplanted *Adam*, and by vanquishing  
 Temptation, hast regain'd lost Paradise,  
 And frustrated the conquest fraudulent :  
 He never more henceforth will dare set foot 610  
 In Paradise to tempt ; his snares are broke :  
 For though that seat of earthly bliss be fail'd,  
 A fairer Paradise is founded now  
 For *Adam* and his chosen Sons, whom thou  
 A Saviour art come down to re-install.  
 Where they shall dwell secure, when time shall be

## *Paradise Regain'd.*

[BK. IV.

Of Tempter and Temptation without fear.  
But thou, Infernal Serpent, shalt not long  
Rule in the Clouds ; like an Autumnal Star  
Or Lightning thou shalt fall from Heav'n trod down 620  
Under his feet : for proof, e're this thou feel'st  
Thy wound, yet not thy last and deadliest wound  
By this repulse receiv'd, and hold'st in Hell  
No triumph ; in all her gates *Abaddon* rues  
Thy bold attempt ; hereafter learn with awe  
To dread the Son of God : he all unarm'd  
Shall chase thee with the terror of his voice  
From thy Demoniack holds, possession foul,  
Thee and thy Legions, yelling they shall flye, 630  
And beg to hide them in a herd of Swine,  
Lest he command them down into the deep  
Bound, and to torment sent before thir time.  
Hail Son of the most High, heir of both worlds,  
Queller of Satan, on thy glorious work  
Now enter, and begin to save mankind.

Thus they the Son of God our Saviour meek  
Sung Victor, and from Heavenly Feast refresht  
Brought on his way with joy ; hee unobserv'd  
Home to his Mothers house private return'd.

*The End.*

# SAMSON AGONISTES, A DRAMATIC POEM.

---

The Author  
JOHN MILTON.

---

*Aristot. Poet. Cap. 6.*

*Τετραμετρικῆς ποιήσεως σπουδαία, &c.*

*Tragædia est imitatio actionis seriæ, &c. Per misericordiam & metum perficiens talium affectionum illustrationem.*

---

---

LONDON,

Printed by J. M. for, John Starkey at the  
Mitre in Fleetstreet, near Temple-Bar.

MDCLXXI



## *Of that sort of Dramatic Poem which is call'd Tragedy.*

TRAGEDY, as it was antiently compos'd, hath been ever held the gravest, moralest, and most profitable of all other Poems : therefore said by *Aristotle* to be of power by raising pity and fear, or terror, to purge the mind of those and such like passions, that is to temper and reduce them to just measure with a kind of delight, stirr'd up by reading or seeing those passions well imitated. Nor is Nature wanting in her own effects to make good his assertion : for so in Physic things of melancholic hue and quality are us'd against melancholy, sower against sower, salt to remove salt humours. Hence Philosophers and other gravest Writers, as *Cicero*, *Plutarch* and others, frequently cite out of Tragic Poets, both to adorn and illustrate thir discourse. The Apostle *Paul* himself thought it not unworthy to insert a verse of *Euripides* into the Text of Holy Scripture, *1 Cor.* 15. 33. and *Paræus* commenting on the *Revelation*, divides the whole Book as a Tragedy, into Acts distinguish'd each by a Chorus of Heavenly Harpings and Song between. Heretofore Men in highest dignity have labour'd not a little to be thought able to compose a Tragedy. Of that honour *Dionysius* the elder was no less ambitious, then before of his attaining to the Tyranny. *Augustus Cæsar* also had begun his *Ajax*, but unable to please his own judgment with what he had begun, left it unfinished. *Seneca* the Philosopher is by some thought the Author of those Tragedies (at lest the best of them) that go under that name. *Gregory Nazianzen* a Father of the Church, thought it not unbecoming the sanctity of his person to write a Tragedy, which he entitl'd, *Christ suffering*. This is mention'd to vindicate Tragedy from the small esteem, or rather infamy, which in the account of many it undergoes at this day with other common Interludes ; hap'ning through the Poets error of intermixing Comic stuff with Tragic sadness and gravity ; or introducing trivial and vulgar

persons, which by all judicious hath bin counted absurd ; and brought in without discretion, corruptly to gratifie the people. And though antient Tragedy use no Prologue, yet using sometimes, in case of self defence, or explanation, that which *Martial* calls an Epistle ; in behalf of this Tragedy coming forth after the antient manner, much different from what among us passes for best, thus much before-hand may be Epistl'd ; that *Chorus* is here introduc'd after the Greek manner, not antient only but modern, and still in use among the *Italians*. In the modelling therefore of this Poem, with good reason, the Antients and *Italians* are rather follow'd, as of much more authority and fame. The measure of Verse us'd in the Chorus is of all sorts, call'd by the Greeks *Monostrophic*, or rather *Apolelymenon*, without regard had to *Strophe*, *Antistrophe* or *Epod*, which were a kind of Stanza's fram'd only for the Music, then us'd with the Chorus that sung ; not essential to the Poem, and therefore not material ; or being divided into Stanza's or Pauses, they may be call'd *Allæostropha*. Division into Act and Scene referring chiefly to the Stage (to which this work never was intended) is here omitted.

It suffices if the whole Drama be found not produc't beyond the fift Act, of the style and uniformitie, and that commonly call'd the Plot, whether intricate or explicit, which is nothing indeed but such œconomy, or disposition of the fable as may stand best with verisimilitude and decorum ; they only will best judge who are not unacquainted with *Æschulus*, *Sophocles*, and *Euripides*, the three Tragic Poets unequall'd yet by any, and the best rule to all who endeavour to write Tragedy. The circumscription of time wherein the whole Drama begins and ends, is according to antient rule, and best example, within the space of 24 hours.

## The ARGUMENT.

*Samson made Captive, Blind, and now in the Prison at Gaza, there to labour as in a common work-house, on a Festival day, in the general cessation from labour, comes forth into the open Air, to a place nigh, somewhat retir'd there to sit a while and bemoan his condition. Where he happens at length to be visited by certain friends and equals of his tribe, which make the Chorus, who seek to comfort him what they can ; then by his old Father Manoa, who endeavours the like, and withal tells him his purpose to procure his liberty by ransom ; lastly, that this Feast was proclaim'd by the Philistins as a day of Thanks-giving for thir deliverance from the hands of Samson, which yet more troubles him. Manoa then departs to prosecute his endeavour with the Philistian Lords for Samson's redemption ; who in the mean while is visited by other persons ; and lastly by a publick Officer to require his coming to the Feast before the Lords and People, to play or shew his strength in thir presence ; he at first refuses, dismissing the publick Officer with absolute denial to come ; at length perswaded inwardly that this was from God, he yields to go along with him, who came now the second time with great threatnings to fetch him ; the Chorus yet remaining on the place, Manoa returns full of joyful hope, to procure e're long his Sons deliverance : in the midst of which discourse an Ebrew comes in haste confusedly at first ; and afterward more distinctly relating the Catastrophe, what Samson had done to the Philistins, and by accident to himself ; wherewith the Tragedy ends.*



The Persons.

Samson.

Manoa *the Father of Samson.*

Dalila *his Wife.*

Harapha *of Gath.*

Publick Officer,

Messenger,

Chorus *of Danites.*

*The Scene before the Prison in Gaza.*

# SAMSON

## AGONISTES.

*Sams.* A LITTLE onward lend thy guiding hand  
To these dark steps, a little further on ;  
For yonder bank hath choice of Sun or shade,  
There I am wont to sit, when any chance  
Relieves me from my task of servile toyl,  
Daily in the common Prison else enjoyn'd me,  
Where I a Prisoner chain'd, scarce freely draw  
The air imprison'd also, close and damp,  
Unwholsom draught : but here I feel amends,  
The breath of Heav'n fresh-blowing, pure and sweet, 10  
With day-spring born ; here leave me to respire.  
This day a solemn Feast the people hold  
To *Dagon* thir Sea-Idol, and forbid  
Laborious works, unwillingly this rest  
Thir Superstition yields me ; hence with leave  
Retiring from the popular noise, I seek  
This unfrequented place to find some ease,  
Ease to the body some, none to the mind  
From restless thoughts, that like a deadly swarm  
Of Hornets arm'd, no sooner found alone, 20  
But rush upon me thronging, and present  
Times past, what once I was, and what am now.  
O wherefore was my birth from Heaven foretold  
Twice by an Angel, who at last in sight  
Of both my Parents all in flames ascended  
From off the Altar, where an Off'ring burn'd,  
As in a fiery column charioting  
His Godlike presence, and from some great act  
Or benefit reveal'd to *Abraham's* race ?  
Why was my breeding order'd and prescrib'd 30

## Samson Agonistes.

As of a person separate to God,  
Design'd for great exploits ; if I must dye  
Betray'd, Captiv'd, and both my Eyes put out,  
Made of my Enemies the scorn and gaze ;  
To grind in Brazen Fetters under task  
With this Heav'n-gifted strength ? O glorious strength  
Put to the labour of a Beast, debas't  
Lower then bondsslave ! Promise was that I  
Should *Israel* from *Philistian* yoke deliver ;  
Ask for this great Deliverer now, and find him 40  
Eyeless in *Gaza* at the Mill with slaves,  
Himself in bonds under *Philistian* yoke ;  
Yet stay, let me not rashly call in doubt  
Divine Prediction ; what if all foretold  
Had been fulfilld but through mine own default,  
Whom have I to complain of but my self ?  
Who this high gift of strength committed to me,  
In what part lodg'd, how easily bereft me,  
Under the Seal of silence could not keep,  
But weakly to a woman must reveal it 50  
O'recome with importunity and tears.  
O impotence of mind, in body strong !  
But what is strength without a double share  
Of wisdom, vast, unwieldy, burdensom,  
Proudly secure, yet liable to fall  
By weakest suttleties, not made to rule,  
But to subserve where wisdom bears command.  
God, when he gave me strength, to shew withal  
How slight the gift was, hung it in my Hair.  
But peace, I must not quarrel with the will 60  
Of highest dispensation, which herein  
Happ'ly had ends above my reach to know :  
Suffices that to me strength is my bane,  
And proves the sourse of all my miseries ;  
So many, and so huge, that each apart  
Would ask a life to wail, but chief of all,  
O loss of sight, of thee I most complain !  
Blind among enemies, O worse then chains,  
Dungeon, or beggery, or decrepit age !  
Light the prime work of God to me is extinct, 70  
And all her various objects of delight  
Annull'd, which might in part my grief have eas'd,

## *Samson Agonistes.*

Inferiour to the vilest now become  
Of man or worm ; the vilest here excel me,  
They creep, yet see, I dark in light expos'd  
To daily fraud, contempt, abuse and wrong,  
Within doors, or without, still as a fool,  
In power of others, never in my own ;  
Scarce half I seem to live, dead more then half.  
O dark, dark, dark, amid the blaze of noon,  
Irrecoverably dark, total Eclipse  
Without all hope of day !  
O first created Beam, and thou great Word,  
Let there be light, and light was over all ;  
Why am I thus bereav'd thy prime decree ?  
The Sun to me is dark  
And silent as the Moon,  
When she deserts the night  
Hid in her vacant interlunar cave.  
Since light so necessary is to life,  
And almost life itself, if it be true  
That light is in the Soul,  
She all in every part ; why was the sight  
To such a tender ball as th' eye confin'd ?  
So obvious and so easie to be quench't,  
And not as feeling through all parts diffus'd,  
That she might look at will through every pore ?  
Then had I not been thus exil'd from light ;  
As in the land of darkness yet in light,  
To live a life half dead, a living death,  
And buried ; but O yet more miserable !  
My self, my Sepulcher, a moving Grave,  
Buried, yet not exempt  
By priviledge of death and burial  
From worst of other evils, pains and wrongs,  
But made hereby obnoxious more  
To all the miseries of life,  
Life in captivity  
Among inhuman foes.  
But who are these ? for with joint pace I hear  
The tread of many feet stearing this way ;  
Perhaps my enemies who come to stare  
At my affliction, and perhaps to insult,  
Thir daily practice to afflict me more.

## Samson Agonistes.

*Chor.* This, this is he ; softly a while,  
Let us not break in upon him ;  
O change beyond report, thought, or belief !  
See how he lies at random, carelessly diffus'd,  
With languish't head unpropt,  
As one past hope, abandon'd  
And by himself given over ;  
In slavish habit, ill-fitted weeds  
O're worn and soild ;  
Or do my eyes misrepresent ? Can this be hee,  
That Heroic, that Renown'd,  
Irresistible *Samson* ? whom unarm'd  
No strength of man, or fiercest wild beast could withstand ;  
Who tore the Lion, as the Lion tears the Kid,  
Ran on embattelld Armies clad in Iron,  
And weaponless himself,  
Made Arms ridiculous, useless the forgery  
Of brazen shield and spear, the hammer'd Cuirass,  
*Chalybean* temper'd steel, and frock of mail  
Adamantean Proof ;  
But safest he who stood aloof,  
When insupportably his foot advanc't,  
In scorn of thir proud arms and warlike tools,  
Spurn'd them to death by Troops. The bold *Ascalonite*  
Fled from his Lion ramp, old Warriors turn'd  
Thir plated backs under his heel ;  
Or grovling soild thir crested helmets in the dust.  
Then with what trivial weapon came to hand,  
The Jaw of a dead Ass, his sword of bone,  
A thousand fore-skins fell, the flower of *Palestin*  
In *Ramath-lechi* famous to this day :  
Then by main force pull'd up, and on his shoulders bore  
The Gates of *Azza*, Post, and massie Bar  
Up to the Hill by *Hebron*, seat of Giants old,  
No journey of a Sabbath day, and loaded so ;  
Like whom the Gentiles feign to bear up Heav'n.  
Which shall I first bewail,  
Thy Bondage or lost Sight,  
Prison within Prison  
Inseparably dark ?  
Thou art become (O worst imprisonment !)  
The Dungeon of thy self ; thy Soul

## Samson Agonistes.

(Which Men enjoying sight oft without cause complain)  
Imprison'd now indeed,  
In real darkness of the body dwells,  
Shut up from outward light 160  
To incorporate with gloomy night;  
For inward light alas  
Puts forth no visual beam.  
O mirror of our fickle state,  
Since man on earth unparallel'd!  
The rarer thy example stands,  
By how much from the top of wondrous glory,  
Strongest of mortal men,  
To lowest pitch of abject fortune thou art fall'n.  
For him I reckon not in high estate 170  
Whom long descent of birth  
Or the spear of fortune raises;  
But thee whose strength, while vertue was her mate  
Might have subdu'd the Earth,  
Universally crown'd with highest praises.

*Sam.* I hear the sound of words, thir sense the air  
Dissolves unjointed e're it reach my ear.

*Chor.* Hee speaks, let us draw nigh. Matchless in might,  
The glory late of *Israel*, now the grief;  
We come thy friends and neighbours not unknown 180  
From *Eshtaol* and *Zora's* fruitful Vale  
To visit or bewail thee, or if better,  
Counsel or Consolation we may bring,  
Salve to thy Sores, apt words have power to swage  
The tumors of a troubl'd mind,  
And are as Balm to fester'd wounds.

*Sam.* Your coming, Friends, revives me, for I learn  
Now of my own experience, not by talk,  
How counterfeit a coin they are who friends  
Bear in their Superscription (of the most 190  
I would be understood) in prosperous days  
They swarm, but in adverse withdraw their head  
Not to be found, though sought. Yee see, O friends,  
How many evils have enclos'd me round;  
Yet that which was the worst now least afflicts me,  
Blindness, for had I sight, confus'd with shame,  
How could I once look up, or heave the head,  
Who like a foolish Pilot have shipwrack't,

## Samson Agonistes.

My Vessel trusted to me from above,  
Gloriously rigg'd ; and for a word, a tear,  
Fool, have divulg'd the secret gift of God  
To a deceitful Woman : tell me Friends,  
Am I not sung and proverb'd for a Fool  
In every street, do they not say, how well  
Are come upon him his deserts ? yet why ?  
Inmeasurable strength they might behold  
In me, of wisdom nothing more than mean ;  
This with the other should, at least, have pair'd,  
These two proportion'd ill drove me transverse.

200

*Chor.* Tax not divine disposal, wisest Men  
Have err'd, and by bad Women been deceiv'd ;  
And shall again, pretend they ne're so wise.  
Deject not then so overmuch thy self,  
Who hast of sorrow thy full load besides ;  
Yet truth to say, I oft have heard men wonder  
Why thou shouldst wed *Philistian* women rather  
Than of thine own Tribe fairer, or as fair,  
At least of thy own Nation, and as noble.

210

*Sam.* The first I saw at *Timna*, and she pleas'd  
Mee, not my Parents, that I sought to wed,  
The daughter of an Infidel : they knew not  
That what I motion'd was of God ; I knew  
From intimate impulse, and therefore urg'd  
The Marriage on ; that by occasion hence  
I might begin *Israel's* Deliverance,  
The work to which I was divinely call'd ;  
She proving false, the next I took to Wife  
(O that I never had ! fond wish too late)  
Was in the Vale of *Sorec*, *Dalila*,  
That specious Monster, my accomlisht snare.  
I thought it lawful from my former act,  
And the same end ; still watching to oppress  
*Israel's* oppressours : of what now I suffer  
She was not the prime cause, but I my self,  
Who vanquisht with a peal of words (O weakness !)  
Gave up my fort of silence to a Woman.

220

230

*Chor.* In seeking just occasion to provoke  
The *Philistine*, thy Countries Enemy,  
Thou never wast remiss, I bear thee witness :  
Yet *Israel* still serves with all his Sons.

240



## Samson Agonistes.

*Sam.* That fault I take not on me, but transfer  
On *Israel's* Governours, and Heads of Tribes,  
Who seeing those great acts which God had done  
Singly by me against their Conquerours  
Acknowledg'd not, or not at all consider'd  
Deliverance offerd: I on th' other side  
Us'd no ambition to commend my deeds,  
The deeds themselves, though mute, spoke loud the doer;  
But they persisted deaf, and would not seem  
To count them things worth notice, till at length 250  
Thir Lords the *Philistines* with gather'd powers  
Enterd *Judea* seeking mee, who then  
Safe to the rock of *Etham* was retir'd,  
Not flying, but fore-casting in what place  
To set upon them, what advantag'd best;  
Mean while the men of *Judah* to prevent  
The harrass of thir Land, beset me round;  
I willingly on some conditions came  
Into thir hands, and they as gladly yield me  
To the uncircumcis'd a welcom prey, 260  
Bound with two cords; but cords to me were threds  
Toucht with the flame: on thir whole Host I flew  
Unarm'd, and with a trivial weapon fell'd  
Thir choicest youth; they only liv'd who fled.  
Had *Judah* that day join'd, or one whole Tribe,  
They had by this possess'd the Towers of *Gath*,  
And lorded over them whom now they serve;  
But what more oft in Nations grown corrupt,  
And by thir vices brought to servitude,  
Then to love Bondage more then Liberty, 270  
Bondage with ease then strenuous liberty;  
And to despise, or envy, or suspect  
Whom God hath of his special favour rais'd  
As thir Deliverer; if he aught begin,  
How frequent to desert him, and at last  
To heap ingratitude on worthiest deeds?  
*Chor.* Thy words to my remembrance bring  
How *Succoth* and the Fort of *Penuel*  
Thir great Deliverer contemn'd,  
The matchless *Gideon* in pursuit 280  
Of *Madian* and her vanquisht Kings:  
And how ingrateful *Ephraim*

## Samson Agonistes.

Had dealt with *Jephtha*, who by argument,  
Not worse then by his shield and spear  
Defended *Israel* from the *Ammonite*,  
Had not his prowess quell'd thir pride  
In that sore battel when so many dy'd  
Without Reprieve adjudg'd to death,  
For want of well pronouncing *Shibboleth*.

*Sam.* Of such examples adde mee to the roul, 290  
Mee easily indeed mine may neglect,  
But Gods propos'd deliverance not so.

*Chor.* Just are the ways of God,  
And justifiable to Men ;  
Unless there be who think not God at all,  
If any be, they walk obscure ;  
For of such Doctrine never was there School,  
But the heart of the Fool,  
And no man therein Doctor but himself.

Yet more there be who doubt his ways not just, 300  
As to his own edicts, found contradicting,  
Then give the rains to wandring thought,  
Regardless of his glories diminution ;  
Till by thir own perplexities involv'd  
They ravel more, still less resolv'd,  
But never find self-satisfying solution.

As if they would confine th' interminable,  
And tie him to his own prescript,  
Who made our Laws to bind us, not himself,  
And hath full right to exempt 310  
Whom so it pleases him by choice  
From National obstriction, without taint  
Of sin, or legal debt ;  
For with his own Laws he can best dispence.

He would not else who never wanted means,  
Nor in respect of the enemy just cause  
To set his people free,  
Have prompted this Heroic *Nazarite*,  
Against his vow of strictest purity,  
To seek in marriage that fallacious Bride, 320  
Unclean, unchaste.

Down Reason then, at least vain reasonings down,  
Though Reason here aver  
That moral verdict quits her of unclean :

## Samson Agonistes.

Unchaste was subsequent, her stain not his.

But see here comes thy reverend Sire  
With careful step, Locks white as downe,  
Old *Manoah*: advise

Forthwith how thou oughtst to receive him.

*Sam.* Ay me, another inward grief awak't, 330  
With mention of that name renews th' assault.

*Man.* Brethren and men of *Dan*, for such ye seem,  
Though in this uncouth place; if old respect,  
As I suppose, towards your once gloried friend,  
My Son now Captive, hither hath inform'd  
Your younger feet, while mine cast back with age  
Came lagging after; say if he be here.

*Chor.* As signal now in low dejected state,  
As earst in highest, behold him where he lies.

*Man.* O miserable change! is this the man, 340  
That invincible *Samson*, far renown'd,

The dread of *Israel's* foes, who with a strength  
Equivalent to Angels walk'd thir streets,  
None offering fight; who single combatant  
Duell'd thir Armies rank't in proud array,  
Himself an Army, now unequal match

To save himself against a coward arm'd  
At one spears length. O ever failing trust  
In mortal strength! and oh what not in man  
Deceivable and vain! Nay what thing good 350  
Pray'd for, but often proves our woe, our bane?

I pray'd for Children, and thought barrenness  
In wedlock a reproach; I gain'd a Son,  
And such a Son as all Men hail'd me happy;  
Who would be now a Father in my stead?

O wherefore did God grant me my request,  
And as a blessing with such pomp adorn'd?

Why are his gifts desirable, to tempt  
Our earnest Prayers, then giv'n with solemn hand  
As Graces, draw a Scorpions tail behind? 360

For this did the Angel twice descend? for this  
Ordain'd thy nurture holy, as of a Plant;

Select, and Sacred, Glorious for a while,

The miracle of men: then in an hour

Ensnar'd, assaulted, overcome, led bound,

Thy Foes derision, Captive, Poor, and Blind

## Samson Agonistes.

Into a Dungeon thrust, to work with Slaves?  
Alas methinks whom God hath chosen once  
To worthiest deeds, if he through frailty err,  
He should not so o'whelm, and as a thrall  
Subject him to so foul indignities,  
Be it but for honours sake of former deeds.

370

*Sam.* Appoint not heavenly disposition, Father,  
Nothing of all these evils hath befall'n me  
But justly; I my self have brought them on,  
Sole Author I, sole cause: if aught seem vile,  
As vile hath been my folly, who have profan'd  
The mystery of God giv'n me under pledge  
Of vow, and have betray'd it to a woman,  
A *Canaanite*, my faithless enemy.

380

This well I knew, nor was at all surpris'd,  
But warn'd by oft experience: did not she  
Of *Timna* first betray me, and reveal  
The secret wrested from me in her highth  
Of Nuptial Love profest, carrying it strait  
To them who had corrupted her, my Spies,  
And Rivals? In this other was there found  
More Faith? who also in her prime of love,  
Spousal embraces, vitiated with Gold,  
Though offer'd only, by the sent conceiv'd  
Her spurious first-born; Treason against me?  
Thrice she assay'd with flattering prayers and sighs,  
And amorous reproaches to win from me  
My capital secret, in what part my strength  
Lay stor'd in what part summ'd, that she might know:  
Thrice I deluded her, and turn'd to sport  
Her importunity, each time perceiving  
How openly, and with what impudence  
She purpos'd to betray me, and (which was worse  
Then undissembl'd hate) with what contempt  
She sought to make me Traytor to my self;  
Yet the fourth time, when mustering all her wiles,  
With blandisht parlies, feminine assaults,  
Tongue-batteries, she surceas'd not day nor night  
To storm me over-watch't, and wearied out.  
At times when men seek most repose and rest,  
I yielded, and unlock'd her all my heart,  
Who with a grain of manhood well resolv'd

390

400

## Samson Agonistes.

Might easily have shook off all her snares :  
But foul effeminacy held me yok't  
Her Bond-slave ; O indignity, O blot  
To Honour and Religion ! servil mind  
Rewarded well with servil punishment !  
The base degree to which I now am fall'n,  
These rags, this grinding, is not yet so base  
As was my former servitude, ignoble,  
Unmanly, ignominious, infamous,  
True slavery, and that blindness worse then this,  
That saw not how degeneratly I serv'd.

*Man.* I cannot praise thy Marriage choises, Son,  
Rather approv'd them not ; but thou didst plead  
Divine impulsion prompting how thou might'st  
Find some occasion to infest our Foes.

I state not that ; this I am sure ; our Foes  
Found soon occasion thereby to make thee  
Thir Captive, and thir triumph ; thou the sooner  
Temptation found'st, or over-potent charms  
To violate the sacred trust of silence  
Deposited within thee ; which to have kept  
Tacit, was in thy power ; true ; and thou bear'st  
Enough, and more the burden of that fault ;  
Bitterly hast thou paid, and still art paying  
That rigid score. A worse thing yet remains,  
This day the *Philistines* a popular Feast  
Here celebrate in *Gaza* ; and proclaim  
Great Pomp, and Sacrifice, and Praises loud  
To *Dagon*, as their God who hath deliver'd  
Thee *Samson* bound and blind into thir hands,  
Them out of thine, who slew'st them many a slain.

So *Dagon* shall be magnifi'd, and God,  
Besides whom is no God, compar'd with Idols,  
Disglorifi'd, blasphem'd, and had in scorn  
By th' Idolatrous rout amidst thir wine ;  
Which to have come to pass by means of thee,  
*Samson*, of all thy sufferings think the heaviest,  
Of all reproach the most with shame that ever  
Could have befall'n thee and thy Fathers house.

*Sam.* Father, I do acknowledge and confess  
That I this honour, I this pomp have brought  
To *Dagon*, and advanc'd his praises high

## Samson Agonistes.

Among the Heathen round ; to God have brought  
Dishonour, obloquie, and op't the mouths  
Of Idolists, and Atheists ; have brought scandal  
To *Israel*, diffidence of God, and doubt  
In feeble hearts, propense enough before  
To waver, or fall off and joyn with Idols :  
Which is my chief affliction, shame and sorrow,  
The anguish of my Soul, that suffers not  
Mine eie to harbour sleep, or thoughts to rest.  
This only hope relieves me, that the strife 460  
With me hath end ; all the contest is now  
'Twixt God and *Dagon* ; *Dagon* hath presum'd,  
Me overthrown, to enter lists with God,  
His Deity comparing and preferring  
Before the God of *Abraham*. He, be sure,  
Will not connive, or linger, thus provok'd,  
But will arise and his great name assert :  
*Dagon* must stoop, and shall e're long receive  
Such a discomfit, as shall quite despoil him  
Of all these boasted Trophies won on me, 470  
And with confusion blank his Worshippers.

*Man*. With cause this hope relieves thee, and these words  
I as a Prophecy receive : for God,  
Nothing more certain, will not long defer  
To vindicate the glory of his name  
Against all competition, nor will long  
Endure it, doubtful whether God be Lord,  
Or *Dagon*. But for thee what shall be done ?  
Thou must not in the mean while here forgot  
Lie in this miserable loathsom plight 480  
Neglected. I already have made way  
To some *Philistian* Lords, with whom to treat  
About thy ransom : well they may by this  
Have satisfi'd thir utmost of revenge  
By pains and slaveries, worse then death inflicted  
On thee, who now no more canst do them harm.

*Sam*. Spare that proposal, Father, spare the trouble  
Of that sollicitation ; let me here,  
As I deserve, pay on my punishment ;  
And expiate, if possible, my crime, 490  
Shameful garrulity. To have reveal'd  
Secrets of men, the secrets of a friend,



## Samson Agonistes.

How hainous had the fact been, how deserving  
Contempt, and scorn of all, to be excluded  
All friendship, and avoided as a blab,  
The mark of fool set on his front?  
But I Gods counsel have not kept, his holy secret  
Presumptuously have publish'd, impiously,  
Weakly at least, and shamefully: A sin  
That Gentiles in thir Parables condemn  
To thir abyss and horrid pains confin'd.

500

*Man.* Be penitent and for thy fault contrite,  
But act not in thy own affliction, Son,  
Repent the sin, but if the punishment  
Thou canst avoid, self-preservation bids;  
Or th' execution leave to high disposal,  
And let another hand, not thine, exact  
Thy penal forfeit from thy self; perhaps  
God will relent, and quit thee all his debt;  
Who evermore approves and more accepts  
(Best pleas'd with humble and filial submission)  
Him who imploring mercy sues for life,  
Then who self-rigorous chooses death as due;  
Which argues over-just, and self-displeas'd  
For self-offence, more then for God offended.  
Reject not then what offerd means, who knows  
But God hath set before us, to return thee  
Home to thy countrey and his sacred house,  
Where thou mayst bring thy off'rings, to avert  
His further ire, with praiers and vows renew'd.

510

520

*Sam.* His pardon I implore; but as for life,  
To what end should I seek it? when in strength  
All mortals I excell'd, and great in hopes  
With youthful courage and magnanimous thoughts  
Of birth from Heav'n foretold and high exploits,  
Full of divine instinct, after some proof  
Of acts indeed heroic, far beyond  
The Sons of *Anac*, famous now and blaz'd,  
Fearless of danger, like a petty God  
I walk'd about admir'd of all and dreaded  
On hostile ground, none daring my affront.  
Then swoll'n with pride into the snare I fell  
Of fair fallacious looks, venereal trains,  
Softn'd with pleasure and voluptuous life;

530



## Samson Agonistes.

At length to lay my head and hallow'd pledge  
Of all my strength in the lascivious lap  
Of a deceitful Concubine who shore me  
Like a tame Weather, all my precious fleece,  
Then turn'd me out ridiculous, despoil'd,  
Shav'n, and disarm'd among my enemies.

540

*Chor.* Desire of wine and all delicious drinks,  
Which many a famous Warriour overturns,  
Thou couldst repress, nor did the dancing Rubie  
Sparkling, out-pow'rd, the flavor, or the smell,  
Or taste that cheers the heart of Gods and men,  
Allure thee from the cool Crystalline stream.

*Sam.* Where ever fountain or fresh current flow'd  
Against the Eastern ray, translucent, pure,  
With touch ætherial of Heav'n's fiery rod  
I drank, from the clear milkie juice allaying  
Thirst, and refresht; nor envy'd them the grape  
Whose heads that turbulent liquor fills with fumes.

550

*Chor.* O madness, to think use of strongest wines  
And strongest drinks our chief support of health,  
When God with these forbid'n made choice to rear  
His mighty Champion, strong above compare,  
Whose drink was only from the liquid brook.

*Sam.* But what avail'd this temperance, not compleat  
Against another object more enticing?

What boots it at one gate to make defence,  
And at another to let in the foe  
Effeminatly vanquish't? by which means,  
Now blind, disheartn'd, sham'd, dishonour'd, quell'd,  
To what can I be useful, wherein serve  
My Nation, and the work from Heav'n impos'd,  
But to sit idle on the household hearth,  
A burdenous drone; to visitants a gaze,  
Or pitied object, these redundant locks  
Robustious to no purpose clustring down,  
Vain monument of strength; till length of years  
And sedentary numness craze my limbs  
To a contemptible old age obscure.

560

570

Here rather let me drudge and earn my bread,  
Till vermin or the draff of servil food  
Consume me, and oft-invoked death  
Hast'n the welcom end of all my pains.

## Samson Agonistes.

*Man.* Wilt thou then serve the *Philistines* with that gift  
Which was expresly giv'n thee to annoy them?  
Better at home lie bed-rid, not only idle,  
Inglorious, unemploy'd, with age out-worn. 580  
But God who caus'd a fountain at thy prayer  
From the dry ground to spring, thy thirst to allay  
After the brunt of battel, can as easie  
Cause light again within thy eies to spring,  
Wherewith to serve him better than thou hast ;  
And I perswade me so ; why else this strength  
Miraculous yet remaining in those locks?  
His might continues in thee not for naught,  
Nor shall his wondrous gifts be frustrate thus.

*Sam.* All otherwise to me my thoughts portend, 590  
That these dark orbs no more shall treat with light,  
Nor th' other light of life continue long,  
But yield to double darkness nigh at hand :  
So much I feel my genial spirits droop,  
My hopes all flat, nature within me seems  
In all her functions weary of herself ;  
My race of glory run, and race of shame,  
And I shall shortly be with them that rest.

*Man.* Believe not these suggestions which proceed  
From anguish of the mind and humours black, 600  
That mingle with thy fancy. I however  
Must not omit a Fathers timely care  
To prosecute the means of thy deliverance  
By ransom or how else : mean while be calm,  
And healing words from these thy friends admit.

*Sam.* O that torment should not be confin'd  
To the bodies wounds and sores  
With maladies innumerable  
In heart, head, brest, and reins ;  
But must secret passage find 610  
To th' inmost mind,  
There exercise all his fierce accidents,  
And on her purest spirits prey,  
As on entrails, joints, and limbs,  
With answerable pains, but more intense,  
Though void of corporal sense.

My griefs not only pain me  
As a lingring disease,

## Samson Agonistes.

But finding no redress, ferment and rage,  
Nor less then wounds immedicable 620  
Ranckle, and fester, and gangrene,  
To black mortification.

Thoughts my Tormenters arm'd with deadly stings  
Mangle my apprehensive tenderest parts,  
Exasperate, exulcerate, and raise  
Dire inflammation which no cooling herb  
Or medicinal liquor can assuage,  
Nor breath of Vernal Air from snowy *Alp*.  
Sleep hath forsook and giv'n me o're  
To deaths benumbing Opium as my only cure. 630  
Thence faintings, swoonings of despair,  
And sense of Heav'ns desertion.

I was his nursling once and choice delight,  
His destin'd from the womb,  
Promisd by Heavenly message twice descending.  
Under his special eie  
Abstemious I grew up and thriv'd amain ;  
He led me on to mightiest deeds  
Above the nerve of mortal arm  
Against the uncircumcis'd, our enemies. 640  
But now hath cast me off as never known,  
And to those cruel enemies,  
Whom I by his appointment had provok't,  
Left me all helpless with th' irreparable loss  
Of sight, reserv'd alive to be repeated  
The subject of thir cruelty, or scorn.  
Nor am I in the list of them that hope ;  
Hopeless are all my evils, all remediless ;  
This one prayer yet remains, might I be heard,  
No long petition, speedy death, 650  
The close of all my miseries, and the balm.

*Chor.* Many are the sayings of the wise  
In antient and in modern books enroll'd ;  
Extolling Patience as the truest fortitude ;  
And to the bearing well of all calamities,  
All chances incident to mans frail life  
Consolatories writ  
With studied argument, and much perswasion sought  
Lenient of grief and anxious thought,  
But with th' afflicted in his pangs thir sound 660

## *Samson Agonistes.*

Little prevails, or rather seems a tune,  
Harsh, and of dissonant mood from his complaint,  
Unless he feel within  
Some source of consolation from above ;  
Secret refreshings, that repair his strength,  
And fainting spirits uphold.

God of our Fathers, what is man !  
That thou towards him with hand so various,  
Or might I say contrarious,  
Temperst thy providence through his short course, 670  
Not evenly, as thou rul'st  
The Angelic orders and inferiour creatures mute,  
Irrational and brute.

Nor do I name of men the common rout,  
That wandering loose about  
Grow up and perish, as the summer flie,  
Heads without name no more rememberd,  
But such as thou hast solemnly elected,  
With gifts and graces eminently adorn'd  
To some great work, thy glory, 680  
And peoples safety, which in part they effect :  
Yet toward these thus dignifi'd, thou oft  
Amidst thir highth of noon,  
Changest thy countenance, and thy hand with no regard  
Of highest favours past  
From thee on them, or them to thee of service.

Nor only dost degrade them, or remit  
To life obscur'd, which were a fair dismission,  
But throw'st them lower then thou didst exalt them high, 690  
Unseemly falls in human eie,  
Too grievous for the trespass or omission,  
Oft leav'st them to the hostile sword  
Of Heathen and prophane, thir carkasses  
To dogs and fowls a prey, or else captiv'd :  
Or to the unjust tribunals, under change of times,  
And condemnation of the ingrateful multitude.  
If these they scape, perhaps in poverty  
With sickness and disease thou bow'st them down,  
Painful diseases and deform'd,  
In crude old age ; 700  
Though not disordinate, yet causless suffering  
The punishment of dissolute days, in fine,

## Samson Agonistes.

Just or unjust, alike seem miserable,  
For oft alike, both come to evil end.

So deal not with this once thy glorious Champion,  
The Image of thy strength, and mighty minister.  
What do I beg? how hast thou dealt already?  
Behold him in this state calamitous, and turn  
His labours, for thou canst, to peaceful end.

But who is this, what thing of Sea or Land? 710  
Femal of sex it seems,  
That so bedeckt, ornate, and gay,  
Comes this way sailing  
Like a stately Ship  
Of *Tarsus*, bound for th' Isles  
Of *Javan* or *Gadier*  
With all her bravery on, and tackle trim,  
Sails fill'd, and streamers waving,  
Court'd by all the winds that hold them play,  
An Amber sent of odorous perfume 720  
Her harbinger, a damsel train behind;  
Some rich *Philistian* Matron she may seem,  
And now at nearer view, no other certain  
Than *Dalila* thy wife.

*Sam.* My Wife, my Traytress, let her not come near me.

*Cho.* Yet on she moves, now stands & eies thee fixt,  
About t' have spoke, but now, with head declin'd  
Like a fair flower surcharg'd with dew, she weeps  
And words addrest seem into tears dissolv'd,  
Wetting the borders of her silk'n veil: 730  
But now again she makes address to speak.

*Dal.* With doubtful feet and wavering resolution  
I came, still dreading thy displeasure, *Samson*,  
Which to have merited, without excuse,  
I cannot but acknowledge; yet if tears  
May expiate (though the fact more evil drew  
In the perverse event then I foresaw)  
My penance hath not slack'n'd, though my pardon  
No way assur'd. But conjugal affection  
Prevailing over fear, and timorous doubt 740  
Hath led me on desirous to behold  
Once more thy face, and know of thy estate.  
If aught in my ability may serve  
To light'n what thou suffer'st, and appease

## *Samson Agonistes.*

Thy mind with what amends is in my power,  
Though late, yet in some part to recompense  
My rash but more unfortunate misdeed.

*Sam.* Out, out *Hyæna*; these are thy wonted arts,  
And arts of every woman false like thee,  
To break all faith, all vows, deceive, betray, 750  
Then as repentant to submit, beseech,  
And reconciliation move with feign'd remorse,  
Confess, and promise wonders in her change,  
Not truly penitent, but chief to try  
Her husband, how far urg'd his patience bears,  
His virtue or weakness which way to assail :  
Then with more cautious and instructed skill  
Again transgresses, and again submits ;  
That wisest and best men full oft beguill'd  
With goodness principl'd not to reject 760  
The penitent, but ever to forgive,  
Are drawn to wear out miserable days,  
Entangl'd with a poysnous bosom snake,  
If not by quick destruction soon cut off  
As I by thee, to Ages an example.

*Dal.* Yet hear me *Samson* ; not that I endeavour  
To lessen or extenuate my offence,  
But that on th' other side if it be weigh'd  
By it self, with aggravations not surcharg'd,  
Or else with just allowance counterpois'd 770  
I may, if possible, thy pardon find  
The easier towards me, or thy hatred less.  
First granting, as I do, it was a weakness  
In me, but incident to all our sex,  
Curiosity, inquisitive, importune  
Of secrets, then with like infirmity  
To publish them, both common female faults :  
Was it not weakness also to make known  
For importunity, that is for naught,  
Wherein consisted all thy strength and safety ? 780  
To what I did thou shewdst me first the way.  
But I to enemies reveal'd, and should not.  
Nor shouldst thou have trusted that to womans frailty  
E're I to thee, thou to thy self wast cruel.  
Let weakness then with weakness come to parl  
So near related, or the same of kind,

## *Samson Agonistes.*

Thine forgive mine ; that men may censure thine  
The gentler, if severely thou exact not  
More strength from me, then in thy self was found.  
And what if Love, which thou interpret'st hate, 790  
The jealousie of Love, powerful of sway  
In human hearts, nor less in mine towards thee,  
Caus'd what I did? I saw thee mutable  
Of fancy, feard lest one day thou wouldst leave me  
As her at *Timna*, sought by all means therefore  
How to endear, and hold thee to me firmest :  
No better way I saw then by importuning  
To learn thy secrets, get into my power  
Thy key of strength and safety : thou wilt say,  
Why then reveal'd? I was assur'd by those 800  
Who tempted me, that nothing was design'd  
Against thee but safe custody, and hold :  
That made for me, I knew that liberty  
Would draw thee forth to perilous enterprises,  
While I at home sate full of cares and fears  
Wailing thy absence in my widow'd bed ;  
Here I should still enjoy thee day and night  
Mine and Loves prisoner, not the *Philistines*,  
Whole to my self, unhazarded abroad,  
Fearless at home of partners in my love. 810  
These reasons in Loves law have past for good,  
Though fond and reasonless to some perhaps :  
And Love hath oft, well meaning, wrought much wo,  
Yet always pity or pardon hath obtain'd.  
Be not unlike all others, not austere  
As thou art strong, inflexible as steel.  
If thou in strength all mortals dost exceed,  
In uncompassionate anger do not so.

*Sam.* How cunningly the sorceress displays  
Her own transgressions, to upbraid me mine ! 820  
That malice not repentance brought thee hither,  
By this appears : I gave, thou say'st, th' example,  
I led the way ; bitter reproach, but true,  
I to my self was false e're thou to me,  
Such pardon therefore as I give my folly,  
Take to thy wicked deed : which when thou seest  
Impartial, self-severe, inexorable,  
Thou wilt renounce thy seeking, and much rather



## Samson Agonistes.

Confess it feign'd, weakness is thy excuse,  
And I believe it, weakness to resist 830  
*Philistian* gold : if weakness may excuse,  
What Murtherer, what Traytor, Parricide,  
Incestuous, Sacrilegious, but may plead it?  
All wickedness is weakness : that plea therefore  
With God or Man will gain thee no remission.  
But Love constrain'd thee ; call it furious rage  
To satisfie thy lust : Love seeks to have Love ;  
My love how couldst thou hope, who tookst the way  
To raise in me inexpiable hate,  
Knowing, as needs I must, by thee betray'd ? 840  
In vain thou striv'st to cover shame with shame,  
Or by evasions thy crime uncoverst more.

*Dal.* Since thou determinst weakness for no plea  
In man or woman, though to thy own condemning,  
Hear what assaults I had, what snares besides,  
What sieges girt me round, e're I consented ;  
Which might have aw'd the best resolv'd of men,  
The constantest to have yielded without blame.  
It was not gold, as to my charge thou lay'st,  
That wrought with me : thou know'st the Magistrates 850  
And Princes of my countrey came in person,  
Sollicit'd, commanded, threatn'd, urg'd,  
Adjur'd by all the bonds of civil Duty  
And of Religion, press'd how just it was,  
How honourable, how glorious to entrap  
A common enemy, who had destroy'd  
Such numbers of our Nation : and the Priest  
Was not behind, but ever at my ear,  
Preaching how meritorious with the gods  
It would be to ensnare an irreligious 860  
Dishonourer of *Dagon* : what had I  
To oppose against such powerful arguments?  
Only my love of thee held long debate ;  
And combated in silence all these reasons  
With hard contest : at length that grounded maxim  
So rife and celebrated in the mouths  
Of wisest men ; that to the public good  
Private respects must yield ; with grave authority  
Took full possession of me and prevail'd ;  
Vertue, as I thought, truth, duty so enjoyning. 870

## *Samson Agonistes.*

*Sam.* I thought where all thy circling wiles would end ;  
In feign'd Religion, smooth hypocrisie.  
But had thy love, still odiously pretended,  
Bin, as it ought, sincere, it would have taught thee  
Far other reasonings, brought forth other deeds.  
I before all the daughters of my Tribe  
And of my Nation chose thee from among  
My enemies, lov'd thee, as too well thou knew'st,  
Too well, unbosom'd all my secrets to thee,  
Not out of levity, but over-powr'd 880  
By thy request, who could deny thee nothing ;  
Yet now am judg'd an enemy. Why then  
Didst thou at first receive me for thy husband?  
Then, as since then, thy countries foe profest :  
Being once a wife, for me thou wast to leave  
Parents and countrey ; nor was I their subject,  
Nor under their protection but my own,  
Thou mine, not theirs : if aught against my life  
Thy countrey sought of thee, it sought unjustly,  
Against the law of nature, law of nations, 890  
No more thy countrey, but an impious crew  
Of men conspiring to uphold thir state  
By worse than hostile deeds, violating the ends  
For which our countrey is a name so dear ;  
Not therefore to be obey'd. But zeal mov'd thee ;  
To please thy gods thou didst it ; gods unable  
To acquit themselves and prosecute their foes  
But by ungodly deeds, the contradiction  
Of their own deity, Gods cannot be :  
Less therefore to be pleas'd, obey'd, or fear'd, 900  
'These false pretexts and varnish'd colours failing,  
Bare in thy guilt how foul must thou appear ?

*Dal.* In argument with men a woman ever  
Goes by the worse, whatever be her cause.

*Sam.* For want of words no doubt, or lack of breath,  
Witness when I was worried with thy peals.

*Dal.* I was a fool, too rash, and quite mistaken  
In what I thought would have succeeded best.  
Let me obtain forgiveness of thee, *Samson*,  
Afford me place to shew what recompence 910  
Towards thee I intend for what I have misdone,  
Misguided : only what remains past cure

## *Samson Agonistes.*

Bear not too sensibly, nor still insist  
To afflict thy self in vain: though sight be lost,  
Life yet hath many solaces, enjoy'd  
Where other senses want not their delights  
At home in leisure and domestic ease,  
Exempt from many a care and chance to which  
Eye-sight exposes daily men abroad.

I to the Lords will intercede, not doubting 920  
Thir favourable ear, that I may fetch thee  
From forth this loathsom prison-house, to abide  
With me, where my redoubl'd love and care  
With nursing diligence, to me glad office,  
May ever tend about thee to old age  
With all things grateful chear'd, and so suppli'd,  
That what by me thou hast lost thou least shalt miss.

*Sam.* No, no, of my condition take no care;  
It fits not; thou and I long since are twain;  
Nor think me so unwary or accurst 930  
To bring my feet again into the snare  
Where once I have been caught; I know thy trains  
Though dearly to my cost, thy ginns, and toyls;  
Thy fair enchanted cup, and warbling charms  
No more on me have power, their force is null'd,  
So much of Adders wisdom I have learn't  
To fence my ear against thy sorceries.  
If in my flower of youth and strength, when all men  
Lov'd, honour'd, fear'd me, thou alone could hate me  
Thy Husband, slight me, sell me, and forgo me; 940  
How wouldst thou use me now, blind, and thereby  
Deceiveable, in most things as a child  
Helpless, thence easily contemn'd, and scorn'd,  
And last neglected? How wouldst thou insult  
When I must live uxorious to thy will  
In perfet thralldom, how again betray me,  
Bearing my words and doings to the Lords  
To gloss upon, and censuring, frown or smile?  
This Gaol I count the house of Liberty  
To thine whose doors my feet shall never enter. 950

*Dal.* Let me approach at least, and touch thy hand.

*Sam.* Not for thy life, lest fierce remembrance wake  
My sudden rage to tear thee joint by joint.  
At distance I forgive thee, go with that;

## Samson Agonistes.

Bewail thy falshood, and the pious works  
It hath brought forth to make thee memorable  
Among illustrious women, faithful wives :  
Cherish thy hast'n'd widowhood with the gold  
Of Matrimonial treason : so farewell.

*Dal.* I see thou art implacable, more deaf 960  
To prayers, then winds and seas, yet winds to seas  
Are reconcil'd at length, and Sea to Shore :  
Thy anger, unappeasable, still rages,  
Eternal tempest never to be calm'd.  
Why do I humble thus my self, and suing  
For peace, reap nothing but repulse and hate ?  
Bid go with evil omen and the brand  
Of infamy upon my name denounc't ?  
To mix with thy concernments I desist  
Henceforth, nor too much disapprove my own. 970  
Fame if not double-fac't is double-mouth'd,  
And with contrary blast proclaims most deeds,  
On both his wings, one black, th' other white,  
Bears greatest names in his wild aerie flight.  
My name perhaps among the Circumcis'd  
In *Dan*, in *Judah*, and the bordering Tribes,  
To all posterity may stand defam'd,  
With malediction mention'd, and the blot  
Of falshood most unconjugal traduc't.  
But in my countrey where I most desire, 980  
In *Ecron*, *Gaza*, *Asdod*, and in *Gath*  
I shall be nam'd among the famousest  
Of Women, sung at solemn festivals,  
Living and dead recorded, who to save  
Her countrey from a fierce destroyer, chose  
Above the faith of wedlock-bands, my tomb  
With odours visited and annual flowers.  
Not less renown'd then in Mount *Ephraim*,  
*Jael*, who with inhospitable guile  
Smote *Sisera* sleeping through the Temples nail'd. 990  
Nor shall I count it hainous to enjoy  
The public marks of honour and reward  
Conferr'd upon me, for the piety  
Which to my countrey I was judg'd to have shewn.  
At this who ever envies or repines  
I leave him to his lot, and like my own.

## Samson Agonistes.

*Chor.* She's gone, a manifest Serpent by her sting  
Discover'd in the end, till now conceal'd.

*Sam.* So let her go, God sent her to debase me,  
And aggravate my folly who committed 1000  
To such a viper his most sacred trust  
Of secresie, my safety, and my life.

*Chor.* Yet beauty, though injurious, hath strange power,  
After offence returning, to regain  
Love once possest, nor can be easily  
Repuls't, without much inward passion felt  
And secret sting of amorous remorse.

*Sam.* Love-quarrels oft in pleasing concord end,  
Not wedlock-treachery endangering life.

*Chor.* It is not vertue, wisdom, valour, wit, 1010  
Strength, comliness of shape, or amplest merit  
That womans love can win or long inherit ;  
But what it is, hard is to say,  
Harder to hit,

(Which way soever men refer it)  
Much like thy riddle, *Samson*, in one day  
Or seven, though one should musing sit ;

If any of these or all, the *Timnian* bride  
Had not so soon preferr'd 1020  
Thy Paranymp, worthless to thee compar'd,  
Successour in thy bed,  
Nor both so loosely disally'd

Thir nuptials, nor this last so treacherously  
Had shorn the fatal harvest of thy head.  
Is it for that such outward ornament  
Was lavish't on thir Sex, that inward gifts  
Were left for hast unfinish't, judgment scant,  
Capacity not rais'd to apprehend  
Or value what is best

In choice, but ofttest to affect the wrong? 1030  
Or was too much of self-love mixt,  
Of constancy no root infixt,  
That either they love nothing, or not long?

What e're it be, to wisest men and best  
Seeming at first all heavenly under virgin veil,  
Soft, modest, meek, demure,  
Once join'd, the contrary she proves, a thorn  
Intestin, far within defensive arms

## Samson Agonistes.

A cleaving mischief, in his way to vertue  
Adverse and turbulent, or by her charms 1040  
Draws him awry enslav'd

With dotage, and his sense deprav'd  
To folly and shameful deeds which ruin ends.  
What Pilot so expert but needs must wreck  
Embarqu'd with such a Stears-mate at the Helm?

Favour'd of Heav'n who finds  
One vertuous rarely found,  
That in domestic good combines :  
Happy that house ! his way to peace is smooth :  
But vertue which breaks through all opposition, 1050  
And all temptation can remove,  
Most shines and most is acceptable above.

Therefore Gods universal Law  
Gave to the man despotic power  
Over his female in due awe,  
Nor from that right to part an hour,  
Smile she or lowre :

So shall he least confusion draw  
On his whole life, not sway'd  
By female usurpation, nor dismay'd. 1060

But had we best retire, I see a storm?

*Sam.* Fair days have oft contracted wind and rain.

*Chor.* But this another kind of tempest brings.

*Sam.* Be less abstruse, my riddling days are past.

*Chor.* Look now for no enchanting voice, nor fear  
The bait of honied words ; a rougher tongue  
Draws hitherward, I know him by his stride,  
The Giant *Harapha* of *Gath*, his look  
Haughty as is his pile high-built and proud.  
Comes he in peace? what wind hath blown him hither  
I less conjecture then when first I saw 1071  
The sumptuous *Dalila* floating this way :  
His habit carries peace, his brow defiance.

*Sam.* Or peace or not, alike to me he comes.

*Chor.* His fraught we soon shall know, he now arrives.

*Har.* I come not *Samson*, to condole thy chance,  
As these perhaps, yet wish it had not been,  
Though for no friendly intent. I am of *Gath*,  
Men call me *Harapha*, of stock renown'd  
As *Og* or *Anak* and the *Emims* old 1080

## Samson Agonistes.

That *Kiriathaim* held, thou knowst me now  
If thou at all art known. Much I have heard  
Of thy prodigious might and feats perform'd  
Incredible to me, in this displeas'd,  
That I was never present on the place  
Of those encounters, where we might have tri'd  
Each others force in camp or listed field :  
And now am come to see of whom such noise  
Hath walk'd about, and each limb to survey,  
If thy appearance answer loud report. 1090

*Sam.* The way to know were not to see but taste.

*Har.* Dost thou already single me ; I thought  
Gives and the Mill had tam'd thee ? O that fortune  
Had brought me to the field where thou art fam'd  
To have wrought such wonders with an Asses Jaw ;  
I should have forc'd thee soon with other arms,  
Or left thy carkass where the Ass lay thrown :  
So had the glory of Prowess been recover'd  
To *Palestine*, won by a *Philistine*  
From the unforeskinn'd race, of whom thou bear'st 1100  
The highest name for valiant Acts, that honour  
Certain to have won by mortal duel from thee,  
I lose, prevented by thy eyes put out.

*Sam.* Boast not of what thou wouldst have done, but do  
What then thou would'st, thou seest it in thy hand.

*Har.* To combat with a blind man I disdain,  
And thou hast need much washing to be toucht.

*Sam.* Such usage as your honourable Lords  
Afford me assassinated and betray'd,  
Who durst not with thir whole united powers 1110  
In fight withstand me single and unarm'd,  
Nor in the house with chamber Ambushes  
Close-banded durst attaque me, no not sleeping,  
Till they had hir'd a woman with their gold  
Breaking her Marriage Faith to circumvent me.  
Therefore without feign'd shifts let be assign'd  
Some narrow place enclos'd, where sight may give thee,  
Or rather flight, no great advantage on me ;  
Then put on all thy gorgeous arms, thy Helmet  
And Brigandine of brass, thy broad Habergeon, 1120  
Vant-brass and Greves, and Gauntlet, add thy Spear  
A Weavers beam, and seven-times-folded shield,



## Samson Agonistes.

I only with an Oak'n staff will meet thee,  
And raise such out-cries on thy clatter'd Iron,  
Which long shall not with-hold mee from thy head,  
That in a little time while breath remains thee,  
Thou oft shalt wish thy self at *Gath* to boast  
Again in safety what thou wouldst have done  
To *Samson*, but shalt never see *Gath* more.

*Har.* Thou durst not thus disparage glorious arms 1130  
Which greatest Heroes have in battel worn,  
Thir ornament and safety, had not spells  
And black enchantments, some Magicians Art  
Arm'd thee or charm'd thee strong, which thou from Heaven  
Feign'dst at thy birth was giv'n thee in thy hair,  
Where strength can least abide, though all thy hairs  
Were bristles rang'd like those that ridge the back  
Of chaf't wild Boars, or ruffl'd Porcupines.

*Sam.* I know no Spells, use no forbidden Arts;  
My trust is in the living God who gave me 1140  
At my Nativity this strength, diffus'd  
No less through all my sinews, joints and bones,  
Then thine, while I preserv'd these locks unshorn,  
The pledge of my unviolated vow.  
For proof hereof, if *Dagon* be thy god,  
Go to his Temple, invoke his aid  
With solemnest devotion, spread before him  
How highly it concerns his glory now  
To frustrate and dissolve these Magic spells,  
Which I to be the power of *Israel's* God 1150  
Avow, and challenge *Dagon* to the test,  
Offering to combat thee his Champion bold,  
With th' utmost of his Godhead seconded:  
Then thou shalt see, or rather to thy sorrow  
Soon feel, whose God is strongest, thine or mine.

*Har.* Presume not on thy God, what e're he be,  
Thee he regards not, owns not, hath cut off  
Quite from his people, and delivered up  
Into thy Enemies hand, permitted them  
To put out both thine eyes, and fetter'd send thee 1160  
Into the common Prison, there to grind  
Among the Slaves and Asses thy comrades,  
As good for nothing else, no better service  
With those thy boyst'rous locks, no worthy match

## Samson Agonistes.

For valour to assail, nor by the sword  
Of noble Warriour, so to stain his honour,  
But by the Barbers razor best subdu'd.

*Sam.* All these indignities, for such they are  
From thine, these evils I deserve and more,  
Acknowledge them from God inflicted on me 1170  
Justly, yet despair not of his final pardon  
Whose ear is ever open; and his eye  
Gracious to re-admit the suppliant;  
In confidence whereof I once again  
Defie thee to the trial of mortal fight,  
By combat to decide whose god is God,  
Thine or whom I with *Israel's* Sons adore.

*Har.* Fair honour that thou dost thy God, in trusting  
He will accept thee to defend his cause,  
A Murtherer, a Revolter, and a Robber. 1180

*Sam.* Tongue-doubtie Giant, how dost thou prove me these?

*Har.* Is not thy Nation subject to our Lords?  
Thir Magistrates confest it, when they took thee  
As a League-breaker and deliver'd bound  
Into our hands: for hadst thou not committed  
Notorious murder on those thirty men  
At *Askalon*, who never did thee harm,  
Then like a Robber stripdst them of thir robes?  
The *Philistines*, when thou hadst broke the league,  
Went up with armed powers thee only seeking, 1190  
To others did no violence nor spoil.

*Sam.* Among the Daughters of the *Philistines*  
I chose a Wife, which argu'd me no foe;  
And in your City held my Nuptial Feast:  
But your ill-meaning Politician Lords,  
Under pretence of Bridal friends and guests,  
Appointed to await me thirty spies,  
Who threatning cruel death constrain'd the bride  
To wring from me and tell to them my secret,  
That solv'd the riddle which I had propos'd. 1200  
When I perceiv'd all set on enmity,  
As on my enemies, where ever chanc'd,  
I us'd hostility, and took thir spoil  
To pay my underminers in thir coin.  
My Nation was subjected to your Lords.  
It was the force of Conquest; force with force

## Samson Agonistes.

Is well ejected when the Conquer'd can.  
But I a private person, whom my Countrey  
As a league-breaker gave up bound, presum'd  
Single Rebellion and did Hostile Acts.

1210

I was no private but a person rais'd  
With strength sufficient and command from Heav'n  
To free my Countrey; if their servile minds  
Me their Deliverer sent would not receive,  
But to thir Masters gave me up for nought,  
Th' unworthier they; whence to this day they serve.  
I was to do my part from Heav'n assign'd,  
And had perform'd it if my known offence  
Had not disabl'd me, not all your force:  
These shifts refuted, answer thy appelland  
Though by his blindness maim'd for high attempts,  
Who now defies thee thrice to single fight,  
As a petty enterprise of small enforce.

1220

*Har.* With thee a Man condemn'd, a Slave enrol'd,  
Due by the Law to capital punishment?  
To fight with thee no man of arms will deign.

*Sam.* Cam'st thou for this, vain boaster, to survey me,  
To descant on my strength, and give thy verdict?  
Come nearer, part not hence so slight inform'd;  
But take good heed my hand survey not thee.

1230

*Har.* O *Baal-zebub*! can my ears unus'd  
Hear these dishonours, and not render death?

*Sam.* No man with-holds thee, nothing from thy hand  
Fear I incurable; bring up thy van,  
My heels are fetter'd, but my fist is free.

*Har.* This insolence other kind of answer fits.

*Sam.* Go baffl'd coward, lest I run upon thee,  
Though in these chains, bulk without spirit vast,  
And with one buffet lay thy structure low,  
Or swing thee in the Air, then dash thee down  
To the hazard of thy brains and shatter'd sides.

1240

*Har.* By *Astaroth* e're long thou shalt lament  
These braveries in Irons loaden on thee.

*Chor.* His Giantship is gone somewhat crestfall'n,  
Stalking with less unconsci'nable strides,  
And lower looks, but in a sultrie chafe.

*Sam.* I dread him not, nor all his Giant-brood,  
Though Fame divulge him Father of five Sons

## Samson Agonistes.

All of Gigantic size, *Goliath* chief.

*Chor.* He will directly to the Lords, I fear, 1250  
And with malicious counsel stir them up  
Some way or other yet further to afflict thee.

*Sam.* He must allege some cause, and offer'd fight  
Will not dare mention, lest a question rise  
Whether he durst accept the offer or not,  
And that he durst not plain enough appear'd.  
Much more affliction then already felt  
They cannot well impose, nor I sustain ;  
If they intend advantage of my labours  
The work of many hands, which earns my keeping 1260  
With no small profit daily to my owners.  
But come what will, my deadliest foe will prove  
My speediest friend, by death to rid me hence,  
The worst that he can give, to me the best.  
Yet so it may fall out, because thir end  
Is hate, not help to me, it may with mine  
Draw thir own ruin who attempt the deed.

*Chor.* Oh how comely it is and how reviving  
To the Spirits of just men long opprest !  
When God into the hands of thir deliverer 1270  
Puts invincible might  
To quell the mighty of the Earth, th' oppressour,  
The brute and boist'rous force of violent men  
Hardy and industrious to support  
Tyrannic power, but raging to pursue  
The righteous and all such as honour Truth ;  
He all thir Ammunition  
And feats of War defeats  
With plain Heroic magnitude of mind  
And celestial vigour arm'd, 1280  
Thir Armories and Magazins contemns,  
Renders them useless, while  
With winged expedition  
Swift as the lightning glance he executes  
His errand on the wicked, who surpris'd  
Lose thir defence distracted and amaz'd.

But patience is more oft the exercise  
Of Saints, the trial of thir fortitude,  
Making them each his own Deliverer,  
And Victor over all 1290

## *Samson Agonistes.*

That tyrannie or fortune can inflict,  
Either of these is in thy lot,  
*Samson*, with might endu'd  
Above the Sons of men; but sight bereav'd  
May chance to number thee with those  
Whom Patience finally must crown.  
This Idols day hath bin to thee no day of rest,  
Labouring thy mind

More then the working day thy hands,  
And yet perhaps more trouble is behind.

1300

For I descry this way  
Some other tending, in his hand  
A Scepter or quaint staff he bears,  
Comes on amain, speed in his look.  
By his habit I discern him now  
A Public Officer, and now at hand.  
His message will be short and voluble.

*Off.* *Ebrews*, the Pris'ner *Samson* here I seek.

*Chor.* His manacles remark him, there he sits.

*Off.* *Samson*, to thee our Lords thus bid me say; 1310

This day to *Dagon* is a solemn Feast,  
With Sacrifices, Triumph, Pomp, and Games;  
Thy strength they know surpassing human rate,  
And now some public proof thereof require  
To honour this great Feast, and great Assembly;  
Rise therefore with all speed and come along,  
Where I will see thee heartn'd and fresh clad  
To appear as fits before th' illustrious Lords.

*Sam.* Thou knowst I am an *Ebrew*, therefore tell them,  
Our Law forbids at thir Religious Rites 1320  
My presence; for that cause I cannot come.

*Off.* This answer, be assur'd, will not content them.

*Sam.* Have they not Sword-players, and ev'ry sort  
Of Gymnic Artists, Wrestlers, Riders, Runners,  
Juglers and Dancers, Antics, Mummers, Mimics,  
But they must pick me out with shackles tir'd,  
And over-labour'd at thir publick Mill,  
To make them sport with blind activity?  
Do they not seek occasion of new quarrels  
On my refusal to distress me more, 1330  
Or make a game of my calamities?  
Return the way thou cam'st, I will not come.

## Samson Agonistes.

*Off.* Regard thy self, this will offend them highly.

*Sam.* My self? my conscience and internal peace.  
Can they think me so broken, so debas'd  
With corporal servitude, that my mind ever  
Will condescend to such absurd commands?  
Although thir drudge, to be thir fool or jester,  
And in my midst of sorrow and heart-grief  
To shew them feats, and play before thir god, 1340  
The worst of all indignities, yet on me  
Joyn'd with extream contempt? I will not come.

*Off.* My message was impos'd on me with speed,  
Brooks no delay: is this thy resolution?

*Sam.* So take it with what speed thy message needs.

*Off.* I am sorry what this stoutness will produce.

*Sam.* Perhaps thou shalt have cause to sorrow indeed.

*Chor.* Consider, *Samson*; matters now are strain'd  
Up to the highth, whether to hold or break;  
He's gone, and who knows how he may report 1350  
Thy words by adding fuel to the flame?  
Expect another message more imperious,  
More Lordly thund'ring then thou well wilt bear.

*Sam.* Shall I abuse this Consecrated gift  
Of strength, again returning with my hair  
After my great transgression, so requite  
Favour renew'd, and add a greater sin  
By prostituting holy things to Idols;  
A *Nazarite* in place abominable  
Vaunting my strength in honour to thir *Dagon*? 1360  
Besides, how vile, contemptible, ridiculous,  
What act more execrably unclean, prophane?

*Chor.* Yet with this strength thou serv'st the *Philistines*,  
Idolatrous, uncircumcis'd, unclean.

*Sam.* Not in thir Idol-worship, but by labour  
Honest and lawful to deserve my food  
Of those who have me in thir civil power.

*Chor.* Where the heart joins not, outward acts defile not.

*Sam.* Where outward force constrains, the sentence holds;  
But who constrains me to the Temple of *Dagon*, 1370  
Not dragging? the *Philistian* Lords command.  
Commands are no constraints. If I obey them,  
I do it freely; venturing to displease  
God for the fear of Man, and Man prefer,



## *Samson Agonistes.*

Set God behind: which in his jealousy  
Shall never, unrepented, find forgiveness.  
Yet that he may dispense with me or thee  
Present in Temples at Idolatrous Rites  
For some important cause, thou needst not doubt.

*Chor.* How thou wilt here come off surmounts my reach.

*Sam.* Be of good courage, I begin to feel 1381  
Some rousing motions in me which dispose  
To something extraordinary my thoughts.  
I with this Messenger will go along,  
Nothing to do, be sure, that may dishonour  
Our Law, or stain my vow of *Nazarite*.  
If there be aught of presage in the mind,  
This day will be remarkable in my life  
By some great act, or of my days the last.

*Chor.* In time thou hast resolv'd, the man returns. 1390

*Off.* *Samson*, this second message from our Lords  
To thee I am bid say. Art thou our Slave,  
Our Captive, at the public Mill our drudge,  
And dar'st thou at our sending and command  
Dispute thy coming? come without delay;  
Or we shall find such Engines to assail  
And hamper thee, as thou shalt come of force,  
Though thou wert firmlier fastn'd then a rock.

*Sam.* I could be well content to try thir Art,  
Which to no few of them would prove pernicious. 1400  
Yet knowing thir advantages too many,  
Because they shall not trail me through thir streets  
Like a wild Beast, I am content to go.  
Masters commands come with a power resistless  
To such as owe them absolute subjection;  
And for a life who will not change his purpose?  
(So mutable are all the ways of men)  
Yet this be sure, in nothing to comply  
Scandalous or forbidden in our Law.

*Off.* I praise thy resolution, doff these links: 1410  
By this compliance thou wilt win the Lords  
To favour, and perhaps to set thee free.

*Sam.* Brethren farewell, your company along  
I will not wish, lest it perhaps offend them  
To see me girt with Friends; and how the sight  
Of me as of a common Enemy,



## Samson Agonistes.

So dreaded once, may now exasperate them  
I know not. Lords are Lordliest in thir wine;  
And the well-feasted Priest then soonest fir'd  
With zeal, if aught Religion seem concern'd: 1420  
No less the people on thir Holy-days  
Impetuous, insolent, unquenchable;  
Happ'n what may, of me expect to hear  
Nothing dishonourable, impure, unworthy  
Our God, our Law, my Nation, or my self,  
The last of me or no I cannot warrant.

*Chor.* Go, and the Holy One  
Of *Israel* be thy guide  
To what may serve his glory best, & spread his name  
Great among the Heathen round: 1430  
Send thee the Angel of thy Birth, to stand  
Fast by thy side, who from thy Fathers field  
Rode up in flames after his message told  
Of thy conception, and be now a shield  
Of fire; that Spirit that first rusht on thee  
In the camp of *Dan*  
Be efficacious in thee now at need.  
For never was from Heaven imparted  
Measure of strength so great to mortal seed,  
As in thy wond'rous actions hath been seen. 1440  
But wherefore comes old *Manoa* in such hast  
With youthful steps? much livelier than e're while  
He seems: supposing here to find his Son,  
Or of him bringing to us some glad news?

*Man.* Peace with you brethren; my inducement hither  
Was not at present here to find my Son,  
By order of the Lords new parted hence  
To come and play before them at thir Feast.  
I heard all as I came, the City rings  
And numbers thither flock, I had no will, 1450  
Lest I should see him forc't to things unseemly.  
But that which moved my coming now, was chiefly  
To give ye part with me what hope I have  
With good success to work his liberty.

*Chor.* That hope would much rejoyce us to partake  
With thee; say reverend Sire, we thirst to hear.

*Man.* I have attempted one by one the Lords  
Either at home, or through the high street passing,

## Samson Agonistes.

With supplication prone and Fathers tears  
To accept of ransom for my Son thir pris'ner, 1460  
Some much averse I found and wondrous harsh,  
Contemptuous, proud, set on revenge and spite ;  
That part most reverenc'd *Dagon* and his Priests,  
Others more moderate seeming, but thir aim  
Private reward, for which both God and State  
They easily would set to sale, a third  
More generous far and civil, who confess'd  
They had anough reveng'd, having reduc't  
Thir foe to misery beneath thir fears,  
The rest was magnanimity to remit, 1470  
If some convenient ransom were propos'd.  
What noise or shout was that? it tore the Skie.

*Chor.* Doubtless the people shouting to behold  
Thir once great dread, captive, & blind before them,  
Or at some proof of strength before them shown.

*Man.* His ransom, if my whole inheritance  
May compass it, shall willingly be paid  
And numberd down: much rather I shall chuse  
To live the poorest in my Tribe, then richest,  
And he in that calamitous prison left. 1480  
No, I am fixt not to part hence without him.  
For his redemption all my Patrimony,  
If need be, I am ready to forgo  
And quit: not wanting him, I shall want nothing.

*Chor.* Fathers are wont to lay up for thir Sons,  
Thou for thy Son art bent to lay out all ;  
Sons wont to nurse thir Parents in old age,  
Thou in old age car'st how to nurse thy Son,  
Made older then thy age through eye-sight lost.

*Man.* It shall be my delight to tend his eyes, 1490  
And view him sitting in the house, enobl'd  
With all those high exploits by him atchiev'd,  
And on his shoulders waving down those locks,  
That of a Nation arm'd the strength contain'd:  
And I perswade me God had not permitted  
His strength again to grow up with his hair  
Garrison'd round about him like a Camp  
Of faithful Souldiery, were not his purpose  
To use him further yet in some great service,  
Not to sit idle with so great a gift 1500

## Samson Agonistes.

Useless, and thence ridiculous about him.  
And since his strength with eye-sight was not lost,  
God will restore him eye-sight to his strength.

*Chor.* Thy hopes are not ill founded nor seem vain  
Of his delivery, and thy joy thereon  
Conceiv'd, agreeable to a Fathers love,  
In both which we, as next participate.

*Man.* I know your friendly minds and—O what noise !  
Mercy of Heav'n what hideous noise was that !  
Horribly loud unlike the former shout. 1510

*Chor.* Noise call you it or universal groan  
As if the whole inhabitation perish'd,  
Blood, death, and deathful deeds are in that noise,  
Ruin, destruction at the utmost point.

*Man.* Of ruin indeed methought I heard the noise  
Oh it continues, they have slain my Son.

*Chor.* Thy Son is rather slaying them, that outcry  
From slaughter of one foe could not ascend.

*Man.* Some dismal accident it needs must be ;  
What shall we do, stay here or run and see ? 1520

*Chor.* Best keep together here, lest running thither  
We unawares run into dangers mouth.  
This evil on the *Philistines* is fall'n,  
From whom could else a general cry be heard ?  
The sufferers then will scarce molest us here,  
From other hands we need not much to fear.  
What if his eye-sight (for to *Israels* God  
Nothing is hard) by miracle restor'd,  
He now be dealing dole among his foes,  
And over heaps of slaughter'd walk his way ? 1530

*Man.* That were a joy presumptuous to be thought.

*Chor.* Yet God hath wrought things as incredible  
For his people of old ; what hinders now ?

*Man.* He can I know, but doubt to think he will ;  
Yet Hope would fain subscribe, and tempts Belief.  
A little stay will bring some notice hither.

*Chor.* Of good or bad so great, of bad the sooner ;  
For evil news rides post, while good news baits.  
And to our wish I see one hither speeding,  
An *Ebrev*, as I guess, and of our Tribe. 1540

*Mess.* O whither shall I run, or which way flie  
The sight of this so horrid spectacle

## *Samson Agonistes.*

Which earst my eyes beheld and yet behold ;  
For dire imagination still pursues me.  
But providence or instinct of nature seems,  
Or reason though disturb'd, and scarce consulted  
To have guided me aright, I know not how,  
To thee first reverend *Manoa*, and to these  
My Countrey-men, whom here I knew remaining,  
As at some distance from the place of horror, 1550  
So in the sad event too much concern'd.

*Man.* The accident was loud, & here before thee  
With rueful cry, yet what it was we hear not,  
No Preface needs, thou seest we long to know.

*Mess.* It would burst forth, but I recover breath  
And sense distract, to know well what I utter.

*Man.* Tell us the sum, the circumstance defer.

*Mess.* *Gaza* yet stands, but all her Sons are fall'n,  
All in a moment overwhelm'd and fall'n.

*Man.* Sad, but thou knowst to *Israelites* not saddest 1560  
The desolation of a Hostile City.

*Mess.* Feed on that first, there may in grief be surfet.

*Man.* Relate by whom. *Mess.* By *Samson*.

*Man.* That still lessens  
The sorrow, and converts it nigh to joy.

*Mess.* Ah *Manoa* I refrain, too suddenly  
To utter what will come at last too soon ;  
Lest evil tidings with too rude irruption  
Hitting thy aged ear should pierce too deep.

*Man.* Suspense in news is torture, speak them out.

*Mess.* Then take the worst in brief, *Samson* is dead. 1570

*Man.* The worst indeed, O all my hope's defeated  
To free him hence ! but death who sets all free  
Hath paid his ransom now and full discharge.  
What windy joy this day had I conceiv'd  
Hopeful of his Delivery, which now proves  
Abortive as the first-born bloom of spring  
Nipt with the lagging rear of winters frost.  
Yet e're I give the rains to grief, say first,  
How dy'd he? death to life is crown or shame.  
All by him fell thou say'st, by whom fell he, 1580  
What glorious hand gave *Samson* his deaths wound ?

*Mess.* Unwounded of his enemies he fell.

*Man.* Wearied with slaughter then or how ? explain.

## *Samson Agonistes.*

*Mess.* By his own hands. *Man.* Self-violence? what cause  
Brought him so soon at variance with himself  
Among his foes? *Mess.* Inevitable cause  
At once both to destroy and be destroy'd;  
The Edifice where all were met to see him  
Upon thir heads and on his own he pull'd.

*Man.* O lastly over-strong against thy self! 1590  
A dreadful way thou took'st to thy revenge.  
More than anough we know; but while things yet  
Are in confusion, give us if thou canst,  
Eye-witness of what first or last was done,  
Relation more particular and distinct.

*Mess.* Occasions drew me early to this City,  
And as the gates I enter'd with Sun-rise,  
The morning Trumpets Festival proclaim'd  
Through each high street: little I had dispatch't 1600  
When all abroad was rumour'd that this day  
*Samson* should be brought forth to shew the people  
Proof of his mighty strength in feats and games;  
I sorrow'd at his captive state, but minded  
Not to be absent at that spectacle.  
The building was a spacious Theatre  
Half round on two main Pillars vaulted high,  
With seats where all the Lords and each degree  
Of sort, might sit in order to behold,  
The other side was op'n, where the throng  
On banks and scaffolds under Skie might stand; 1610  
I among these aloof obscurely stood.  
The Feast and noon grew high, and Sacrifice  
Had fill'd thir hearts with mirth, high chear, & wine,  
When to thir sports they turn'd. Immediately  
Was *Samson* as a public servant brought,  
In thir state Livery clad; before him Pipes  
And Timbrels, on each side went armed guards,  
Both horse and foot before him and behind  
Archers, and Slingers, Cataphracts and Spears.  
At sight of him the people with a shout 1620  
Rifted the Air clamouring thir god with praise,  
Who had made thir dreadful enemy thir thrall.  
He patient but undaunted where they led him,  
Came to the place, and what was set before him  
Which without help of eye, might be assay'd,

## *Samson Agonistes.*

To heave, pull, draw, or break, he still perform'd  
All with incredible, stupendious force,  
None daring to appear Antagonist.  
At length for intermission sake they led him  
Between the pillars; he his guide requested 1630  
(For so from such as nearer stood we heard)  
As over-tir'd to let him lean a while  
With both his arms on those two massie Pillars  
That to the arched roof gave main support.  
He unsuspecting led him; which when *Samson*  
Felt in his arms, with head a while enclin'd,  
And eyes fast fixt he stood, as one who pray'd,  
Or some great matter in his mind revolv'd.  
At last with head erect thus cryed aloud,  
Hitherto, Lords, what your commands impos'd 1640  
I have perform'd, as reason was, obeying,  
Not without wonder or delight beheld.  
Now of my own accord such other tryal  
I mean to shew you of my strength, yet greater;  
As with amaze shall strike all who behold.  
This utter'd, straining all his nerves he bow'd,  
As with the force of winds and waters pent,  
When Mountains tremble, those two massie Pillars  
With horrible convulsion to and fro,  
He tugg'd, he shook, till down they came and drew 1650  
The whole roof after them, with burst of thunder  
Upon the heads of all who sate beneath,  
Lords, Ladies, Captains, Councillors, or Priests,  
Thir choice nobility and flower, not only  
Of this but each *Philistian* City round  
Met from all parts to solemnize this Feast.  
*Samson* with these immixt, inevitably  
Pulld down the same destruction on himself;  
The vulgar only scap'd who stood without.  
*Chor.* O dearly-bought revenge, yet glorious! 1660  
Living or dying thou hast fulfill'd  
The work for which thou wast foretold  
To *Israel*, and now ly'st victorious  
Among thy slain self-kill'd  
Not willingly, but tangl'd in the fold  
Of dire necessity, whose law in death conjoin'd  
Thee with thy slaughter'd foes in number more

## *Samson Agonistes.*

Then all thy life had slain before.

*Semichor.* While thir hearts were jocund and sublime,  
Drunk with Idolatry, drunk with Wine, 1670  
And fat regorg'd of Bulls and Goats,  
Chaunting thir Idol, and preferring  
Before our living Dread who dwells  
In *Silo* his bright Sanctuary:  
Among them he a spirit of phrenzie sent.  
Who hurt thir minds,  
And urg'd them on with mad desire  
To call in hast for thir destroyer;  
They only set on sport and play  
Unweetingly importun'd 1680  
Thir own destruction to come speedy upon them.  
So fond are mortal men  
Fall'n into wrath divine,  
As thir own ruin on themselves to invite,  
Insensate left, or to sense reprobate,  
And with blindness internal struck.

*Semichor.* But he though blind of sight,  
Despis'd and thought extinguish't quite,  
With inward eyes illuminated  
His fierie vertue rous'd 1690  
From under ashes into sudden flame,  
And as an ev'ning Dragon came,  
Assailant on the perched roosts,  
And nests in order rang'd  
Of tame villatic Fowl; but as an Eagle  
His cloudless thunder bolted on thir heads.  
So vertue giv'n for lost,  
Deprest, and overthrown, as seem'd,  
Like that self-begott'n bird  
In the *Arabian* woods embost, 1700  
That no second knows nor third,  
And lay e're while a Holocaust,  
From out her ashie womb now teen'd  
Revives, reflourishes, then vigorous most  
When most unactive deem'd,  
And though her body die, her fame survives,  
A secular bird ages of lives.

*Man.* Come, come, no time for lamentation now,  
Nor much more cause, *Samson* hath quit himself



## Samson Agonistes.

Like *Samson*, and heroically hath finish'd  
A life Heroic, on his Enemies  
Fully reveng'd, hath left them years of mourning,  
And lamentation to the Sons of *Caphtor*  
Through all *Philistian* bounds. To *Israel*  
Honour hath left, and freedom, let but them  
Find courage to lay hold on this occasion,  
To himself and Fathers house eternal fame;  
And which is best and happiest yet, all this  
With God not parted from him, as was fear'd,  
But favouring and assisting to the end. 1710  
Nothing is here for tears, nothing to wail  
Or knock the breast, no weakness, no contempt,  
Dispraise, or blame, nothing but well and fair,  
And what may quiet us in a death so noble.  
Let us go find the body where it lies  
Sok't in his enemies blood, and from the stream  
With lavers pure and cleansing herbs wash off  
The clotted gore. I with what speed the while  
(*Gaza* is not in plight to say us nay)  
Will send for all my kindred, all my friends 1730  
To fetch him hence and solemnly attend  
With silent obsequie and funeral train  
Home to his Fathers house: there will I build him  
A Monument, and plant it round with shade  
Of Laurel ever green, and branching Palm,  
With all his Trophies hung, and Acts enroll'd  
In copious Legend, or sweet Lyric Song.  
Thither shall all the valiant youth resort,  
And from his memory inflame thir breasts  
To matchless valour, and adventures high: 1740  
The Virgins also shall on feastful days  
Visit his Tomb with flowers, only bewailing  
His lot unfortunate in nuptial choice,  
From whence captivity and loss of eyes.  
*Chor.* All is best, though we oft doubt,  
What th' unsearchable dispose  
Of highest wisdom brings about,  
And ever best found in the close.  
Oft he seems to hide his face,  
But unexpectedly returns 1750  
And to his faithful Champion hath in place

## *Samson Agonistes.*

Bore witness gloriously ; whence *Gaza* mourns  
And all that band them to resist  
His uncontrollable intent,  
His servants he with new acquist  
Of true experience from this great event  
With peace and consolation hath dismiss'd,  
And calm of mind all passion spent.

*The End.*



## APPENDIX.



(a)

Specimen of Milton's spelling, from the  
Cambridge autograph manuscript.

### On Time

set on a clock case

Fly envious Time till thou run out thy race  
call on the lazie leaden-stepping howres  
whose speed is but the heaueie plummets pace  
& glut thy selfe w<sup>th</sup> what thy womb deuoures  
w<sup>ch</sup> is no more then what is false & vaine  
& meerly mortall drosse  
so little is our losse  
so little is thy gaine  
for when as each thing bad thou hast entomb'd  
& last of all thy greedie selfe consum'd  
then long Æternity shall greet our blisse  
w<sup>th</sup> an individuall kisse  
and Joy shall overtake us as a flood  
when every thing y<sup>t</sup> is sincerely good  
& pfectly diuine  
with Truth, & Peace, & Love shall ever shine  
about the supreme throne  
of him t' whose happy-making sight alone  
when once our heav'nly-guided soule shall clime  
then all this earthie grossnesse quit  
attir'd w<sup>th</sup> starres wee shall for ever sit  
Triumphing over Death, & Chance, & thee O Time.

# Appendix.

(b)

Note of a few readings in the same manuscript.

## AT A SOLEMN MUSICK.

line 6. *content*. Manuscript reads *concent* as does the Second Edition ; so that *content* is probably a misprint.

## ARCADES.

line 22. *hunderd*. Milton's own spelling here is *hundred*. But in the *Errata* to *Paradise Lost* (i. 760) he corrects *hundred* to *hunderd*.

## LYCIDAS.

line 64. *uncessant*. Manuscript reads *incessant*, so that *uncessant* is probably a misprint ; though that spelling is retained in the Second Edition.

line 82. *perfet*. So in *A Maske*, line 203. In both these places the manuscript has *perfect*, as elsewhere where the word occurs. In the *Solemn Music*, line 23, where the First Edition reads *perfect*, the second reads *perfet*.

## A MASK.

lines 168, 169. Manuscript reads—

*but heere she comes I fairly step aside  
& hearken, if I may, her buisnesse heere.*

line 474. *sensuality*. Manuscript also reads *sensualtie*, as the metre requires.

line 493. *father*. Manuscript reads *father's*.

line 553. *drowsie frighted*. Manuscript reads *drowsie flighted*.

line 743. In the manuscript, which reads—

*If you let slip time like an neglected rose*

a circle has been drawn round the *an*, but probably not by Milton.

(c)

*Paradise Lost*, vii. 451. Bentley's emendation of *soul* for *fowl* should have been noted at the foot of the page. See Genesis i. 30 A. V. margin.









UNIV. OF CALIF. LIBRARY, LOS ANGELES

UC SOUTHERN REGIONAL LIBRARY FACILITY



**A** 000 139 084 8

